



Mat. 110

Augus Matheson.





PUBLICATIONS OF THE UNIVERSITY OF MANCHESTER

CELTIC SERIES

No. I.

*An Introduction to Early Welsh*

SHERRATT & HUGHES

Publishers to the Victoria University of Manchester

Manchester: 34 Cross Street

London: 33 Soho Square W.

AN  
INTRODUCTION  
TO  
EARLY WELSH

BY  
THE LATE JOHN STRACHAN, LL.D.,  
*Professor of Greek and Lecturer in Celtic  
in the University of Manchester*

MANCHESTER  
AT THE UNIVERSITY PRESS  
1909

UNIVERSITY OF MANCHESTER PUBLICATIONS  
No. XL.



## PREFACE

---

THIS book is the outcome of the courses of lectures on Welsh grammar and literature given by the late Professor Strachan at the University of Manchester during the sessions 1905-6 and 1906-7. Indeed, the Grammar is in the main an expansion of notes made for these lectures. For the numerous quotations from early Welsh literature contained in the Grammar, as well as for the Reader, Strachan made use not only of published texts, notably those edited by Sir John Rhys and Dr. J. Gwenogvryn Evans, but also of photographs specially taken for the purpose, and of advance proofs of the edition of the *White Book* and of the photographic facsimile of the *Black Book of Chirk*, about to be published by Dr. Evans, both of which were lent by him to Strachan. The Reader includes Middle Welsh Texts selected as likely to be of most value for illustration or of special interest. The very valuable work done by Dr. Evans in relation to these texts was of the greatest assistance to Professor Strachan, and as an expression of gratitude for the help thus given, as well as in recognition of the services rendered to Welsh scholarship by Dr. Evans, it was the intention of the author to dedicate his book to him.

The idea of working up his notes into a book that might serve as an introduction to the study of older Welsh seems first to have occurred to Strachan in the spring of 1907. On the fifth of April he wrote to Mr. R. I. Best, the Secretary of the School of Irish Learning in Dublin: "I have been thinking of drawing up a little primer of Early Welsh. With that the language of Middle-Welsh prose should be child's play

to learn. However, that may or may not come off." And to his old friend Dr. P. Giles of Emmanuel College, Cambridge, he wrote on the same day: "I think I must draw up and print outlines of Middle-Welsh grammar. I cannot well teach without some book, and the beginner is lost in the wilderness of the *Grammatica Celtica*." His original intention evidently was to publish a mere sketch of the grammar, somewhat like his *Old-Irish Paradigms*. But at the suggestion of his friend and colleague, Professor T. F. Tout, he decided to expand the Grammar on the larger and fuller lines of the present volume. At the same time the plan of adding a Reader of excerpts from mediæval Welsh literature took concrete shape in the course of conversations and correspondence with Dr. Evans. On both these tasks he began to work during the Summer Term of 1907. With what amazing rapidity he must have toiled to have all but completed the work by the end of the following August! Giving up a visit to Germany to which he had long been looking forward, he devoted the whole long vacation to the preparation and printing of his book. At the moment of his death, on the 25th of September, both the Grammar and Reader were in type, and he had read a first, and in some cases a second, proof. Writing to Professor Thurneysen a week before his death, he says that he had then only the notes and vocabulary to add.

After Professor Strachan's death, at the request of the Publications Committee of the Manchester University, Professor Kuno Meyer of the University of Liverpool kindly undertook the task of reading final proofs of the Grammar and Reader, and of adding a Glossary, an Index and a list of contents. In this task, which involved very considerable labour, he obtained the assistance of Mr. Timothy Lewis, who had worked for two years under Professor Strachan, and who returned

from Berlin whither he had gone to continue his studies with Professor Zimmer, and devoted the winter to help with the completion of the book. Mr. Lewis verified the quotations in the Grammar where this was possible; drew up the Glossary, prepared the Index, and revised proofs. An old student of Professor Meyer's, the Rev. Owen Eilian Owen, placed his collection of Old and Middle-Welsh words at his disposal for the elucidation of rare and difficult vocables, while both Mr. Owen and Mr. J. Glyn Davies read proofs of the whole book, many valuable suggestions being due to them. But Professor Meyer and Mr. Lewis are solely responsible for the Glossary.

There can be no doubt that if Strachan had lived to complete the book himself, he would have made alterations and additions in several places both in the Grammar and Reader, and would have still further normalised the spelling in his critical versions of sections IV. and V. in the Reader. It will be observed that his treatment of the texts varies greatly. Except in the sections just mentioned, he does not seem to have aimed so much at the construction of a critical text as at the presentation of a clear, precise, and intelligible version, which would at the same time serve to introduce the student to the characteristic features of Middle Welsh orthography. In the Corrigenda some necessary emendations<sup>1</sup> have been indicated by Professor Meyer

1. From a collation of the poems printed from the Red Book with the original, it appears that the following corrections should be made :—

P. 233, l. 4, *for dōg read dōng*

ib., l. 19, *for aghneat read agkaeat*

P. 235, l. 29, *for gŵawr read gŵaŵr*

P. 236, l. 2, *for can read kan*

P. 237, l. 22, *for uvulldaŵt read uvulltaŵt*

P. 238, l. 9, *for dyrnaŵt read dyrnnaŵt*

ib., l. 11, *for diffirth read diffyrth*

ib., l. 18, *for vedissyawt read vedyssyaŵt*

ib., l. 20, *for adueil read atueil*

who has also added some further variants (marked *a*, *b*, &c.) in the foot-notes.

Strachan had left behind no material for the Glossary except a first rough list of words. In drawing it up use was made of a letter to Thurneysen, in which he expressed his intention to arrange the words according to their actual sounds. His only doubts were about the phonetic value of final *c*, *t*, *p*. On this point he wrote: "Of course final *b* is common, also certain of my texts write *d* for *d*. But none of them have *g* for final *g*." In accordance with modern pronunciation, Professor Meyer considered it desirable to substitute the letter *g*, though the period at which final *c* became voiced has not yet been established.

No notes to the texts were found among Strachan's papers. He had brought back from Peniarth, from MSS. No. 22, 44, 45, and 46, a large number of variants to the Story of Lear and that of Arthur, which he would no doubt have used for his notes. Those to Lear have been printed in an Appendix; but the Peniarth versions of Arthur seem to differ so much from those of the *Red Book* and the Additional MS. 19,709 that they would have to be printed in full.

Since the great work of Zeuss, this is the first attempt to write a grammar of Early Welsh on historical principles. It was the hope of the author expressed in letters to friends that his work would stir up Welsh scholars to investigate more thoroughly than they have done hitherto the history of their language. But no one was more conscious of the gaps still left by his work than Strachan himself. "It is only a beginning," he wrote to Thurneysen. "I hope people will make some allowance for the difficulties of the work and the scanty amount of trustworthy material. One is continually finding out something new." References to the need of further investigation will be found in many places throughout the Grammar. His own discoveries



of the functions of *ry*, of the relative forms of the verb, and his account of the uses of the verbal prefixes *a* and *yð* point out the way to future investigators in this neglected field of research. To these discoveries he was led by his unrivalled knowledge of Irish grammar, so intimately connected in its origins with that of Welsh that he believed no true progress possible without their parallel study. "It is absurd to think," he once wrote to Mr. Best, "that either branch of Celtic can be satisfactorily studied apart from the other;" and to Mr. Giles: "Without the knowledge of Irish early Welsh grammar is rather like a book sealed with seven seals."

The circumstances under which this book has been produced having been thus indicated, it remains to express acknowledgement of the work of the scholars who have contributed towards the result: first to those whose assistance to Professor Strachan in his lifetime he would specially have desired to recognise; in particular to Dr. Evans who furnished the editions both published and unpublished of the Welsh texts which were used in compiling the Reader; to the late Mr. Wynne of Peniarth who freely gave access to the MSS. in his possession; and to Sir John Rhys (joint editor of the *Red Book* and of other texts) and to the Fellows of Jesus College, Oxford, who afforded every facility in their power; secondly to those who since the author's death have enabled his work to be presented to the public, especially to Professor Tout who initiated the idea of preparing the book for publication and undertook the arrangements for it; to Professor Kuno Meyer, whose long and intimate association with Strachan in his Celtic studies specially fitted him to undertake the duty of revising the whole work and seeing it through the press; to Mr. Lewis in assisting Professor Meyer particularly in the preparation

of the Glossary; and to Mr. O. Eilian Owen and Mr. J. Glyn Davies for their help in reading proofs. The title of the book was chosen by Strachan himself.

It has been the earnest wish of those who have taken part in preparing this work for publication that it should appear in a form worthy of the reputation and memory of the distinguished scholar whose career was cut short so sadly in the midst of his full literary activity, and that the results of his devoted labours and profound learning should not be lost to students of the Welsh language.

*February, 1909.*

# TABLE OF CONTENTS

	PAGE
Preface - - - - -	v
List of Abbreviations - - - - -	xv

## GRAMMAR

The numbers refer to the paragraphs.

Sounds and sound changes 1—22.

Vowels and diphthongs 1; vowel quantity 2; accented vowels 2A; unaccented 2A; consonants classified 3; orthographical variations 3; accent 4; changes of vowels 5; changes of vowels due to *i* vowel preserved 6; changes due to a lost vowel 7; vowel variation due to accent 8; prothetic vowel 9; epenthetic vowel 10; consonantal changes 11; sound changes within the sentence 12; table of consonant mutations 13; vocalic mutation or lenation 14; general exceptions to rules of lenation 15; lenation of noun and adjective 16; lenation of pronoun 17; lenation of verb 18; nasal mutation 19-20; spirant mutation 21; *h* in sentence construction 22.

The Article 23-24.

The Noun 25-29.

Numbers and cases 25; syntax of the cases 26; formation of plural 27-28; collective nouns 29.

The Adjective 30—39.

Gender 30; formation of plural 31; concord 32; number 33; order in sentence 34; predicative noun and adjective with *yn* 35; adjectival phrases 36; comparison 37; construction of comparative and superlative 38; the equative 39.

The Adverb 40.

The Numerals 41—44.

Cardinals and ordinals 41; syntax of cardinals and ordinals 42; distributives 43; multiplicatives 44.

The Pronoun 45—90.

Personal pron. 45—51; independent pron. 45—47; infixed pron. 48—51; pron. with preposition 52—54; possessive pron. 55-56; possessive adjs. 57—59; *hun*, *hunan* etc. 60; demons. pron. 61-62; article + substantive + adverb 63; indefinite prons. and adjs. 64—72; substantives in a pronominal function 73—78; interrog. prons. 79—81; relat. prons. 82—89; expression of case in the relative 86—89; substitutes for the relative 90.

Preverbal particles 91—97.

The particle *yd* 91—94; the particle *ry* 95—97.

The Verb 98—161.

Conjugation of the verb 98—126: verbal classes 98; voice 99; number 100—101; person 102—3.

The moods 104; the indicative 105—109; present 106; imperfect 107; preterite 108; pluperfect 109.

The subjunctive 110—114: formation of subj. 110; tenses 111; usages of subj. 112—114.

The imperative 115.

The participle passive in *edic* 116; verbal in *adwy* 117.

The verbal noun: formation of 118—119; usage 120—126.

Paradigm of the regular verb 127—139: types 127; pres. and fut. indic. 128—130; imperf. indic. and conditional 131; pret. and perf. indic. act. 132; pret. and perf. indic. pass. 134; plupf. indic. 135—136; imperat. 137; pres. subjunctive 138; past subj. 139.

Irregular verbs: *mynet* 140; *dyvot* 141; *gwneuthur* 142; *gwybot* 143; *adnabot* 144; *caffel* 145; *rodi* 146; *tawr* 147; *moes* 148; *hwde* 149; *med* 150; *heb* 151.

The substantive verb: paradigm 152; remarks on subst. vb. 154; on copula 155—158; position of copula 159.

Compounds of *bot* 160—161.

The Preposition 162—197.

The Conjunction 198—234.

Negative particles 235—238.

Interrogative particles 239—240.

Responsive particles 240—241.

The Interjection 243—244.

## READER

	PAGE
I. Lear and his Daughters - - - - -	139
From <i>Ystorya Brenhined y Brytanyeit</i> , printed in <i>Red Book of Hergest</i> , ed. J. Rhŷs and J. G. Evans, vol. ii, pp. 64—69. The variants are from Brit. Mus. MSS. Add. 19,709.	
II. The Story of Arthur - - - - -	145
From the same source, pp. 184—232.	
III. The Hunting of Twrch Trwyth - - - - -	193
An excerpt from the story of <i>Kulhwch and Olwen</i> . Chapters 1—6 are from the <i>White Book of Rhydderch</i> (Peniarth MS. 4), with variants from the <i>Red Book</i> (Rhŷs-Evans, vol. i, pp. 126—128); chapters 7—25 from the <i>Red Book</i> (ib. p. 128, l. 13—p. 142, l. 19).	

IV. The Procedure in a Suit for Landed Property	208
From the oldest copy of the Laws of Howel Dda contained in the <i>Black Book of Chirk</i> (Peniarth MS. 29). The variants are from Aneurin Owen's <i>Ancient Laws of Wales</i> , vol. i, pp. 142—156. The text in the right-hand columns is a critical edition with normalised spelling by Strachan.	
V. The Privilege of St. Teilo	222
From Evans-Rhŷs, <i>Liber Landavensis</i> , p. 118. The text in the right-hand columns is a critical edition with normalised spelling by Strachan.	
VI. Moral Verses	225
From the <i>Red Book</i> , col. 1031, printed in Skene's <i>Four Ancient Books of Wales</i> , vol. ii, pp. 249—250.	
VII. Doomsday	227
From the Book of Taliessin, printed in <i>Four Ancient Books</i> , vol. ii, pp. 118—123. Strachan has made no use of the variants printed in <i>Myvyrian Archaeology</i> , p. 72 ff.	
VIII. To Gwenwynwyn	233
From the <i>Red Book</i> , col. 1394, where it comes after several poems ascribed to Llywelyn Vardd; printed in <i>Myvyrian Archaeology</i> , p. 176a, where it is ascribed to Cynddelw.	
IX. Cynddelw to Rhys ab Gruffudd	234
(a) from <i>Black Book of Carmarthen</i> , ed. J. G. Evans, fo. 39b; (b) from <i>Red Book</i> , col. 1436.	
X. A Religious Poem	237
From <i>Black Book of Carmarthen</i> , fo. 20a, and from <i>Red Book</i> , col. 1159.	
XI. A Dialogue between Ugnach Uab Mydno and Taliessin	239
From <i>Black Book of Carmarthen</i> , fo. 51a.	
XII. Winter	241
From <i>Black Book of Carmarthen</i> , fo. 45a.	
Glossary	243
Appendix	277
Index	279
Corrigenda	293



## LIST OF ABBREVIATIONS

- Anc. Laws. Ancient Laws and Institutes of Wales, edited by Aneurin Owen. 1841.
- Arch. Archiv für celtische Lexikographie.
- Arch. Cambr. Archaeologia Cambrensis.
- BB. Black Book of Carmarthen, edited by J. G. Evans. Oxford. 1888.
- BCh. Black Book of Chirk.<sup>1</sup>
- Bezz. Beitr. Bezzenberger's Beiträge zur Kunde der indogermanischen Sprachen.
- Bret. Breton.
- CM. Ystoria de Carolo Magno, from the Red Book of Hergest, edited by Thomas Powell. 1883.
- Corn. Cornish.
- Cymrod. Y Cymmrodor, embodying the Transactions of the Cymmrodorion Society of London. 1877 ff.
- CZ. Zeitschrift für celtische Philologie.
- E. Lh. Archæologia Britannica, by Edward Lhuyd. Oxford. 1707.
- Eng. English.
- Eriu The Journal of the School of Irish Learning, Dublin.
- FB. The Four Ancient Books of Wales by W. F. Skene. Edinburgh. 1868.
- Gaul. Gaulish.
- Hg. Selections from the Hengwrt Mss. edited by Robert Williams, vol. I. 1876 ; vol. II. London. 1892.
- Ir. Irish.
- KZ. Kuhn's Zeitschrift für vergleichende Sprachforschung.
- LA. The Elucidarium and other tracts in Welsh from Llyvyr Agkyr Llandewivrevi, edited by J. Morris Jones and John Rhŷs. Oxford. 1894

1. The references in the Grammar are to the pages of the photographic facsimile about to be published by J. G. Evans.

- Lat. Latin.
- Laws, see Anc. Laws.
- Leg. Wall. Cyfreithjeu Hywel Dda ac eraill, seu Leges Wallicae,  
edited by W. Wotton. Londini. 1730.
- Lhuyd, see E. Lh.
- Lib. Land. Liber Landavensis, edited by J. G. Evans and  
J. Rhŷs. Oxford. 1893.
- Loth Mab. Les Mabinogion traduits en entier par J. Loth.  
Paris. 1889.
- MA. The Myvyrian Archaeology of Wales. Denbigh. 1870.
- Mart. Cap. The Old-Welsh Glosses on Martianus Capella edited  
by Wh. Stokes in the *Archaeologia Cambrensis* for 1873,  
p. 1 ff. and in *Beiträge zur vergl. Sprachforschung* VII.  
p. 385 ff.
- Mid. Middle.
- Mod. Modern.
- O. Old.
- Ox. gl. Glossae Oxonienses, edited in Zeuss-Ebel, *Grammatica  
Celtica*, p. 1052 ff. Berlin. 1871.
- Pughe A Dictionary of the Welsh Language by W. Owen Pughe.  
2. ed. Denbigh. 1832.
- RB. The Red Book of Hergest edited by J. Rhŷs and J. G.  
Evans, vol. I. (Mabinogion), Oxford. 1887; vol. II.  
(The Bruts), Oxford. 1890.
- Rev. Celt. Revue Celtique.
- Rhŷs, Celt. Heath. J. Rhŷs, Lectures on the Origin and Growth  
of Religion as illustrated by Celtic Heathendom. 3. ed.  
1898.
- Rhŷs, Lect. J. Rhŷs, Lectures on Welsh Philology. 2. ed.  
London. 1879.
- WB. The White Book of Rhydderch.<sup>1</sup>

1. The references in the Grammar are to the pages of the edition  
about to be published by J. G. Evans.



## SOUNDS AND SOUND-CHANGES.

### VOWELS AND DIPHTHONGS.

1. Middle Welsh has the following system:—

Vowels:—**a, e, i, o, u, w, y.**

Diphthongs:—**ae, oe, ei, eu, aw, ew, iw, yw, wy.**

NOTE.—The following are the more important orthographical variations:

(a) **u** is written **u** or **v**, e.g. **un** or **vn** *one*. That **u** already in O.W. approached to an **i** sound is shown by the spelling **Dinoot** (from Lat. *Donatus*) in Bede for what in O.W. would be normally **Dunaut**, later **Dunawt**.

(b) **w** (= **u** in sound) is in Mid.W. commonly written **w** or **ŷ**; in O.W. it is written **u**, and in some Mid.W. MSS. **u** or **v**, e.g. O.W. **crunn** *round*, later **crunn**, **crvnn**, **crónn**, **crwnn**. The same applies to **w** in diphthongs, e.g. O.W. **dui** *two*, later **duý**, **dvý**, **dóy**, **dwý**; O.W. **bleu** *hair*, later **bleu**, **blev**, **bleó**, **blew**.

(c) **y** is in O.W. written **i**, in Mid.W. MSS. **i**, **e**, **ý**, **y**, e.g. O.W. **hinn** *these*, later **henn**, **hýnn**, **hynn**.

(d) The diphthongs **ae**, **oe**, are in O.W. **ai**, **oi**, later **ai**, **aý**, **ay**, **ae**; **oi**, **oý**, **oy**, **oe**, e.g. O.W. **air** *slaughter*, later **aýr**, **ayr**, **aer**; O.W. **coit** *wood*, later **coýt**, **coyt**, **coet**.

(e) The diphthong **eu** appears in O.W. as **ou**, e.g. **aperthou** *offerings*, later **abertheu**. In final position in Mid.W. **-eu** sometimes appears as **-e**, e.g. **minhe** *on my part* = **minheu**; in Mod.W. it is written **-au**, e.g. **pennau** *heads* = Mid.W. **penneu**.

(f) For **wy**, **oý** and **oe** are also found, e.g. **boý** = **bwy** *he may be*, **moe** = **mwý** *greater*.

### VOWEL QUANTITY.

2. The quantity of vowels depends not on their prehistoric quantity, but on the nature of the syllables in which they stand. Apart from dialectal variation, the following may serve as approximate rules, at least for the period subsequent to the shifting of the accent (§ 4).

A. Accented vowels are :—

(a) Long.

(α) In monosyllables ending in a vowel, e.g. **tȳ** *house*.

(β) In monosyllables ending in a single consonant, e.g. **dȳn** *man* (= O.Ir. *duine*), **gwlād** *country* (= O.Ir. *flaith*), **māb** *son*, **glān** *pure* (= O.Ir. *glan*), **glās** *green* (= O.Ir. *glas*), **crȳch** *curly*.

NOTE.—**s** always goes back to an earlier **ss**; **ch**, **th**, **ff** (= **f** in sound) to an earlier double consonant, e.g. **crȳch** *curly* = Gaul. *Crixos*, **brith** *variegated* = Ir. *mrecht*, **clōff** *lame* = Low Lat. *cloppus*; here the reduction to a single consonant was prior to the operation of the above law. In Mod.W. a vowel is short before final **c**, **t**, **p**; these final sounds occur only in late borrowings.

(b) Half-long, in open syllables of polysyllabic words, e.g. **di-nas** *city*: **dīn** *fortress* (= Ir. *dūn*), **tā-deu** *fathers*: **tād** *father*.

(c) Short.

(α) In monosyllables originally ending in a double consonant (with the above exceptions), e.g. **pěnn** *head* (= Ir. *cenn*), **trw̄m** *heavy* (= Ir. *tromm*), **pārth** *part* (from Lat. *part-em*).

(β) In closed syllables of polysyllabic words, e.g. **pěnn** *heads*: **pěnn**, **ūndeb** *unity*: **ūn** *one* (= Ir. *ōen*). The vowel is somewhat shorter in polysyllables like **penneu** than in monosyllables like **penn**.

B. Unaccented vowels are short. This rule also applies to proclitic words like **heb** *without*, **fy** *mine*, **dy** *thine*.

## THE CONSONANTS.

3. The consonants may be classified :—

	Explosives.		Spirants.		Nasals.	
	Voiceless.	Voiced.	Voiceless.	Voiced.	Voiceless.	Voiced.
Gutturals	<b>c</b>	<b>g</b>	<b>ch</b>	( <b>ȝ</b> )	<b>ngh</b>	<b>ng</b> (= <b>ŋ</b> )
Dentals	<b>t</b>	<b>d</b>	<b>th</b>	<b>ḏ</b>	<b>nh</b>	<b>n</b>
Labiodentals			<b>ff</b> (= <b>f</b> )	<b>v</b>		
Labials	<b>p</b>	<b>b</b>			<b>mh</b>	<b>m</b>

Liquids. Voiceless :—ll, rh; voiced :—l, r.

Semivowels :—y, w.

Sibilant :—s.

Breath :—h.

NOTE.—The following are the more important orthographical variations :—

(a) For O.W. **c** = **k**, both **c** and **k** found in Mid.W., **c** particularly at the end of a word; e.g. O.W. *cimadas fitting*, Mid.W. *kyvadas* and *cyvadas*. In Mid.W. *sc*, *sp* became *sg*, *sb*, e.g. *kysgu* by *kyscu* to *sleep*, *ysbryd* from Lat. *spiritus*.

(b) With regard to the graphic representation of the mediæ the following may be noted. In Old British the symbols **c**, **t**, **p** were taken over from Latin with their Latin values. In the course of time, before the loss of final syllables, **c**, **t**, **p**, when they stood between vowels, or after a vowel and before certain consonants, became in sound mediæ **g**, **d**, **b**, but continued in O.W. to be usually written **c**, **t**, **p**, e.g. *trucarauc compassionate* = Mid.W. *trugarawc*, Mod.W. *trugarog*, *dacr tear* = Mid.W. *dagyr*, *atar birds* = Mid.W. *adar*, *datl gl. foro* = Mid.W. *dadyl*, *etn bird* = Mid.W. *edyn*, *cepistyr halter* (from Lat. *capistrum*) = Mid.W. *kebystyr*. In Mid.W. **g**, **d**, **b** are regularly written in the interior of a word (except that **c**, **t**, **p** may appear in composition, e.g. *rac-ynys fore-island*, *kyt-varchogyon fellow-horsemen*, *hep-cor to dispense with*, or in inflexion and derivation under the influence of the simple word, e.g. *gwlatoed*, by *gwladoed countries*: *gwlat*, *gwaet-lyt bloody*: *gwaet*). But final **g** is regularly expressed by **c**, and final **d** by **t** (except in certain MSS. such as BB. which express **d** regularly by **d** and use **t** to express the spirant **ḏ**). Final **p** for **b** is not so universal; there are found, e.g. *pawp*, *pop*, *everyone*, *every* by *pawb*, *pob*, and *mab son*, *heb said*.

(c) The spirant **f** is in O.W. written **f**, and this orthography survives in Mid.W., but the usual Mid.W. symbol is **ff** or **ph**. In O.W. the tenuis is sometimes traditionally written for the spirant, e.g. *cilcet gl. tapiseta* (from Lat. *culcita*) = Mod.W. *cylched*.

(d) With regard to the graphic representation of the voiced spirants the following may be noted. **g**, **d**, **b**, **m** were taken from Latin with their Latin values. In time, between vowels and before and after certain consonants, they became spirants **ḡ**, **ḏ**, **v**, but continued to be written **g**, **d**, **b**, **m**, e.g. *scamnhegint gl. levant* = later *ysgavnheynt*, *colginn gl. aristam* = Mod.W. *colyn sting*, *cimadas fitting* = Mod.W. *cyfaddas*, *abal apple* = later *aval*. In O.W. the spirant **g** had already been lost in part, e.g. *nertheint gl. armant* by *scamnhegint*, *tru wretched* = Ir. *truag wretched*. In Mid.W. the spirant **g** has disappeared. The spirant **ḏ**, which in Mod.W. is written **dd**, is in Mid.W. usually expressed by **d**, e.g. *rodi to give* = Mod.W. *rhoddi*, except in certain MSS. such as BB. which use the symbol **t**, e.g. *roti* = *rhoddi*. The spirant **v** in Mid.W. is written **u**, **uu**, **v**, **fu**, **f**, the last particularly at the end of a word, (e.g. *cyuadas*, *cyvadas*, *cyfuadas*, *cyfadas fitting* = O.W. *cimadas*, Mod.W. *cyfaddas*), in Mod.W. **f**; in certain MSS., however, such as BB. it is expressed by **w**, e.g. *calaw reeds* = *calaf*. In O.W. final **v** has been already lost in part, e.g. *lau hand* = Ir. *lām*, and in the course of time it tends more and more to disappear, e.g. in Mid.W. the superlative ending **-af** appears also as **-a**.

(e) The guttural nasals **ng** (i.e. *ŋ* as in Eng. *sing*) and **ngh** are often written **g** and **gh**, e.g. **llog**=**llong** *ship*, **agheu** *death*=**angheu**.

(f) The voiceless **l** is in O.W. written **l** at the beginning of a word, e.g. **lau** *hand*=Mid.W. **llaw**, elsewhere **ll**, e.g. **melhionou** gl. *violae*. In Mid.W. it is in all positions written **ll** or **ll**. For the voiceless **r**=Mod.W. **rh**, Early Welsh has no special symbol; it is written **r**.

(g) The semivowel **y** is in O.W. written **i**, e.g. **iechuit** gl. *sanitas*, **melhionou** gl. *violae*: in Mid.W. it is expressed by **i**, e.g. **ieith** *speech*, or **y**, e.g. **engylion** *angels*. In the initial combinations **hw** (from an earlier **sv**), which in Mid.W. appears as **chw** or dialectally as **hw**, and **gw** (from an earlier **w**), **w** is in O.W. expressed by **u**, e.g. **hui** *you*=Mid.W. **chwi**, **guin** *wine* (from Lat. *vinum*)=Mid.W. **gwin**; in Mid.W. it is commonly written **u**, but in some MSS. **u**, **v**, e.g. **gōynn**, **guynn**, **gvynn** *white*; but in Mid.W. O.W. initial **guo-** becomes **go-**. In other positions in Mid.W. **w** is expressed by **u**, **w**, sometimes by **u**, **uu**, **v**; here it comes from O.W. **gu**, e.g. O.W. **neguid** *new*=Mid.W. **newyd**, **neuud**, **neuud**, **nevyd**, O.W. **petguar** *four*=Mid.W. **petwar**, **petuar**, **petvar**. It is to be noted that initial **gw** from an earlier **w** does not form a syllable even before a consonant; thus **gwlad** *country* from \***ulatis**=Ir. *flaith* *kingdom* is monosyllabic.

## THE ACCENT.

4. In accented words in Mod.W. the accent, with certain exceptions, falls on the penult, e.g. **pechádur** *sinner*, **tragywýddol** *eternal*. This accentuation, however, has replaced an earlier system which was common to all the British dialects and is still preserved in the Breton dialect of Vannes, according to which the accent fell on the last syllable, e.g. **paraŵt** *ready*. The effect of this earlier accentuation is seen in the weakening of vowels in syllables that according to the later system would have borne the accent, e.g. **pechadúr** *sinner* from Lat. **peccâtōrem**: **pechaŵt** *sin* from Lat. **peccâtum**, O.W. **Dimét**, Mid.W. **Dyvet**: **Demetae**, O.W. **hinhám**, Mid.W. **hynhaf** *oldest*: **hen** *old*, Mid.W. **llynghes** *fleet*: **llong** *ship*, O.W. **cilchét**, Mid.W. **cylchet** from Lat. *culcita*, Mid.W. **drysseu** *doors*: **drws** *door*. The date of the change of accent has not yet been accurately fixed; with it seems to be connected the change of **aw** to **o** in final syllables, e.g. Mid.W. **pechawt**=Mod.W. **pechod**, of which there are sporadic instances in early Mid.W., e.g. **rýmđýwod** (= **rým dywawt**), BB. 28<sup>a</sup> 13.

## CHANGES OF VOWELS.

## Changes due to a vowel which follows or which originally followed.

5. The quality of a vowel is liable to be influenced by the vowel of the following syllable. Sometimes the infecting vowel remains, e.g. **Ceredic** from Old British **Coroticus**, **eyt goes** = O.W. **egit** by O.W. **agit**, **menegi** *to show* by **managaf** *I show*. Sometimes the infecting vowel has been lost, e.g. **trom f.** by **trwm m.** *heavy* from \***trum̄mā**, \***trummos** (where it will be seen that the short vowel of the masculine exerted no influence, while the long vowel of the feminine did), **brein ravens** (by **bran raven**) from \***branī**, earlier \***branoi**, **cyrn horns** (by **corn horn**) from \***cornī**, earlier \***cornoi**, **dreic dragon** (by pl. **dragon**) from \***dracī**, from \***dracū** from Lat. **dracō**, **ceint I sing** (by **cant he sang**) from \***cantī**, from \***cantū**, from \***cantō**, **Meir** from Lat. **Maria**, **yspeil spoil** from Lat. **spolium**. The infection may extend back more than one syllable e.g. **menegi**: **managaf**, **deveit sheep**: **davat a sheep**. The following are the changes of the kind which are important for inflection:—

A. CHANGES DUE TO AN *i* VOWEL PRESERVED.

6. **a > e**, e.g. **ederyn a bird**: **adar birds**, **peri to cause**: **paraf I cause**, **edewis he promised**: **adaw to promise**, **cerit was loved**: **caru to love**, **llewenyd**, O.W. **leguenid joy**: **llawen joyous**.

**ae > ei**, e.g. **meini stones**: **maen stone**, **seiri artisans**: **saer**.

## B. CHANGES DUE TO A LOST VOWEL.

7. (a) The lost vowel is **ā**.

**y > e**, e.g. **berr f.**: **byrr m.** *short*. The variation in **brith**, f. **braith variegated** is of the same kind; **brith** comes from \***mric̄tos**, **braith** from \***mrectā**, \***mric̄tā**.

**w > o**, e.g. **trom f.**: **trwm m.** *heavy*.

(b) The lost vowel is **ī** (of various origin).

**a > ei**, e.g. **meib sons**: **mab son**, **meneich monks**: **manach**

*monk*; *geill* is able: *gallaf* I am able, *gweheird* he forbids: *gwahardaf* I forbid, *ceint* I sang: *cant* he sang.

*ae* > *ei*, e.g. *mein* stones: *maen* stone, *Seis* Saxon (from \**Saxī*, \**Saxū*, *Saxō*): *Saeson* (from *Saxōnes*).

Final *aw* > *eu*, *y*, e.g. *teu* is silent: *tawaf* I am silent, *edeu*, *edey*, *edy* leaves: *adawaf* I leave.

*e* > *y*, e.g. *hyn* older: *hen* old, *cestyll* castles: *castell* castle, *gwyl* sees: *gwelaf* I see, *gweryt* helps: *gwaret* to help.

*o* > *y*, e.g. *pyrth* gates: *porth* gate, *escyb* bishops: *escob* bishop, *tyrr* breaks: *torraf* I break, *egyr* opens: *agoraf* I open, *try* turns: *troaf* I turn.

*oe* > *wy*, e.g. *wyn* lambs (from \**ognī*): *oen* lamb (from \**ognos*).

*w* > *y*, e.g. *bylch* gaps: *bwlch* gap, *yrch* roebucks: *ywrch* roebuck.

NOTE 1.—In the 3 sg. pres. indic. act. of the verb the prehistoric ending is uncertain; *geill* might come phonetically from either \**gallit* or \**gallyet*. In verbs containing radical *o*, infection is found only in the 3 sg. pres. indic. act., e.g. *tyrr* he breaks, but *torri* to break, *torrynt* they broke, *torrir* is broken. In shaping the conjugation of these verbs analogy seems to have played a large part, but the details of the development are obscure.

NOTE 2.—It will be observed that in the case of *i* infection the infection extends back to a preceding *a*, e.g. *deveit*, *edewis*, *egyr*.

NOTE 3.—There is also a variation between *ae* and *eu*, *ei*, e.g. *caer* city: pl. *ceuryd*, *ceyryd*; *aeth* he went: *euthum* I went.

### Vowel Variation due to Accent.

8. Celtic *ā* became in British *ō*; the *ō* stage is seen in Bede's *Dinoot* from Lat. *Donātus*, and in early Irish loanwords which came from Latin through Britain, e.g. *trindōit* *Trinity* from Lat. *trinitātem*. In Welsh, during the period of the older accentuation this *ō* became in accented syllables *aw*, e.g. *Dunawd*, *trindaŵt*, in unaccented syllables *o*. To this are due variations like O.W. *cloriou* gl. *tabellae*: sg. *clawr*, Mid.W. *marchogyon* *horsemen*: *marchawc* *horseman*, *moli* to praise: *mawl* praises, and the proclitic *pob* every (= Ir. *cäch*): accented *pawb* everyone (= Ir. *cäch*). After the shifting of the accent from the ultima to the penult, *aw* in accented words of more than one syllable became *o*,

e.g., Mod.W. **márchog** = Mid.W. **marchawc**, but Mod.W. **pawb** = Mid.W. **pawb**. For other instances of vowel weakening in unaccented syllables see § 4.

### PROTHETIC VOWEL.

9. Before words which in O.W. began with **s** + consonant there developed in the Mid.W. period a prothetic **y**, e.g. **ysgriven** *writing*: O.W. **scribenn**, **ystavell** *chamber*: O.W. **stabell**, **ystrodur** *packsaddle*: O.W. **strotur**, **yspeil** *spoil*: O.W. **\*speil**, from Lat. *spolium*.

### EPENTHETIC VOWEL.

10. Before a final liquid, nasal, or **v**, an epenthetic vowel is often written, which, however, does not count metrically as a syllable.

(a) Consonant + **l**, e.g. **mynwgyl** by **mynwgl** *neck* = Mod. W. **m<sup>w</sup>ynwgl**; **kenedel**, **kenedyl** by **kenedl** *race* = O.W. **cenetl**, Mod.W. **cededl**; **kwbwl**, **kwbyl** by **kwbl** *whole* = Mod.W. **cwbl**; **tavyl** *sling* = Mod.W. **tafl**.

(b) Consonant + **r**, e.g. **hagyr** by **hagr** *ugly* = Mod.W. **hagr**; **lleidyr** by **lleidr** *robber* = Mod.W. **lleidr**; **llestyr** *vessel* = O.W. **llestr**, **llestir**, Mod.W. **llestr**; **dwvyr**, **dwvwr** by **dwvr** *water* = Mod.W. **dwfr**.

(c) Consonant + **m**, e.g. **talym** *space* = Mod.W. **talm**.

(d) Consonant + **n**, e.g. **gwadyn** by **gwadn** *sole* = Mod.W. **gwadn**; **dwvyn** *deep* = Mod.W. **dwfn**.

(e) Consonant + **v**, e.g. **dedyf** *custom* = Mod.W. **deddf**; **baraf**, **baryf** *beard* = Mod.W. **barf**; **twrwf**, **twryf** by **twrf** *noise*.

### CONSONANTAL CHANGES.

11. The following changes of consonants in combination are of importance for accidentence:—

(a) In the Indo-Germanic parent language **d** or **t** + **t** became **t<sup>t</sup>**, and **t<sup>t</sup>** in Celtic became **ss**, e.g. W. **llas** *was killed* = Ir. -*lass* from **\*slat<sup>t</sup>tos**: **llad** *kill* = Ir. *slaidid hews*.

(b) **act** > **aeth**, or, with *i* infection, > **eith**; **ect** > **eith**; **wct** > **wyth**; **wcn**, **wgn** > **wyn**, e.g. **aeth** *he went* from \***act**, but **imdeith** *I travelled* from \***actī** (earlier \***actū**, \***actō**): Mid.W. **eyd goes** = O.W. **egit**, **agit**; **dyrreith** *he returned*, from \*-**rekt**: √**reg-**; **amwyth** *he defended* from \***amukt**: **amwgaf** *I defend*, of which the verbal noun is **amwyn** from \***amucn**...

(c) **rt** > **rth**, e.g. **cymmerth** *he took* from \***com-bert**: **cymmeraf** *I take*.

(d) Before a labial **n** becomes **m**, e.g. **y maes** *in the field* from **yn maes**.

(e) **nd**, **mb** > **nn**, **mm**, e.g. **vyn nyvot**, **vy nyvot** *my coming* from **vyn dyvot**; **ym mwyt**, **y mwyt** *into food* from **yn bwyt**.

(f) **nc**, **nt**, **mp**. At the end of a word **nc**, **mp** remained, e.g. **ieuanc** *young*, **pump** *five*; **nt** remained in accented monosyllables, e.g. **dant** *tooth* (but proclitic **can**, **gan** *with* = O.W. **cant**); in words of more than one syllable it appears as **nt** or **n**, e.g. **ugeint** and **ugein** *twenty*, **carant** and **caran** *they love*. In the interior of a word **nc**, **nt**, **mp** develop regularly in the penultimate syllable to **ng**, **nn**, **mm**, in the antepenult to **ngh**, **nh**, **mh**, e.g. **tranc** *cessation*: **trengi** *to cease*; **angen** *necessity* (from \***ancen** = Ir. **ēcen**): **anghenawc** *necessitous*; O.W. **hanther** *half*, later **hanner**; **dant** *tooth*: **danned** *teeth*: **danhedawc** *toothed*; O.W. **pimphet** *fifth*, later **pymmet**; **cymmell** *compulsion* (from Lat. *compello*): pl. **cymhellyon**. The regular development, however, is liable to be affected by analogy.

NOTE 1.—The cause of the different treatment in the penult and the antepenult is the accent. In early W. the accent was on the last syllable (§ 4); the syllable immediately preceding the accent would be most weakly accented, the syllable before that would have a secondary accent, e.g. **ānghenawc**, **dānhedawc**, **cŷmhellyón**.

(g) Before **h**—

(a) **g**, **d**, **b** become *tenues*, e.g. **teckaf** *most beautiful* from \***teg-haf**: **tec** (phonetically **teg**) *beautiful*, **tebycko** from \***tebyg-ho** *he may think*: **tebygu** *to think*, **plyckau** *to fold* from \***plyg-hau**: **plyc** (phonetically **plyg**) *fold*; **calettaf** *hardest* from \***caled-haf**: **calet** (phonetically **caled**) *hard*, **cretto** *he may believe* from \***cred-ho**:



*credu* to *believe*, *bwyta* to *eat* from \**bwyd-ha* : *bwyt* (phonetically *bwyd*) *food*; *cyvellyppaf* *most like* from \**cyvelyb-haf*: *cyvelyp* (phonetically *cyvelyb*) *like*, *attepo* from \**ad-heb-ho* *he may answer*: *attebu*, *digaplo* *he may cease to calumniate* from \**digabl-ho* : *digablu*, *llwyprawt* from \**llwybr-hawt* *will course*: *llwybraw* to *course*.

- (β) *đ* becomes *th*, e.g. *diwethaf* *last* from \**diwed-haf* : *diwed* *end*, *rotho* *he may give* from \**rod-ho* : *rodi* to *give*, *rythau* to *set free* from \**ryd-hau* : *ryd* *free*.

- (γ) *v* becomes *f*, e.g. *tyffo* *he may grow* from \**tyv-ho* : *tyvu* to *grow*, *dyffo* *he may come*: *dyvod* to *come*, *coffau* to *remember* from \**cov-hau* : *cof* *memory*.

NOTE 2.—Instances of *ff* from *v-h* are not numerous, they have commonly been replaced by analogical forms, e.g. *araf-hau* to *make gentle*, *digrif-af* *most entertaining*. So *th* from *đ+h* becomes rarer and rarer in Mid. W., where e.g. *rotho* is replaced by *rodho* and *rodo*; the old forms are most persistent in the case of the tenues *c*, *t*, *p*. (cf. § 110)

(f) *th+đ* > *th*, e.g. *athiffero* *who may defend thee* from *ath-differo*. But here commonly the *đ* is written etymologically.

(g) *d+đ* became apparently *d*, e.g. *adyn* *wretch* from *ad-dyn* (*ad*=Ir. *aith*-, with sense of Lat. *re*-).

## SOUND-CHANGES WITHIN THE SENTENCE.

12. Within the sentence closely connected word groups are liable to changes similar to those that take place within individual words. As within the word vowel-flanked consonants were reduced, e.g. *cegin* *kitchen* from Lat. *coquina*, *niver* *number* from Lat. *numerus*, so in a word group, e.g. \**tōtā mārā* *great people* became *tud vawr*. As within the word *nc* became *ngh*, *nt* became *nh*, *mp* became *mh* (§ 11), *nd* became *nn*, e.g. *crwnn* *round* by Ir. *cruind*, *mb* became *mm*, e.g. *camn* *crooked* from Old British *cambos*, so in word groups, e.g. *ryn cynghor* *my counsel* became *vy ghyngbor*, *ryn penn* *my head* became *vym penn*, *vy mhenn*, *ryn dyvot* *my coming* became *ryn nyvot*, *yn bwyd* *into food* became *ym mwyd*, *y mwyd*. But, on the one hand, a

particular mutation may spread analogically, if it becomes connected with some grammatical function; thus in Welsh it became the rule that after all feminine nouns in the singular a following adjective was mutated, though in Celtic only certain classes of feminine nouns ended in a vowel. On the other hand, the change may analogically disappear altogether, or the mutation may be restricted to certain phrases as in the case of the nasal mutation after numerals (§ 20c). In sound groups there are three kinds of initial change (1) vocalic mutation or lenation, which originated from cases where the preceding member of the group originally ended in a vowel, (2) nasal mutation where the preceding member originally ended in **n**, (3) spirant mutation where the preceding member ended in certain consonants, most commonly **s** but also **c**.

NOTE.—In reading Early Welsh texts the student must be careful not to be misled by the orthography, which does not consistently express the initial changes. Thus if he should meet with, e.g. **y gwlat** *the country* for **y wlat**, or **yn dyvot** for **yn nyvot**, that is only an archaistic or etymological orthography which is no evidence of the actual sound at the time.

### 13. Table of Consonant Mutations.

		radical		vocalic		nasal		spirant
Tenues	{	<b>c</b> ...	<b>corn</b> ...	<b>gorn</b> ...		<b>nghorn</b> ...		<b>chorn</b>
		<b>t</b> ...	<b>tat</b> ...	<b>dat</b> ...		<b>nhat</b> ...		<b>that</b>
		<b>p</b> ...	<b>prenn</b> ...	<b>brenn</b> ...		<b>mhrenn</b> ...		<b>phrenn</b>
Mediae	{	<b>g</b> ...	<b>gwr</b> ...	<b>wr</b> ...		<b>ngwr</b>		
		<b>d</b> ...	<b>dyn</b> ...	<b>dyn</b> ...		<b>nyn</b>		
		<b>b</b> ...	<b>baryf</b> ...	<b>varyf</b> ...		<b>maryf</b>		
Liquids	{	<b>ll</b> ...	<b>llaw</b> ...	<b>law</b>				
		<b>rh</b> ...	<b>rhan</b> ...	<b>ran</b>				
Nasal		<b>m</b> ...	<b>mam</b> ...	<b>vam</b>				

NOTE 1.—In vocalic mutation **g** became first the spirant **ǵ**, which was early lost (§ 3d). From the fact that initial **g** was thus lost, many words which originally began with a vowel in time assume an initial **g**; e.g. **y ord** *his hammer* (=Ir. *ord*) resembled externally **y wr** *his man*, and this superficial resemblance led to **gord** (for **ord**) like **gwr**. The principle is the same as in the development of initial **f** before a vowel in Mid.Ir.

NOTE 2.—As in Mid.W. the spirant is commonly written **d** (§ 3d), the vocalic mutation of initial **d** is not discernible in writing.

NOTE 3.—In Mid.W. initial **rh** is written **r**, so that the unmutated and the mutated forms are indistinguishable (§ 3f).

## Vocalic Mutation or Lenation.

**14.** The history of Welsh lenation has still to be written. In some respects, particularly with regard to lenation after the verb, the subject is full of difficulty. In the development of lenation analogy played a large part, so that to some extent the usage would differ at different periods. And the fixing of the rules of lenation for a particular period is complicated by the fact that the mutation is not consistently expressed in writing. The following are the chief facts about lenation in Mid. W. prose; the material is taken from the Red Book of Hergest.

**15. General exception to the rules of lenation.** After final **n** and **r** initial **ll** and **rh** were regularly unmutated, e.g. **yn llawen** *gladly*, **y llaw** = O.W. **ir lau** *the hand*. For **rh** the rule is seen in Mod.W., e.g. **yn rhydd** *freely*, **y rhan** *the part*. As **rh** was not written in Mid. W. this distinction is not discernible there.

## A. LENATION OF NOUN AND ADJECTIVE (INCLUDING NOMINAL ADJECTIVAL PRONOUNS).

**16. (a) After the article.**

After the article in the sg. fem. the initial consonant of a following noun or adjective is lenated, e.g. **y gaer** *the city*, **yr dref** *to the town*, **y vrenhines** *the queen*. But **y llaw** *the hand* (§ 15).

**(b) After the noun.**

(a) After a noun in the feminine singular or the dual an adjective is lenated, e.g. **morwyn benngrech velen** *a curlyhaired auburn maid*, **deu vilgi vronwynnyon vrychyon** *two whitebreasted brindled hounds*. Also when the adjective is separated from the noun, e.g. **kaer uawr** *a welynt*, **vwyhaf** or **byt** *they saw a large town, the largest in the world*.

NOTE 1.—After the masc. sg. and the plur. lenation of the comparative is found in sentences of the following type: **ny welsei dyn eiryoet llu degach . . .** *noc oed hwnnw* *no man had ever seen a host fairer than that* RB. 90, 13; **na welsynt llongeu gyweiryach y hansawd noc wynt** *that they had not seen ships better equipped than they* RB. 27, 3.

| cf. p. 22

| x

(β) After a noun in the fem. sg. or the dual a following genitive is lenated when it is equivalent to an adjective, e.g. **kist vaen** *a stone chest*; **deu vaen vreuan** *two millstones*.

NOTE 2.—The genitive is lenated after **meint**, **ryw**, **kyvryw** and **sawl** (§ 76-7), e.g. **y veint lewenyd** *the amount of gladness*; **pa ryw wysc** *what kind of dress?* **kyvryw wr** *such a man*; **y sawl vrenhined** *all the kings*. Further, the genitive of proper names is lenated after certain nouns, e.g. **Cadeir Vaxen** *Maxen's Seat*; **Caer Vyrdin** *Carmarthen*; **Llan badarn** *lit. Padarn's Church*; **Ynys Von** *Island of Mon*; **Eglwys Veir** *Mary's Church*; **Gwlat Vorgan** *the land of Morgan*; **pobyl Vrytaen** *the people of Britain*; **ty Gustenin** *the house of Custenin* (cf. Mod. W. **ty Dduw**); **mam Gadwaladyr** *mother of Cadwaladr*; **Branwen verch Lyr** *Branwen daughter of Llyr*; **gwreic Vrutus** *wife of Brutus*; **deu vab Varedud** *two sons of Maredudd*.

(γ) After proper nouns there is lenation of a following noun or adjective denoting a characteristic of a person, e.g. **Llud vrenhin** *King Llud*, **Peredur baladyrhir** *Peredur of the long spear*.

NOTE 3.—The initial consonants of **mab** *son* and **merch** *daughter* are lenated, e.g. **Pryderi uab Pwyll** *Pryderi son of Pwyll*, **Aranrot verch Don** *Aranrot daughter of Don*.

NOTE 4.—Further instances of lenation in apposition are, e.g. **ewythred Arthur oedynt**, **urodyr y uam** *they were uncles of Arthur, his mother's brothers*, **Giluaethwy ac Euyd . . . y nyeint**, **ueibion y chwaer Gilvaethwy and Ewydd** *his nephews, his sister's sons*. **Aranrot uerch Don dy nith**, **uerch dy chwaer Aranrot** *daughter of Don thy niece, thy sister's daughter*.

(δ) Lenation is found in the genitive of the verbal noun, particularly when it is separated from the governing word, e.g. **menegi uot y crydyon wedy duunaw** *declaring that the cobblers had united*; **a dyuot . . . yn y vedwl uynet y hela** *and it came into his mind to go to hunt*; **a ryuedu o Owein yr mackwy gyuarch gwell idaw** *and Owein wondered that the youth should greet him*.

### (c) After the adjective.

(a) When an adjective in the positive degree precedes, the noun is lenated, e.g. **brawdoryawl garyat** *brotherly love*, **dirvawr wres** *excessive heat*, **amryuaelyon gerdeu** *divers songs*. So after the pronominal adjective **holl** *all*, e.g. **holl gwn** *all the dogs*, **holl wraged** *all the women*.

NOTE 5.—For the comparative the material to hand from R.B. is scanty; with lenation: **yn llei** *boen less pain* 146, without lenation: **mwy gobeith** *greater hope* 95, **muscrellach gwr** *a more helpless man* 13. In R.B. II.

there are some instances of lenation after **mwyy** *more*. After the superlative in RB. non-lenation seems to be the rule; in RB. II. lenation is more frequent.

NOTE 6.—In Celtic, when the adjective preceded the noun, it formed a compound with it, e.g. **hen-wrach** *old hag* (§ 34a), and in composition the lenation of the second element was regular, e.g. **eur-wisc** *golden dress*, **bore-vwyt** *morning-food, breakfast*. In Welsh, when the adjective came to be used freely before the noun, the lenation of the old compounds was retained in the positive,

NOTE 7.—On the analogy of lenation in compound words and of lenation of the noun following the adjective, in poetry, when the genitive precedes the noun, it may lenate, e.g. **byd lywyadwr** *the ruler of the world*, **o Gymry werin** *of the host of the Cynry*.

(β) When an adjective is repeated, e.g. **mwyy vwy** *vyd greater and greater will be*.

(d) After YN forming adverbs, and with predicative nouns and adjectives (§ 35), e.g. **yn vynyeh** *often*, **yn borth** *as a help*, **yn wreic** *as a wife*. But **yn llawen** *gladly* (§ 15).

NOTE 8.—With regard to their influence upon a following word it is necessary to bear in mind that predicative **yn** lenates, that **yn** in is followed by the nasal mutation (§ 20b) and that **yn** with the verbal noun, e.g. **yn mynet** *going* (§ 126a), does not affect a following consonant.

(e) After numerals.

(a) After cardinal numbers.

**un** *one*. After the fem., lenation seems to be regular, e.g. **un wreic** *one woman*, **un vil** *one thousand*, **yr un gerdet** *the same going*. Initial **ll** is regularly uninfected, e.g. **un llynges** *one fleet*. After the masc. the usage seems to vary, e.g. **vn geir** *one word* RB. 197 = WB. 123, but **vn eir** RB. II. 222, **yr un march** *the same horse* RB. 9, but **neb vn varchawc** *any horseman* RB. II. 278, **yn un uaes** *in one field* RB. 114.

NOTE 9.—In Irish, **ōin** regularly mutates a following consonant. According to Rowlands, Mod.W. **un** mutates in the fem.

**deu**, **dwyy** *two*. After these lenation is regular, e.g. **deu barchell** *two pigs*, **deu lu** *two hosts*, **dwyy verchet** *two daughters*. But **deu cant** *two hundred* RB. II. *passim*.

**chwech**, **chwe** *six* :—**chwech wraged** *six women* RB. 18, 16; but **chwe blyned** *six years* RB. II. 387, 404.

**seith** *seven* : **seith gantref** *seven cantreds* RB. 25, 44, **seith gelfydyt** *seven arts* RB. II. 200, **seith wystyl** *seven hostages* RB.

*f. years (after numerals)*

celfydyt, *f. an art*; pl. celfyddau  
gwystyl, *m. a hostage*; pl. gwystlon.

II. 327. But usually without lenation **seith cantref**, **seith cuppyt** *seven cubits*, **seith cant** *seven hundred*, **seith punt** *seven pounds*, **seith meib** *seven sons*. *mab* : *pl. meib, meibon*; for *pl. v. 42a*.

**wyth eight**: **wyth drawst** *eight beams* RB. III, 21, **wyth gant** *eight hundred* RB. II. 386, but **wyth cant** 39, 40, 230, 257, 258, 385, **wyth temyl** *eight temples* 101, **wyth tywyssawc** *eight chiefs* 14.

*grad f. step; -au* **naw nine**. After this lenation is occasionally found, e.g. **naw rad** *nine ranks* LA. 17.

**mil thousand**: **mil verthyr** *a thousand martyrs* RB. II. 199.

10.—In **pumwyr** *five men*, **seithwyr** *seven men*, **nawwyr** *nine men*, **canwr** *a hundred men*, there seems to be composition.

(β) After ordinal numbers.

After the feminine ordinals from *three* onwards there is lenation, e.g. **y dryded geinc** *the third branch*, **y seithvet vlwydyn** *the seventh year*, **yr vgeinuuet vlwydyn** *the twentieth year*.

11.—The same rule seems to hold with **eil** *other, second*, e.g. **yr eil marchawc** *the second horseman*, but **yr eil vlwydyn** *the second year*, and with **neill** *one of two*, e.g. **y neill troet** *the one foot*, but **y neill law** *the one hand*.

(f) After the pronoun.

(a) After the possessives **dy** *thy* and **y** *his*, e.g. **dy davawt** *thy tongue*, **ath lu** *and thy host*; **y benn** *his head*, **ae rud** *and his cheek*.

(β) After interrogatives, e.g. **pa le**, **py le** *where?* **pa beth** *what thing?*

(γ) In apposition, e.g. **ynteu Bwyll** *he Pwyll*, **hitheu wreic** *Teirnon she the wife of Teirnon*; **ef Vanawydan** *he Manawydan*; on hachaws **ni bechaduryeit** *because of us sinners*.

(g) After the verb.

(a) After the verb lenation is found not only of the object but also of the subject, whether the verb immediately precedes the lenated form or is separated from it, e.g. **mi a wnn gyghor** *da I know good counsel*, **y gwelynt uarchawc** *they saw a horseman*, **ny mynnei Gaswallawn** *y lad ynteu Caswallawn did not desire to slay him*. The proportion of lenation to non-lenation differs

in different parts of the verb. After certain parts of the verb lenation is absent or exceptional. Such are 3 sg. and 3 pl. pres. ind. act., 3 sg. pres. subj. act. and the passive forms. After the 3 sg. of the pret. ind. act. non-lenation of the subject is the rule; in RB. lenation of the object is occasionally found when it directly follows the verb, e.g. **y kavas Uendigeit** *Uran he found Bendigeit Vran*, frequently when the subject precedes it, e.g. **y lladawd Peredur** *wyr yr iarll Peredur slew the earl's men*.

(β) After most of the forms of the verb "to be" lenation is found, most consistently in the predicate from its close connexion with the verb, but also in the subject whether it follows the verb immediately or is separated from it, e.g. **ot wyt uorwyn** *if thou art a maid*, **yd ym drist** *ni we are sad*, **yssyd urenhin** *who is king*, **yssit le** *there is a place*, **nyt oed uwy** *it was not greater*, **oedynt gystal** *they were as good*, **mi a uydaf borthawr** *I am gatekeeper*, **ni a vydwn gyuarwyd** *we will be guides*, **ny bydei vyw** *he was not alive*, **y bydynt barawt** *they should be ready*, **ny buost gyvartal** *thou hast not been just*, **tra uu vyw** *while she lived*, **pan uuant veirw** *when they were dead*, **buassei oreu** *it would have been best*, **byd lawenach** *be more joyous*, **bit bont** *let him be a bridge*, **bydwch gedymdeithon** *be ye comrades*, **tra vwyf vyw** *while I live*, **tra vych vyw** *while thou livest*, **tra vom vyw** *while we live*, **mal na bont ueichawc** *so that they may not be pregnant*, **pei bewn urathedic** *if I were wounded*, **a vei vawr** *which should be great*, **gwedy y beym uedw** *after we were intoxicated*, **nyt oes blant** *there is no offspring*, **budugawl oed Gei Kei** *was gifted*, **y hwnnw y bu uab** *to him there was a son*, **cyt bei lawer o geiryd** *though there were many cities*, **nyt oes in gyghor** *we have no counsel*, **oed well ytti geisaw** *it were better for thee to seek*, **tost vu gantaw welet** *it pained him to see*. There is, however, no lenation after **ys**, e.g. **ys gwir** *it is true* (unless the subject be separated, e.g. **kanys gwell genthi gyscu** *since she prefers to sleep*); after **nyt**, **nat**, **neut**, e.g. **nyt llei** *is not less*, **neut marw** *he is dead*; after **os**, e.g. **os gwr** *if he is a man*; after **ae** e.g. **ae gwell** *is it better?* after **yw**, e.g. **pan yw Peredur** *that it is Peredur* (unless the subject be

*cyf - arwyd m.  
a guide.*

*part. of brathu, to  
wound, stab, spur.*

*caer, f. i. pl. caryd*

*hard, severe.*



separated, e.g. hawd **yw** gennyf **gaffel** *I think it easy to get*; after **ytti**w, e.g. a **ytti**w **Kei** yn llys Arthur *is Kei in Arthur's court?* after **mae**, e.g. **y mae llech** *there is a flagstone* (unless the subject be separated, e.g. **y mae yma uorwyn** *there is here a maiden*); after **maent**, e.g. **y maent perchen** *there are owners*; after **byd**, e.g. ny **byd gwell** *it will not be better* (unless the subject be separated, e.g. or **byd gwell genwch bresswylaw** *if ye think it better to dwell*); after **boet**, e.g. **poet kyvlawn** dy rat titheu *may thy prosperity be complete*; after **bo**, e.g. pan **uo parawt** *when it is ready* (unless the subject be separated, e.g. pan **uo amser** in **uynet** *when it is time for us to go*).

#### (h) In adverbs and adverbial phrases.

In the interior of a sentence the initial consonant of an adverb or an adverbial phrase is often lenated, e.g. nyth elwir **bellach** byth yn vorwyn *thou shalt never more be called a maiden*, ny orffowysaf **vyth** *I will never rest*, pan daeth y paganyeit **gyntaf** y Iwerdon *when the pagans came first to Ireland*, bydwch yma **vlwydyn** y dyd hediw *be ye here a year to-day*, bu farw . . . **vis** **whefrawr** *she died in the month of February*, pebyllaw a oruc **lawer o dydyeu** *he encamped many days*. In the same way lenation is found in preposition and suffixed pronoun, e.g. ny eill neb vynet **drwydi** *no one can go through it*, a gymero yr ergit **drossof i** *who shall take the blow in my stead*, hir uu **gennyf i** y nos honno *that night seemed long to me*.

NOTE 12.—In origin this is only a special case of post-verbal lenation, like the corresponding change in Irish, for which see Pedersen, KZ. xxxv. 332 sq.

NOTE 13.—Lenation is found of the initial consonants of some prepositions and conjunctions: **ar**=O.W. **guar** (Ir. *for*), **gen** by **can**, **wedy** by **gwedy**=O.W. **guetig**, **wrth**=O.W. **gwrth**, **dan** by **tan**, **dros**=O.W. **trus**, **drwy** by **trwy**=O.W. **troi**, **ban** by **pan**, **bei** by **pei**. The reason of the weakening here, however, seems to be that the words are pretonic.

(i) After the prepositions **am**, **ar**, **att**, **can**, **heb**, **o** (**a**), **tan**, **tros**, **trwy**, **uch**, **wrth**, **y**, and frequently after the nominal preposition **hyt**, e.g. **am** betheu *about things*; **ar** vrys *in haste*; **att** Bwyll *to Pwyll*; **gan** bawb *with every one*; **heb** vwytt *without food*; **o** gerd *of music*; **dan** brenn *under a tree*; **dros**



vor across the sea; trwy lewenyd through joy; uch benn above; wrth Gynan to Cynan; y vynydd upwards; hyt galan Mei till the first of May.

(k) After a negative in phrases like na wir it is not true RB. 105; na well it is not better RB. 61.

(l) After *mor* how, so and *neu* or, e.g. *mor druan* how wretched; *neu vuelyn* or horn.

(m) After interjections.

(a) The vocative is lenated after *a*, *ha*, *oia*, *och*, *ub* e.g. *a vorwyn* O maiden; *oia wr* ho! man; *och Ereint* alas! Gereint; *ub wyr* alack! men. But without any preceding particle lenation of the vocative is found, e.g. *dos vorwyn* go, maiden.

(β) After *llyma*, *llyna*, and *nachaf*, e.g. *llyma luossogrwyd* yn ymlit see! there is a host following RB. II. 302; *llyna uedru* yn drwc there is bad behaviour; *nachaf uarchawc* yn dyuot behold! a horseman was coming.

B. LENATION OF THE PRONOUN.

17. The pronoun is lenated :—

(a) As subject or object, or emphasizing an infixed or suffixed pronoun or possessive adjective, e.g. *elwyf ui* I might go, *gallaf i* I can, *ny buum drwc i* I was not evil, *y rodaf inneu* I will give, *arhowch uiui* wait for me, *na chabla di uiui* do not blame me, *nyt atwaenwn i didi* I did not recognise thee, *ath gud ditheu* which hides thee, *ohonaf i*, *ohonaf inneu* by me, *vy ysgwyd i* my shield, *dy grogi di* thy hanging, *dy lad ditheu* thy slaying.

NOTE 1.—But after final *t t* is usual, e.g. *y rodeist ti* thou hast given, *gan dy genyat ti* with thy leave, *dy vot titheu* thy being.

(b) Sometimes in apposition, e.g. *ni a awn ui a thi* we will go, I and thou, *keisswn ninneu ui a thi* let us seek, I and thou.

(c) After other lenating words, e.g. *gwae vi* woe to me, *neu vinneu* or I, *neu ditheu* or thou.

## C. LENATION OF THE VERB.

18. The verb is lenated :—

(a) After infixed pronoun of sg. 2, e.g. **yth elwir** *thou art called*.

(b) After relative **a**, e.g. govyn **a oruc** *he asked*.

(c) After the interrogative **pa, py**, e.g. hyt na wydat **pa** (or **py**) **wnaei** *so that she did not know what she should do*; **py liwy di** *why dost thou colour?*

(d) When the copula follows the predicate (§ 159), e.g. **llawen uu y uorwyn** *the maiden was glad*.

(e) After the verbal particle **yt** (§ 91 note 2) in the older language, e.g. **yt gaffei** *he should get*.

(f) After the verbal particle **ry** (but cf. § 21 note), e.g. **ry geveis** *I have got*. Similarly after **neur** (§ 95 note), e.g. **neur gavas** *he has got*.

*peri, to cause, make, create.* (g) After the interrogative **a**, e.g. **a bery di** *wilt thou effect?*

*parhau, to remain, continue.* (h) After the conjunctions **pan, tra, yny**, e.g. **pan golles** *when he lost*, **tra barhaawd** *while it lasted*, **tra vwyf** *as long as I am*, **yny glyw** *till he hears*, **yny welas** *till he saw*, **yny vyd** *till he is*.

*< gwybod* (i) After the negatives **ny** (including **ony, pony**) and **na** (with the exception of the tenses § 21e), e.g. **ny allaf** *I cannot*, **ny ladaf** *I will not slay*, **kany vynny** *since thou dost not desire*, **pony wydut ti didst thou not know? **na ovyn di** *do not ask*, Duw a **wyr na ladaf i** *God knows that I will not slay*.**

NOTE.—But after **ny, na** the rule of lenation is not absolute. In particular initial **m** is commonly unchanged, e.g. **ny mynnaf** *I do not desire*, **hyt na mynnei** *so that he did not desire*. Further, initial **b** of forms of **bot** to be is commonly unlenated, e.g. **ny bu gystal** *it was not so good*; a **wypo na bo min i** *who shall know that it is not I*. But in the imperative lenation seems to be the rule, e.g. **na uit amgeled gennweh** *be not troubled*. Non-lenation after **ny** comes from the old non-relative forms (§ 21 note). **Na** originally ended in a consonant (**nac**), so that after it the lenation is irregular; so far as it lenates it has followed the analogy of **ny**.

## Nasal Mutation.

19. Nasal mutation is very irregularly written in Mid.W.MSS. The mutation of **nc** is expressed by **gk** or **gh**, the mutation of **nt**

commonly by **nt**, rarely by **nh**, the mutation of **mp** commonly by **mp**, sometimes by **mph** or **mh**. The mutation of **ng** is expressed by **gg** or **ngg**, the mutation of **nd**, **nb** by **n** or **nd**, and **m** or **mb**.

20. Nasal mutation is found :—

(a) After **vyn** *my*, e.g. **vygkynghor**, **vyghynghor** *my counsel*, **vyntat**, **vynhat** *my father*, **vypenn**, **vymphen**, **vymhen** *my head*, **vyggwreic** (**gwreic**) *my wife*, **vynggwely** *my bed*, **vynyvot**, **vyndyvot** *my coming*, **vymaraf** (**baraf**) *my beard*. *baraf*.

(b) After **yn** *in, into*, e.g. **ygkarchar**, **ygharchar** *in prison*, **ymperved**, **ymherved** *in the centre*, **ymhoen** (**poen**) *in punishment*; **yn diwed** (= **yn niwed**) *in the end*; **ymbwyt**, **ymwyt** (**bwyt**) *into food*.

(c) In certain phrases after numerals (chiefly with **blyned** *years* and **dieu**, **diwarnawt** *days*), e.g. **pump mlyned** *five years*, *m. a day.* **chwech mlyned** *six years*, **seith mlyned** *seven years*, **wyth mlyned** *eight years*, **naw mlyned** *nine years*, **naw nieu** *nine days*, **deng mlyned** *ten years*, **dec nieu** *ten days*, **deudec niwarnawt** *twelve days*, **pymtheng mlyned** *fifteen years*, **ugein mlyned** *twenty years*, **deugeint mlyned** *forty years*, **cant mlyned** *a hundred years*, **can mu** *a hundred kine*, **trychan mu** *three hundred kine*.

NOTE.—This usage started from those numerals which in Old Celtic ended in **n**: **seith** (cf. Ir. *secht* n-, Lat. *septem*; final **m** in Celtic became **n**), **naw** (cf. Ir. *nōi* n-, Lat. *novem*), **dec** (cf. Ir. *deich* n-, Lat. *decem*), **cant** (cf. Ir. *cēt* n-, Lat. *centum*).

### Spirant Mutation.

21. This is found :—

(a) After the numerals **tri** *three* and **chwe(ch)** *six*, e.g. **tri chantref** *three cantreds*, **tri pheth** *three things*, **chwe thorth** *six loaves*.

(b) After **y** *her*, e.g. **y chlust** *her ear*, **y throet** *her foot*, **y phenn** *her head*.

(c) After the prepositions **ac**, **a** *with*, **tra** *beyond*, e.g. **a chledyf** *with a sword*, **a thi** *with thee*, **tra thonn** *beyond wave*.

(d) After the conjunctions **a(c)** *and*, **no(c)** *than*, **o** *if*, e.g. *mam troed in a foot; fel. traed a that father and mother, traet a phenn feet and head; gwaeth no chynt worse than before; o chigleu if he has heard.*

NOTE 1.—After **kwt** *where* spirant change is found: **cv** *threwna where it settles* BB. 44<sup>b</sup>, but **kwt gaffei** (*caffei*) *where he should get* WB. 453; cf. **cud vit** BB. 44<sup>b</sup>, **cwd uyd** *where it will be* FB. 146.

(e) After the negatives **ny** and **na(c)**, e.g. *ny chysgaf I will not sleep, ny thyrr does not break, ny phryn does not buy; na chwsc do not sleep, na thorraf that I do not break, na marchawc na phedestyr neither horseman nor footman.*

NOTE. 2.—But in the early poetry **ny** produces the spirant change only when it is non-relative; when it is relative a following **c**, **t**, or **p** is lenated, e.g. *ny char he does not love*, but *ny gar who does not love*. In the early poetry there is the same difference of treatment after the verbal particle **ry**, e.g. *ry charas has loved, ry garas who has loved*. This distinction between non-relative and relative forms must have extended to all consonants capable of mutation, but in the case of the other consonants confusion set in earlier. In later Mid. W. after **ny** the non-relative form has been generalised in the case of words beginning with **c**, **t**, **p**, the relative form, with certain exceptions, in the case of words beginning with other mutable consonants (cf. § 18 i). After **ry** the relative form was generalised. For further details see Erin III. pp. 20 sq.

## h in Sentence Construction.

22. After certain words **h** appears before a following word beginning with a vowel.

(a) After the infixed and the possessive pronoun **m**, e.g. *am h-ymlityassant who followed me, om h-anvod against my will.*

(b) After the infixed pronoun **e**, e.g. *ae h-arganvu who perceived him.*

(c) After **y** *her*, e.g. *y h-enw her name.*

NOTE.—In Irish also **h** appears after **a** *her*, e.g. *a h-ainm her name*. The Irish and Welsh **h** here comes from the original final **s** of the possessive.

(d) After **an** *our*, e.g. *an h-arueu our arms.*

(e) After <sup>n</sup>**eu**, **y** *their*, e.g. *eu h-arueu their arms.*

(f) After **ar** before **ugeint** *twenty*, e.g. *un ar h-ugeint twenty one.*

## THE ARTICLE.

23. In O.W. the article is **ir** throughout, e.g. **ir pimphet eterin** *the fifth bird*, **dir finnaun** *to the fountain*. In Mid.W. **yr** remains before vowels and **h**, e.g. **yr amser** *the time*, **yr alanas** (from **galanas**) *the bloodfine*, **yr henwr** *the old man*; before other consonants except **y** it becomes **y**, e.g. **y bwyf** *the food*, **y wreic** (from **gwreic**) *the woman*; before **y** the usage varies, e.g. **yr iarll** or **y iarll** *the earl*. But if the article be fused together with a preceding conjunction or preposition, or if the **y** be elided after a preceding vowel, then **'r** remains, e.g. **y nef ar dayar** *heaven and earth*, **yn gyuagos yr gaer** *near to the city*, **gwiryon yw'r uorwŷn ohonof i** *the maiden is innocent as regards me*.

## SYNTAX OF THE ARTICLE.

24. (a) In addition to its use before common nouns the article appears regularly before the names of certain countries, such as **yr Affrica** *Africa*, **yr Asia** *Asia*, **yr Alban** *Scotland*, **yr Almaen** *Germany*, **yr Eidal** *Italy*, **yr Yspañ** *Spain*, e.g. **vn yw yr Asia**, **deu yw yr Affrica**, **tri yw Europa** *Asia is one, Africa is two, Europe is three* FB. 216. Occasionally the article appears before names of persons, e.g. **yr Beli mawr** (= **y Beli uawr** WB. 191) *to Beli the Great* RB. 93, 2; **mwyhaf oe vrodyr y karei Lud y Lleuelys Llud** *loved Llevelys more than any of his other brothers* ib.

(b) The article is not used before a noun followed by a dependent genitive, e.g. **gwyr ynys y kedyrn** *the men of the island of the strong*, unless it be accompanied by a demonstrative pronoun, e.g. **or meint gwyrtheu hwnnw** *from that amount of miracles*, or unless the genitive be the equivalent of an adjective, e.g. **y werin eur** *the golden chessmen*, **y moch coet** *the wild pigs* (lit. *the pigs of the wood*), **y peir dateni** *the cauldron of rebirth, the regenerative cauldron*.

## THE NOUN.

## NUMBERS AND CASES.

25. In Welsh the old Celtic declension is completely broken down. Of the three genders the neuter has been lost. The dual, which, as in Irish, is always preceded by the numeral for *two*, in some classes of nouns would phonetically have fallen together with the singular; in Welsh this has been generalised so that the dual (apart from forms like **deu ychen** *two oxen*) coincides in form with the singular; a trace of the dual inflection remains in the lenation of a following adjective, e.g. **deu vŷl gadarn** (from **cadarn**) *two strong mules*, **deu vilgi vronwynnion vrychion** *two whitebreasted brindled greyhounds*. In the regular inflexion there remains only one case for each number; in the singular this corresponds sometimes to the old nominative, e.g. **car** *friend* = Ir. *carae*, sometimes to the form of the oblique cases, e.g. **breuant** *windpipe* = Ir. *brāge*, g. *brāgat*; a few traces of lost cases still survive in phrases, e.g. **meudwy** *hermit* (lit. *servant of God*), where **dwy** is the genitive of **duw**; **erbynn** *against* (= Ir. *ar chiunn*), where **pynn** (from **\*pendī**, from **\*pendū**) is the dative of **penn** *head*; **peunyd** *every day*, **peunoeth** *every night*, where **peun-**, which in O.W. would be **\*poun-**, comes from **\*popn-**, the old accusative singular of **pob** *every*.

## SYNTAX OF THE CASES.

26. As in Irish, the nominative may stand absolutely at the beginning of the sentence to introduce the subject of discourse, e.g. **y wreic honn ym penn pythwnos a mis y byd beichogi idi**, lit. *this woman, at the end of a fortnight and a month there will be conception to her*. In prose the genitive follows the noun on which it depends, e.g. **enw y mab** *the name of the son*; in poetry it may precede, e.g. **byt lywaydur = llywaydur byt** *the ruler of the world*; sometimes, as in Irish, it is used after an adjective meaning *with respect to a thing*, e.g. **nŷ bydŷ anuodlawn y phrŷt** *thou wilt not*

*be displeased with her form.* The accusative can be recognised only from the construction; in poetry the accusative of a place-name is common after verbs of motion, e.g. dywed **y down** **Arwystli** *say that we will come to Arwystli* MA. 192<sup>b</sup>.

#### FORMATION OF THE PLURAL.

27. A. The plural is based on Old Celtic plural formations.

(a) Plural with *ī* infection (§ 7b), e.g. **march horse**: **meirch**, **manach monk**: **meneich**, **maen stone**: **mein**, **oen lamb**: **wyn**, **asgell wing**: **esgyll**, **corn horn**: **cyrn**, **escob bishop**: **escyb**, **gwr man**: **gwyr**.

NOTE 1.—This represents the old plural formation of **-o-** stems, e.g. **meirch** from \***marci** from \***marcoi**. In part, however, it might represent the plural of **-i-** stems, cf. Ir. **súili eyes**: **súil eye**. In **dagr** *tear* the plur. **deigr** (= Ir. **dēr**) comes from \***dacru**, the plur. of a neut. **-u-** stem.

NOTE 2.—Many substantives which regularly form their plural otherwise, particularly such as form their plural in **-ion**, follow this inflexion after numerals above *two*, e.g. **tri gweis** *three boys*, **seith meib** *seven sons* (GC.<sup>2</sup> 283).

*spurious form.*  
v. M.-g. 212  
[pl. *dagrau* s.  
*deigr* N.B.]

(b) Plural in **-eu**, **-ieu** (O.W. **-ou**, **-iou**), e.g. **gen jaw**: **geneu**, **penn head**: **penneu**, **cledyf sword**: **cledyveu**, **pebyll tent**: **pebyllyeu**, **glin knee**: **glinyeu**.

NOTE 3.—**-ou**, **-eu** started from **-oues**, the nom. pl. of **-u-** stems, cf. Gaulish **Lugoves**.

(c) Plural in **-on** **-ion**, e.g. **medyc physician**: **medygon**, **cenaw whelp**: **cenawon**, **lleidr robber**: **lladron**, **mab son**: **meibyon**, **dyn man**: **dynyon**, **gelyn enemy**: **gelynyon**. This is the common ending of adjectives.

NOTE 4.—**morwyn** *maiden* becomes in the plural **morynyon**.

NOTE 5.—**-on** is based on **-ōnes**, the nom. pl. of masc. and fem. **-n-** stems, cf. Gaulish **Lingōnes**. The borrowed **lleidr** *robber*: **lladron** represents an older \***latri** (from \***latrū** **latrō**): \***latrōnes**; similarly **dreic** *dragon*: **dragon**, **Seis** *Saxon*: **Saeson**.

(d) Other old consonantal plurals, e.g. **car relative**: **carant** (from \***carants**: \***carantes** = Ir. **carae**: **carait**), **ci dog**: **cwn** (from \***kuū**: \***kunes**), **ych ox**: **ychen**, **brawt brother**: **broder**, **troet foot**: **traet**, **ty house**: **tei** (an old neut. **-s-** stem, cf. Ir. **tech**:

tige). Under the influence of §27a *carant* became *cereint*, *broder* became *brodyr*; in the same way may be explained *nei nephew*: *neieint*, *gof smith*: *goveint*. Some neut. -n-stems make their plur. in -*ein*, e.g. *enw* (O.W. *anu*) *name*: *enwein*, *cam step*: *cemmein*; here \*-*en* might have been expected as in Ir. *bēim blow*: *bēmnen*; the change of \*-*en* to -*ein* may be explained as above.

28. B. The plural is formed by various suffixes, many of which appear in the formation of abstract nouns.

(a) -*awr*, -*iawr*, e.g. *ysgwyt shield*: *ysgwydawr*, *gwaew spear*: *gwaywawr* (also *gwaewar*, *gwewyr*), *cat battle*: *cadyawr*.

NOTE.—This formation is mostly poetical.

(b) -*awt* (= -*awd*), e.g. *pysc fish*: *pyscawt*, *gorwyd steed*: *gorwydawt*.

(c) -*et* (= -*ed*), e.g. *merch daughter*: *merchet*, *pryf worm*: *pryvet*.

(d) -*ed* (= -*ed*), e.g. *bys finger*: *byssed*, *dant tooth*: *danned*, *gwreic woman*: *gwraged*.

(e) -*eit*, -*ieit* (= -*eid*, -*ieid*), e.g. *mil animal*: *mileit*, *barwn baron*: *barwneit*, *barwnyeit*.

(f) -*i*, e.g. *llestyr vessel*: *llestri*, *cawr giant*: *cewri*, *saer artificer*: *seiri*.

(g) -*ot* (= -*od*), e.g. *hyd stag*: *hyddot*, *llwdn beast*: *llydnot*.

(h) -*oed* (= -*oed*), e.g. *mor sea*: *moroed*, *ieith language*: *ieithoed*.

(i) -*yd* (= -*yd*), e.g. *avon stream*: *avonyd*, *gwlat country*: *gwledyd*, *chwaer sister*: *chwioryd*.

also  
gwladod &  
gwledi

29. C. Some nouns are collective, with a singular formation in -*ynn* masc., -*enn* fem., e.g. *adar birds*: *ederyn a bird*, *calaf reeds*: *celevyn a reed*, *coll hazles*: *collenn a hazle*, *tywys ears of corn*: *tywysen a corn ear*.



## THE ADJECTIVE.

## GENDER.

30. There is a special form of the feminine only in the singular, and only in adjectives containing **y**, **w**, which in the feminine became **e**, **o** (§ 7a), e.g. **gwynn** *white*: **gwen**, **melyn** *yellow*: **melen**, **bychan** *small*: **bechan**, **brith** *variegated*: **breith**, **llwmm** *bare*: **llomm**, **crwnn** *round*: **cronn**.

In the singular the adjective is lenated after a feminine noun, e.g. **gwreic dec** *a beautiful woman* (§ 16b<sup>a</sup>); in the plural there is no lenation.

NOTE.—In the Celtic adjective there were **-o-** stems, **-i-** stems and **-u-** stems, which are distinguishable in O.Ir., e.g. **tromm** *heavy* from **\*trummo-s**, **cruind** *round* from **\*crundi-s**, and **il** *much* from **\*pelu-s**. Only the **-o-** stems had a fem. in **-ā**, so that only in these is the Welsh change of vowel etymologically justified. But in Welsh, after the loss of final syllables, the three classes were indistinguishable in the masculine, and the vowel-change in the feminine spread analogically from the **-o-** stems to the others, e.g. **crwnn** from **\*crundis** formed a feminine **cronn** after the analogy of **tromm**: **trwm**, etc.

## FORMATION OF THE PLURAL.

31. The plural is formed:—

(a) By change of vowel e.g. **bychan** *small*: **bychein**, **ieuanc** *young*: **ieueinc**.

(b) By adding **-on**, e.g. **du** *black*: **duon**, **gwineu** *bay*: **gwineuon**.

(c) By adding **-yon** (its usual formation), e.g. **gwynn** *white*: **gwynnyon**, **melyn** *yellow*: **melynyon**.

## CONCORD.

## Gender.

32. In the singular the attributive adjective agrees in gender with its noun, e.g. **gwas melyn** *an auburn lad*, **morwyn benngrech velen** *a curly-headed auburn maiden*. With the predicative adjective agreement is also found, e.g. **un** *ohonunt* **oed amdrom** *one of them was very heavy* RB. 54, 17, **oed amdroch**

**llynges** *the fleet was shattered* MA. 150<sup>b</sup>, bit **wenn gwylyan** *the seagull is white* FB. 247, **llem awel keen** *is the wind* FB. 255, **ys lledan y lenn** *its mantle is broad* FB. 146, **bolch y lauyn** *his blade is notched* MA. 172<sup>a</sup>; but here the masculine form is also found, e.g. **llym awel keen** *is the wind* BB. 45<sup>a</sup> 1, **pan yw gwyrd llinos** *when the linnet is green* FB. 133, **oedd bwlch llafn yn llaw gynnefin** *the blade was notched in a practised hand* MA. 217<sup>b</sup>, **guaedlyd y lein** *bloody is his spear* MA. 184<sup>a</sup>.

### Number.

33. With the attributive adjective there is concord, the dual or a singular noun preceded by a numeral having the construction of the plural, e.g. **danned hiryon melynion** *long yellow teeth*, **deu vackwy wineuon ieueinc** *two auburn young lads*, **pedeir meillionen gwynnyon** *four white blades of clover*. But there are many exceptions; with certain adjectives the singular is regularly used; such are adjectives in **-awc**, **-awl**, **-eid**, **-ic**, comparatives and superlatives, some other simple adjectives such as **mawr** *great*, **tec** *beautiful*, and compound adjectives; e.g. **gwyr arawc** *armed men* (but exceptionally **o vrenhined coronogyon** *of crowned kings* WB. p. 90<sup>a</sup>), **llygeit hebogeid** *hawklike eyes*, **niveroed mawr** *great numbers*, **dyrnodeu calet-chwerw** *hard bitter buffets*. With the predicative adjective there are found on the one hand, e.g. **bychein ynt wynteu** *they are small* RB. 60, **wynteu a veynt veirw** *they would be dead* Hg. I. 138, **oedd beilch gweilch** *heroes were proud* MA. 217<sup>b</sup>, **kertoryon neud ynt geith** *now poets are captive* MA. 157<sup>b</sup>, on the other hand, e.g. **cadarn** *oed y holl aelodau* *all his limbs were strong* CM. 26, **balch iawn yw dy eiryeu** *thy words are right haughty* CM. 34, **marw ynn** *they are dead* MA. 164<sup>a</sup>, **rud ynt wy** *they are red* FB. 284, **doeth y veirt** *his bards are learned* MA. 262<sup>a</sup>, **ys da y gampeu** *his feats are good* MA. 237<sup>b</sup>. The whole subject needs a thorough investigation.

### Order.

34. (a) In Welsh, as in the other Celtic languages, the adjective normally follows the noun, e.g. **dyn doeth** *a wise man*, **gwreic**

*gwalech, a  
hawk, reader*

*sg.  
case th.*

**dec** *a fair woman*, **arveu trymyon** *heavy arms*. In Celtic, when the adjective preceded, it formed a compound with the noun, e.g. Gaulish **Cambo-dunum**, which would in W. be \***cam-din**, O.Brit. **Cuno-maglos** lit. *lofty chief*= W. **Cynvael**, W. **hen-dyn** *old man* (= Ir. *sen-duine*) from \***seno-dunyos**, W. **prif-dinas** *chief city* (cf. Ir. *prīm-dūn chief fort*), W. **hen-wrach** *old hag*, which would in Irish be \***sen-fracc**. From this principle W. has departed in that, under conditions the details of which have still to be investigated, the inflected adjective may precede the noun, e.g. **bolch-lauyn** *a cutting blade* MA. 263<sup>a</sup>, **gwen llaw** *white hand* MA. 153<sup>b</sup>, **amryvaelon gerdeu** *various songs*.

(b) In various phrases the noun with the preposition **o**, **a** follows the adjective, e.g. **ys drwc a gedymdeith** *a uuost di thou hast been a sorry comrade*, **bychan a dial** *oed an lloski ni our burning were a small revenge*, **ys dyhed o beth** *it is a strange thing*.

### THE PREDICATIVE NOUN AND ADJECTIVE WITH YN.

35. A predicative noun or adjective is often preceded by **yn** (lenating), e.g. **gwedy llosci canhwyll ohonei yn oleuat** *idaw after she had lighted a candle as a light to him*, **mi ath roessum yn wreic y Uanawydan** *I have given thee as a wife to Manawyddan*, **ych gelwir chwi yn Grystonogyon** *ye are called Christians*, **neum goruc yn oludawc** *he has made me wealthy*, **a phob ty a welei yn llawn o win** *and every house he saw full of wine*, **yd oed ef yn holliach** *he was quite well*, **un a welei yn amdrom** *one (fem.) he saw very heavy*, **paham y maent hwy yn varw o newyn** *why are they dead with hunger?* **mi a wnaeth seith cant ohonawch yn ueirw** *I will make seven hundred of you dead men*, **an gunel in rit** *may He make us free*, **eu gwneuthur yn rydyon** *to make them free*, **eu clusteu yn gochyon** *their ears red*, **eu harwydyon yn purwynn** *their standards pure white*. The concord after the feminine and the plural still needs investigation.

## ADJECTIVE PHRASES.

36. In place of a simple adjective may be found an adjectival phrase, e.g. gwr **dirvawr y veint** *a man of huge size* (lit. *a man huge his size*), eurwalch balch **bolch y daryan** *a proud golden hero with hacked shield* (lit. *hacked his shield*), gwreic **digonach y thecket** *a woman of more perfect beauty*, dymnodeu **diuessured eu meint** *mighty buffets*, drwc a dyn **y thygetuen** *a woman of unhappy fate* (lit. *ill of a woman her fate*), ys **drwc a wyr eu dihenyd** *vydem ni we should be men of an ill ending*, pan yttoedynt **yn digrifaf gantunt** eu gware *when they were most interested in their play*, y wreic **vwyhaf a garei** *the woman whom he most loved*.

## COMPARISON.

37. (a) The regular suffix of the comparative is **-ach**, of the superlative **-haf** (for the phonetic changes see § 11g)<sup>\*</sup>, e.g.—

<sup>\*</sup>g, d, h, become  
tunes before h.

Positive.	Comparative.	Superlative.
tec (= teg) <i>beautiful</i>	tegach	teckaf
tlawt (= tlawd) <i>poor</i>	tlodach	tlottaf
cyffelyb <i>like</i>	cyffelybach	cyffelyppaf

NOTE.—In Mod. W. the consonantism of the superlative has spread to the comparative, e.g. teg, tecach, tecaf.

(b) The following are irregular :—

agos	} <i>near</i>	nes (Ir. nessa)	nesaf (Ir. nessam)
cyfagos			
bychan <i>small</i>		llel (Ir. lugu)	lleiaf (Ir. lugem)
da <i>good</i>		gwell	goreu
drwc <i>evil</i>		gwaeth	gwaethaf
hawd <i>easy</i>		haws	hawsaf
hen <i>old</i> (Ir. sen)		hyn (Ir. śiniu)	hynaf
hir <i>long</i> (Ir. sīr)		hwy (Ir. śia)	hwyaf (Ir. śiam)
ieuanc <i>young</i> (Ir. ōac)		ieu (Ir. ōa)	ieuaf (Ir. ōam)
isel <i>low</i> (Ir. issel)		is	isaf
* llydan <i>broad</i> (Ir. lethan)		llet (Ir. letha)	llettaf
mawr <i>great</i> (Ir. mōr)		mwy (Ir. mōa)	mwyhaf (Ir. mōam)
* tren <i>strong</i> (Ir. trēn)		trech (Ir. tressa)	trechaf (Ir. tressam)
* uchel <i>high</i> (Ir. ūassal)		uch	uchaf

## Construction of the Comparative and Superlative.

38. (a) The comparative is followed by **no**, before vowels **noc** *than*, e.g. **ny bu hwy no hynny** *it was not longer than that*, **mw y vyrywys ef y dyd hwnnw noc undyd** *more he threw on that day than on any single day*.

(b) The superlative is followed by the preposition **o**, e.g. **y uorwyn deckaf onadunt** *the fairest maiden of them*.

(c) In sentences like *the more the better* the superlative is used, e.g. **pei vwyhaf y lladei ef y march pellaf** *vydei hitheu y wrthaw ef the more he struck the horse the farther she was from him* RB. 9, 13; **goreu yw gennyf i bo kyntaf** *the sooner it is the better it pleases me* RB. 12, 4.

## THE EQUATIVE.

39. The possession by two objects of a quality in the same degree is expressed by a derivative in **-het** (= **-hed**) from the adjective preceded by **cyn-**, **cy-**, e.g. **kynduhet (du) ar muchud** *as black as jet*, **kyngadarnet (cadarn) ac Adaf** *as strong as Adam*, **kyndecket (tec) a hi** *as fair as she*, **kynvelynet (melyn) ar eur** *as yellow as gold*, **kynehofnet (ehovyn) a hynny** *as fearless as that*, **kynwynnet (gwynn) ar eiry** *as white as snow*, **kygadarnet a brenhin** *as strong as a king*, **kyduet ar muchud** *as black as jet*, **kywynnet ar alaw** *as white as the lily*.

NOTE 1.—The Celtic preposition **com-** would in Welsh become **cym-**, **cyn-**, **cyf-**, **cy-** according to the following sound, and would be liable to various changes in connexion with a following consonant, e.g. **com** + vowel > **cyf**, **com** + **l** > **cyfl-**, **com** + **w** > **cy-**, **com** + **p** > **cymh-**, **com** + **b** > **cymm-**, **com** + **g** > **cyng-**, **com** + **d** > **cynn-**, etc.; there is an interesting example of the regular development in **cythrymhet** (**trwmm**) RB. 112, for **ntr** becomes **thr**. But the form **cyn-** with analogical lenation became the general form before all sounds, though for a time it had to contend with **cy-**, the form which would arise in Celtic before initial **w**. For a discussion of the formation see Zimmer KZ. xxxiv. 161 sq., Loth Rev. Celt. xviii. 392 sq., Stern CZ. iii. 135 sq.

NOTE 2.—Equality may also be expressed by **mor—a**, e.g. **pryf mor dielw a hynny** *a creature so vile as that*, **am gyllafan mor anwedus ac a wnaethoed** *on account of a crime so base as he had committed*.

## THE ADVERB.

40. The adverb is regularly formed from the adjective by prefixing **yn** (lenating), e.g. **yn vawr (mawr)** *greatly*, **yn llawen** *gladly*,

**yn drwmm** (**trwmm**) *heavily*, **yn well** *better*, **yn vwyhaf** *most*.

But, if it precedes the verb, the adjective is used without **yn**, e.g. **mynych** y dywedut *thou didst often say*; in the following sentence both forms occur: **kans mwy** y karyssei ef hi nor rei ereill eiryoet. a hitheu yn y dremygu ynteu **yn vwy** nor rei ereill *for he had always loved her more than the others, while she contemned him more than the others* RB. II. 65.

## THE NUMERALS.

### 41. CARDINALS AND ORDINALS.

*One, etc.*

*First, etc.*

i. un	cyntaf
ii. deu, f. dwy	eil
iii. tri, f. teir	trydyd, f. tryded
iv. petwar, pedwar, f. pedeir	petwryd, petweryd, f. petwarded; also pedwryd, etc.
v. pump	pymhet
vi. chwech, chwe	chwechet
vii. seith	seithvet
viii. wyth	wythvet
ix. naw	nawvet
x. dec, deng	degvet
xi. un ar dec	unvet ar dec
xii. deudec	deudegvet
xiii. tri, f. teir, ar dec	trydyd, f. tryded, ar dec
xiv. petwar, pedwar, f. pedeir, ar dec	petwryd, etc., f. petwarded, etc., ar dec
xv. pymthec, pymtheng	pymthegvet
xvi. un ar bymthec	unvet ar bymthec
xvii. deu, f. dwy, ar bymthec	eil ar bymthec
xviii. tri, f. teir, ar bymthec	trydyd, f. tryded, ar bymthec
xix. petwar, pedwar, f. pedeir, ar bymthec, un eisieu o ugein	petwryd, etc., f. petwarded, etc., ar bymthec
xx. ugeint, ugein	ugeinvet

NOTE.—The form **deng** is found only before nouns beginning with certain sounds, cf. Rev. Celt. XXVIII. 201.

**xxi.-xcix.** In O.W. trimuceint is found for *thirty*. The usual reckoning, however, is by multiples of *twenty*:—**deugein(t)** (O.W. *douceint*) *forty*, **deugeintvet** *fortieth*, **trugein(t)** *sixty*, **trugeinvet** *sixtieth*, **petwarugein(t)** *eighty*, **petwarugeinvet** *eightieth*. The intermediate numbers are expressed by addition, e.g. **un ar hugein(t)** *twenty-one*, **dec erydyr ar hugeint** *thirty ploughs*, **deudec brenhin ar hugeint** *thirty-two kings*, **deng mlyned a deugeint** *fifty years*, **deudeng mlyned a thrugeint** *seventy-two years*, **petwryd ar ugeint** *twenty-fourth*. This reckoning may extend beyond a hundred, e.g. **pedeir gwlat a seith ugeint** *one hundred and forty-four countries*.

**c.-ccioo.** **Cant** *hundred*, **canvet** *hundredth*. From this the other hundreds are formed by prefixing the cardinals:—**deucant** or **deugant**, **trichant**, **petwarcant**, **pumcant**, **chwechant**, **seithcant**, **wythcant**, **nawcant**. **Mil** *thousand*, **dwyl** *two thousand*, etc. **Un vlwydyn ar bymthec ar hugeint a deucant** = 236 *years*; **chwech marchawc a thrugeint a phumcant** = 566 *horsemen*; **deudeng mlyned a thrugeint ac wythcant** = 872 *years*; **deg mlyned a phetwar ugein a chant a mil** = 1190 *years*. **ccioo.** **myrd** *myriad*.

### Syntax of the Cardinals and Ordinals.

**42. (a)** After **deu**, **dwyl**, the singular (i.e. historically the dual § 25) form is regularly used; but there are exceptions, e.g. **deu ychen** *two oxen* (where, however, the form might be dual), **dwyl chwioered** *two sisters* LA. 39, RB. II. 39, **dwyl burloywduon hirueinon aeleu** *two brilliant black long slender eyebrows* (by **dwyl ael**) LA. 93, **deu rudellyon lygeit** *two ruddy eyes* ib., **deu perffeithloyw gochyon rudyeu** *two perfect brilliant red cheeks* ib., **deu nyeint** *two nephews* RB. II. 69, **dwyl wraged** *two wives* ib. 239 **dwyl vlyned** *two years* ib. 240. As to the higher numbers the general rule is that, if there be a plural with internal vowel change (§ 27a), the plural is used, e.g. **tri meib** *three sons*, but otherwise the noun is in the singular, e.g. **teir ynys** *three islands* (pl. **ynysed**), **petwar marchawc** *four horsemen* (pl. **marchogyon**). There are, however,

exceptions, e.g. **teir chwioryd** *three sisters*, **pump gwraged** *five women*, **trychant tei** *three hundred houses*; so very often with **dyd** *day* pl. **dieu**, and **blwydyn** *year* pl. **blyned**. Compare the exceptions after **deu** above. Another mode of expression is, e.g. **tri chawr o gewri** *three giants*, lit. *three giants of giants*.

(b) The ordinals precede the noun, e.g. **y betwared vlwydyn** *the fourth year*. But **cyntaf** usually follows, e.g. **y marchawc kyntaf** *the first horseman*; sometimes, however, it precedes, e.g. **kyntaw geir** a **dýwedaw** *the first word that I will say* BB. 41<sup>b</sup> 1. The ordinal may denote not the order in a series, but, as also in Irish, one of a certain number, e.g. **odena y kerdus er tir a naw kedem-deith ganthav**, **ar nauvet** a **las ar hynt** *thence he came to land with nine comrades, and one of the nine was slain at once* Arch. Cambr. 1866 p. 114, **ý trýdý gwr** a **dienghis o Gamlan** *one of the three men who escaped from Camlan* WB. 463; **e tredyt anhebchor** *one of the three indispensables* BCh. 8.

#### DISTRIBUTIVES.

43. These are expressed by prefixing **pob** *every* to the cardinal, e.g. **eu bwrw pob dec pob deudec** *throwing them by tens and twelves* Hg. II. 160, **gwin ý bid hi ý vedwen in diffirin Guý a sirth ý chegev pop vn pop dvý** *happy the birch in the valley of the Wye, whose branches fall by twos and threes* BB. 24<sup>a</sup>. *ones and twos*

#### MULTIPLICATIVES.

44. These are expressed by **gweith** f. preceded by the cardinal, e.g. **unweith** *once*, **dwý weith** *twice*, **teir gweith** *thrice*, **pedeir gweith** *four times* etc.

### THE PRONOUN.

#### PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

##### The Independent Pronoun.

45. Independent pronouns fall into three sub-divisions, (a) the simple pronoun, (b) the emphatic pronoun, (c) the conjunctive or contrasting pronoun (*I also, I on my part, I on the other hand,*



etc.) When attached to a verb as its subject the pronouns are liable to weakening, e.g. **vi**, **i** for **mi**, **di** for **ti**, **ditheu** for **titheu**. Classes (a) and (c) are used also to reinforce an infixed pronoun (§49a), a pronominal preposition (§52), or a possessive pronoun (§56), or possessive adjective (§58); then, too, they are liable to the same reduction (§17a).

(a) Simple.

(b) Emphatic.

(c) Conjunctive.

<i>I, me</i> <b>mi</b> , <b>vi</b> , <b>vy</b> , <b>i</b> , <b>y</b> .	<b>mivi</b> , <b>myvi</b> , <b>myvy</b> , <b>vivi</b> , <b>vyvi</b> .	<b>minheu</b> , <b>minneu</b> , <b>inneu</b> .
<i>We, us</i> <b>ni</b> , <b>ny</b> .	<b>nini</b> , <b>nyny</b> .	<b>ninheu</b> , <b>ninneu</b> .
<i>Thy, thee</i> <b>ti</b> , <b>di</b> , <b>dy</b> , <b>de</b> .	<b>tidi</b> , <b>tydi</b> , <b>dydi</b> , <b>dydy</b> .	<b>titheu</b> , <b>ditheu</b> .
<i>Ye, you</i> <b>chwi</b> .	<b>chwichwi</b> .	<b>chwitheu</b> .
<i>He, him</i> <b>ef</b> (O.W. <b>em</b> ).	<b>efo</b> .	<b>ynteu</b> .
<i>She, her</i> <b>hi</b> , <b>hy</b> .	<b>hihi</b> .	<b>hitheu</b> .
<i>They, them</i> (h) <b>wy</b> , (h) <b>wynt</b> .	(h) <b>wyntwy</b> .	(h) <b>wynteu</b> .

NOTE 1.—In **chwi** the **w** may be omitted after **w** in the verb, e.g. **ewchi** *go ye*, **dowchi** *come ye*.

NOTE 2.—**wy** is the earlier form, which became **wynt** under the influence of the ending **-nt** of the 3 plur. of the verb, just as O.Ir. **ē** *they* became in Mid.Ir. **iat**. In Mid.W. **wynt** is particularly used when it precedes the verb, e.g. **wynt a welynt** *they saw*, but **y gwelynt wy**; this, however, is a later distinction, in earlier Welsh **wy** is used everywhere, e.g. **wy gwnaethant** *they did*, **wy ladassant** *they slew*.

46. The independent pronouns are used as the subject of a sentence, as the object of a sentence, where, however, they enter into concurrence with the infixed pronoun (§48), (which, to judge from Irish, was the original method of expressing the object), after prepositions which did not enter into a unity with the pronoun (§52), and after some conjunctions. The following examples will illustrate the usage :—

(a) **mi** *a wna*f *I will do*; **pan y gweleis i ef** *when I saw him*; **nyt yspeilwys ynteu vi** *he did not strip me*; *a rithwys Duw cyn no mi* *whom God created before me*; **ti a wely** *thou wilt see*; *a wely di* *dost thou see?* **kymer dy hun ef** *take it thyself*; **nyt oes seith cantref**

There?

well noc **wy** *they are not seven cantreds better than they*; gyt ac **wynt** *along with them*.

(b) kynt y kyuarhawd ef well y mi no **miui** idaw ef *he greeted me before I greeted him*; pa le y keisswn i **dydi?** pan geissych di **vyvi**, keis parth ar India "*where should I seek thee?*" "*When thou seekest me, seek towards India*"; gofyn a oruc idi ae **hihi** oed yn peri hynny *he asked her if it was she who was causing that*.

(c) Mivi a rodaf vyg cret, heb hi, na charaf i dydi ac nath vynnaf yn dragwydawl. **minneu** a rodaf vyg cret, heb y Peredur, na dywedaf **ynneu** eir byth wrth Gristiawn yny adewych **ditheu** arnat vyg caru i yn vwyhaf gwr "*I pledge my faith*," said she, "*that I do not love thee and that I will not desire thee to all eternity*." "*I, on my part*," said Peredur, "*pledge my faith that I will never speak a word to Christian soul, until thou shalt confess that thou lovest me more than any man*;" ac yn keissaw bwrw y gelein ar y march yn y kyfrwy, y dygwydei **ynteu** yr llawr ac y dodei **hitheu** diaspat *and as she sought to cast the corpse on the horse into the saddle, it kept falling to the ground, and she raised a cry*.

NOTE.—**ynteu** etc., is also used before a proper name, e.g. y wybot dy atdeb di am hynny y deuthum i. Rof i a Duw, heb ynteu Bwyll, llyna vy atdeb i ytti, "*I have come to learn thy answer about that*." "*Between God and me*," said Pwyll, "*here is thy answer*" RB. 11. cf. RB. 25, 65, 77, 79, 81, etc., **wynteu y Galissyeit** CM. 1; before a common noun, e.g. sef a wnaeth **ynteu yr eryr** *this the eagle did* RB. 78, a **hitheu wreic Teirnon** a gytsynnywys *and the wife of Teirnon agreed* RB. 22; after a proper name, e.g. **Troilus ynteu** lleiaf mab y Briaf oed herwyd oet **Troilus** *was Priam's youngest son* RB. 11. 7, so RB. 14, 11. 8, 9, 14, 22, **Castor a Pholux wynteu** a aethant *Castor and Pollux went* RB. 11. 9, **y Telepus ynteu** RB. 11. 17; after a common noun, e.g. a gwyr Troea **wynteu** a ymhoelasant *and the men of Troy on their part returned* RB. 11. 20; and in instances like: y gelwit hi Lundein **neu ynteu** Lwndrys *it was called Lundein or Lwndrys* RB. 93, **neu ynteu** ony edy hynny udunt *or again if you do not allow them that* RB. 11. 44. Cf. Mod.W. **ynte**.

47. **Issem, ysef, sef**. In O.W. the pron. **em** is used with **iss**, *is is* in phrases like **issem i anu** *that is his name*. From **issem** comes in Mid.W. **ysef, sef**, e.g. **ysef** a rodaf inneu *this is what I will give*; **sef** gwreic a vynnawd Kicua *that was the wife he desired*, ? **Rigfa**; **ssef** a gafas yn y chyghor fo y ynyalwch *this is what she resolved upon, to flee into a wilderness*; **sef** y kyrchassant y dref uchaf o Arllechwed *they made for the highest town of Arllechwedd*;

celain n.f.  
dy-gwydau  
diasbad n.f.

according to, by

ym-choelud (-  
choelud) to return,  
turn

ym-choelud =  
anialwch n.m.

arglwyd, heb ynteu, minneu a allaf dy rydhau ditheu. **sef** ual y gallaf "*Lord,*" said he, "*I can free thee. This is how I can do it;*" **ssef** y gwelynt varchawc *then they saw a horseman.* In a similar way **ef** is used by itself, e.g. pan dyuu y **thymp** idi, **ef** a dyuu y hiawnbwyll idi *when her time of labour came, then her right senses came to her.*

n. he.

## 48.

## Infixd Pronoun.

Sing.	Plur.
1. <i>me</i> - <b>m</b> -	<i>us</i> - <b>n</b> -
2. <i>thee</i> - <b>th</b> -	<i>you</i> - <b>ch</b> -
3. <i>him, her, it</i> - <b>s</b> -, - <b>e</b> -	<i>them</i> - <b>s</b> -, - <b>e</b> -

## REMARKS.

49. (a) The infixd pronoun may be strengthened by putting the corresponding simple or conjunctive pronoun after the verb, e.g. a thydi **am** gwely i *and thou shalt see me*, euo **ath** gud ditheu *he will hide thee.*

cu dyau

(b) In the third person -**e**- is used after the relative particle **a**, e.g. mi **ae** gwelaf *I see him*, and after the conjunction **tra**, e.g. **trae** llathai pob tri *while he slew them by threes* BB. 48<sup>a</sup>, mi **ae** kynhalyaf hyt **trae** gallwyf *I shall maintain it as long as I can* Hg. I, 4; elsewhere -**s**- is used. After the verbal particle **yd**-, however, if the verb begins with a consonant, there is no visible pronoun of the third person, e.g. **y** gwelaf *I see her* RB. 278, 6; a phan i gweles meibion Collwyn *and when the sons of Collwyn saw him* MA. 729<sup>a</sup>; if the verb begins with a vowel **yh** appears, e.g. **y** hanoones *sent it* WB. 104, **y** hedewynt *they left them* WB. 186; similarly after **yny** until, e.g. ny dygaf i un daryan **yny** hanoono Duw im *I shall not bear any shield till God send it to me* Hg. I. 15. After **pan** when the infixd pronoun is regularly preceded by **y**-, e.g. **pan** yth wnaethpwyf ti *when thou wast made*; in the third person it is **pan** **y(h)**, e.g. **pann** **y** harcho udunt *when he asks it of them* LA. 56.

tanyan, f.

(c) In early poetry in connexion with **ny** and **ry** there are in the third person special forms, **nwy**, **nyw**, **rwy**, **ryw**, used when the verb is relative, e.g. ir nep **nuy** hatnappo *to one who does not*

dygyr

recognise it BB. 4<sup>b</sup>, nyt kerdaur **nyu** moluy *he is not a poet who does not praise him* MA. 174<sup>b</sup>, y ren **rwy** digonse *the King who had digawn*<sup>30</sup> made them FB. 138. In non-relative usage the infixed pron. after **ny** is **-s-**, the form of the non-relative infixed pronoun after **ry** I have not been able to establish.

NOTE.—The infixed pronoun may, as in Irish, anticipate a following object, e.g. **ai** torro hac **ay** dimanno **y** bryeint hunn *who shall violate and diminish this privilege*, **ay** enrydedocao **y** breint hunn *who shall respect this privilege* Lib. Land. 121, **y** harchwn ni **dy** drugared *we ask thy mercy* RB. 11. 44.

50. The infixed pronoun follows :—

(a) The relative particle **a**, e.g. mynn y gwr **a-n** gwnaeth *by Him who made us*, Duw **a-ch** nodho *may God protect you*, mi **a-e** harhoaf *I will await him, her, it, or them*, **a-e** lladawd ef *who killed him*, y niver **a-e** gwelei wynt *the multitude that saw them*.

(b) The verbal particle **yd**, e.g. **y-m** gelwir *I am called*, **ywch** kymhellasant *they have compelled you*.

(c) The infixing particle **a-** (§ 94), e.g. **a-m** bo *may there be to me*, **a-th** volaf *I will praise thee*, **a-s** rodwy trindawt trugared *may the Trinity give him mercy*, gwedi **a-n** gwelwch *after ye see us*, pei **a-s** archut *if thou hadst asked it*, kyt **a-m** llatho *though he should slay me*. So when this **a-** has been replaced by **y-**, e.g. **y-s** rodho Duw ymi *may God give it me* LA. 121.

(d) The verbal particle **ry-** in the earlier language, e.g. **ry-m** goruc *he has made me*. But in later Mid.W. the pronoun is infixed before **ry-** by means of **yd-**, e.g. **y-th** ry gereis *I have loved thee*.

(e) The particle **neu-**, e.g. **neu-m** goruc *he has made me* MA. 141<sup>a</sup>, **neu-s** cud *hides it* FB. 272.

(f) Sometimes in early poetry **dy-** of compound verbs, e.g. **dy-m** ryd *gives me*.

(g) The negatives, e.g. **ny-m** oes *there is not to me*, **ny-s** gweleis *I have not seen him, her, it, or them*, **cany-ch** gwelas neb *since no one has seen you*; **na-m** gommed *do not refuse me*, mi a debygaf **na-ch** rydhawyt *I think that you have not been freed*.

NOTE.—In later Mid.W. **nys** seems sometimes to be used merely in a relative sense, e.g. yn y wlat **ny-s** ry welsei *in the country that he had not seen* RB. 114, 13 = yn y wlad nŷ ry welei WB. 471. This usage may have

*rhân, m., lord,  
nobleman, ruler*

*noði*

*dy-nodi*

*gomedd*

developed from cases where the nominative stands at the head of the sentence introducing it (§ 26), e.g. *amheu yr hynn a dywedwch chwi ny-s gwnaf i* lit. *doubting of what you say I will not do it*. A meaningless **-s**, however, is found when the verb is non-relative, e.g. *nys gohiryassant* *they did not delay* RB. II. 48.

(h) Certain conjunctions :—**tra-e** *llathe i while he slew them* BB. 48<sup>a</sup>, **yny-m** *byrywyt i till I was thrown* RB. 169, **o-s** *lledy if thou slayest him* Hg. I. 368. Some conjunctions are followed by the infixing **a**, see above (c).

51. The infixed pronoun commonly expresses the accusative relation. With the verb 'to be,' however, it regularly expresses its dative relation, e.g., **am bo** *may there be to me, may I have*, **vn tat ae bu** *one father they had*; it may further express the dative relation with other verbs, e.g. *y perffeith garyat hwnnw an rodho yr yspryt glan may the Holy Spirit give us that perfect love* LA. 103, **an gunel iechid** *may He work salvation for us* BB. 20<sup>b</sup>.

#### PRONOUN WITH PREPOSITION.

52. In Welsh as in Irish the pronoun is regularly fused together with the preposition. After **ac** *with* and **gwedy** *after*, however, the pronoun follows separately, e.g. **a mi** *with me*, **gwedy ni** *after us*; the explanation seems to be that the usage of these words as prepositions is secondary. With respect to the formation, the following points may be noted.

(a) In the first and second persons (except after **y** *to*) there is an intervening vowel **a**, **o** (**aw**), or **y** (and in 2 pl. also **w**), so that in these persons there are the following series :—

Sing.	Plur.
1. <b>-af, -of, -yf</b>	<b>-am, -om, -ym</b>
2. <b>-at, -ot, -yt</b>	<b>-awch, -och, -wch, -ych</b>

(b) In the 3 sg. masc. the ending is **-aw**, in the 3 sg. fem. **-i** (inflecting a preceding vowel) and **-ei**, e.g. **oheni** and **ohonei**; sometimes the inflected vowel spreads analogically, e.g. 3 pl. **ohenynt**. In the 3 pl. the oldest ending was **-u**, whence developed later **-ud** (i.e. **-ud**), **-unt**, **-ynt**. In the third persons **-aw**, **-u**, etc., are commonly preceded by a dental.

(c) In the 1 sg. and 3 pl. there are also endings **-wyf, -wynt**.

(d) After the prepositions **ar, o, am** are inserted respectively **-n-, -hon-, -dan-** (i.e. the prep. **tan** *under*). In the 3 pl. there are certain other insertions.

53. The forms assumed by the pronouns in connection with the several prepositions will be seen from the following table:—

	Sing.	Plur.
<b>am</b> <i>about</i>	1. amdanaf, ymdanaf 2. ymdanat 3m. amdanaw, ymdanaw 3f. ymdeni, amdanei, ymdanei	amdanam amdanawch amdanunt, ymdanunt, amdanadunt, ym- danadud, ymdana- dunt, amdanwynt
<b>ar</b> <i>on</i>	1. arnaf 2. arnat 3m. arnaw 3f. arnei, arni, erni	arnam arnawch, arnoch arnunt, arnynt, ar- nadud, arnadunt
<b>att</b> <i>to</i>	1. attaf 2. attat 3m. attaw 3f. attei, etti	attam attawch attunt, attadunt
<b>can, gan</b> <i>with</i>	1. genhyf, gennyf 2. genhyt, gennyt 3m. gantaw, ganthaw, gentaw 3f. genti, genthi	genhym, gennym genhwch, gennwch gantunt, ganthu, ganthud, ganthunt
<b>heb</b> <i>without</i>	1. hebof 2. hebot 3m. hebdaw 3f. hebdi	hebdunt
<b>is</b> <i>below</i>	3f. adisti	

nam]

Sing.

Plur.

**nem** *except**of*

2.

nemoch

**o** *from*

1.

ohonaf, ohanaf,  
ohonof

ohonam, ohonom

2.

ohonat, ohonawt,  
ohonot

ohonawch

3m. ohonaw

3f. oheni, ohoni, ohonei,  
ohanei, oheneiohonu, ohonunt,  
ohenynt, onadu,  
onadunt**rac** *before*

1.

ragof

ragom, rogom

2.

ragot

ragawch, ragoch

3m. racdaw, rogdaw

3f. recdi, racdi, rocdi,  
rygthiracdu, racdunt,  
rocdunt**ro** *between*

1.

yrof —

yrom

2.

yrot —

yryoch, yroch —

3m. yrydaw }

3f. yrydi }

yrydunt

**rwng** *between*

1.

yrynghom

2.

ryngot

ryngoch

3m. ryngtaw, ryngthaw,  
ygrythaw

3f. ryngthi

ryngdunt, ryngtunt,  
ryngthunt, ryndynt

NOTE.—In O.W. there is also a 3 pl. *igridu* Lib. Land. XLIII, l. 9, and in poetry from *cyfrwng* a 3 pl. *cyfryngthud*.

**tan, dan**

1.

adanaf

ydanam

*under*

3m.

ydanaw, adantaw

adanunt, ydanunt,

3f.

deni, adanei

adanadunt

**tros** *over*

1.

trossof

trossom

2.

trossot

trossawch, trossoch

3m. trostaw }

3f. trosti }

trostud, trosdunt

Usually with initial *d*, *drossof* etc.

	Sing.	Plur
<b>trwy</b> <i>through</i>	1. trwydof 2. trwydot 3m. trwydaw } 3f. trwydi }	trwydunt
<b>uch</b> <i>above</i>	1. 3m. odyuchtaw } 3f. oduchti }	uchom
<b>wrth</b> <i>towards</i>	1. wrthyf 2. wrthyt 3m. wrthaw } 3f. wrthi }	wrthym wrthyach, wrthywch wrthu, wrthunt
<b>y</b> (O.W. di) <i>to</i>	1. im 2. itt 3m. idaw } 3f. idi }	in ywch udu, udud, udunt
<b>yn</b> <i>in</i>	1. ynof 2. ynot 3m. yndaw } 3f. yndi }	ynoch yndunt
<b>yr</b> <i>for</i>	1. yrof — 2. yrot — 3m. yrdaw	erom yroch — yrdunt, erdunt

cf. no, between.

54. The above forms may be strengthened by the addition of the simple or the conjunctive pronouns, e.g. **arnaf i, gennym ni, itti, ohonawch chwi, idaw ef, erni hi, udunt hwy; yrof inneu, attat titheu, gennwch chwitheu, ohonei hitheu, attunt wynteu.**

### 55. POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

1. <i>mine</i>	<b>meu</b>	<i>ours</i>	<b>einom, einym</b>
2. <i>thine</i>	<b>teu</b>	<i>yours</i>	<b>einwch, einywch</b>
3. <i>his</i>	<b>eidaw</b>	<i>theirs</i>	<b>eidud, eidunt</b>
<i>hers</i>	<b>eidi</b>		



56. They are used (a) alone, (b) preceded by the article, (c) preceded by a possessive adjective, (d) after a noun, which may be preceded by a possessive adjective. They may be strengthened by a following personal pronoun. The following examples will illustrate the usage:—

(a) *y sawl a uo* **meu** *all that are mine*; *ny bo* **teu** *dy benn* *may not thy head be thine*, *milwriaeth kymeint ac a oed* **eidunt** *all the valour that was theirs*, *y rei a oed* **eidaw ef** *those that were his*, *nyt yttoed y llew* **yn deu** *ytti the lion was not thine* Hg. I. 63, *nyt oes petrus genyf gaffel holl Freinc* **yn einym** *I have no doubt that we should get all France as ours* RB. II. 116.

(b) *neb un mor wedus cledyf ar y ystlys* **ar meu i** *none whose sword on his side is so becoming as mine*; *y mae* **y meu i** *y lle hwnn* *this place is mine*; *ath gedymdeithas yssyd adolwyn gennyf y gaffel. keffy, myn vyg cret, a dyro ditheu* **y teu**, “*and I would pray to have thy friendship.*” “*Thou shalt have it, by my faith, and give me thine;*” *deu parth vy oet a deu parth* **y teu ditheu** *two-thirds of my life and two-thirds of thine*; *dwc uendith Duw* **ar einym** *gennyf take with thee God's blessing and ours*; *ef a daw y dwyn yr einwch* *he will come to carry off your property*; *py darpar yw yr* **einywchi** *yna what preparation is that of yours there?* *nyt oed olwc degach* **nor eidi** *there was no aspect fairer than hers.*

(c) *pa vedwl yw* **dy teu ti** *what purpose is thine?* *mivi a dodaf vyg korff yn erbyn* **y eidaw** *I will set my body against his.*

(d) *ar dy drugeinuet* **or rei teu ditheu** *with sixty of your men* CM. 8; *o rei eidaw ef* *of his* LA.; *or petheu einym nynhev* *of our things* LA. 164; *dy ymadrawd teu di* *thy speech* Hg. II. 1.

## 57. POSSESSIVE ADJECTIVES.

	a	b	a	b
1. <i>my</i>	<b>vy, vyn</b> (before explosives)	'm	<i>our</i>	<b>an, yn</b>
2. <i>thy</i>	<b>dy</b>	'th	<i>your</i>	<b>ach, ych, awch</b>
3. <i>his</i>	<b>y</b>	'e, 'y	<i>their</i>	<b>eu, y</b>
<i>her</i>	<b>y</b>	'e, 'y		

## Remarks.

58. (a) The **b** forms occur in fusion with a preceding preposition or conjunction. Such forms in the 2 pl. seem to be comparatively rare, e.g. **ych** plith *in your midst* by **yn ych** plith LA., etc. **ach** rydit *and your freedom* RB. II. 189; more usually **yn awch** medyant chwi *in your power* RB. II. 50.

(b) With the prep. **y** in the third persons there is a variety of forms: **y, yw, eu, oe, oc eu**.

(c) The possessives may be strengthened by the addition of a simple or conjunctive pronoun after the noun.

59. Examples: (a) **vy arveu** *my arms*, **vy nyuot** (**dyvot**) *my coming*, **an meirch ninneu** *our horses*, **dy benn** *thy head*, **awch cledyveu** *your swords*, **y wreic ef** *his wife*, **y phenn** *her head*, **eu hieith** *their tongue*.

(b) **ym tat** *to my father*, **am arveu** *and my arms*, **yn porthi ni** *supporting us* (lit. *our supporting*), **ath teulu** *with thy household*, **ach rydit** *and your freedom*, **ydys ych gwahawd** *you are invited*, **ywch didanu** *to comfort you*, **och pechodeu** *from your sins*, **ae waet ynteu** *and his blood*, **y** (= **yw** WB.) **letty** *to his lodging* RB. 284, **ae ueirch yw y rei hynn** *and these are his horses* RB. 28, **oe chladu** *to bury her*, **y cheissaw** *to seek her*, **oe hanvod** *against her will*, **oe harveu** *from their arms*, **y kestyl** *to their fortresses*, **oe gwlatod** *to their countries*, **oc eu porthi** *to support them*.

NOTE.—Sometimes, as in Irish, the possessive seems to anticipate a following genitive, e.g. **yn y geissaw ynteu** *Peredur seeking for Peredur* WB. 140, **y hwyneb hitheu Riannon** *the face of Riannon* RB. 18, 27, **am y mýnwgyl** (without **y** RB. 117, 19) **y uorwýn** *about the neck of the maiden* WB. 475.

## SELF.

60. This is expressed by sg. **hun, hunan**, pl. **hun, hunein** added to personal pronouns or to possessive pronouns or adjectives, e.g. **my hun, myvy vy hun** *I myself*, **ohonaf vy hun** *by me myself*, **ym vy hunan** *to me myself*, **vym penn vy hun** *my own head*, **arnom ny hunein** *upon us ourselves*; **dy hun** *thou thyself*, **yth**

person **dy hunan** *in thy own person*; or **tat ehunan** *from the father himself*, **ny digawn ehunan** *he is not able himself*, **ef ae byrywawd ehun** *he cast himself*, **idaw ehun** *to himself*; **hi ehunan** *she herself*, **ohonei ehunan** *by her herself*; **wynt ehun** *they themselves*, **yr etholedigyon ehunein** *the elect themselves*, **yrydunt ehun** WB. 211 = **yryngtunt ehunein** RB. 272 *between themselves*, **yn eu cnawt ehun** *in their own flesh*, **yn eu rith ehunein** *into their own form*.

### DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

#### 61. **hwnn** *this*, **hwnnw** *that*.

Sing.	Plur.	Sing.	Plur.
M. <b>hwnn</b>	} <b>hynn</b>	<b>hwnnw</b>	} <b>hynny</b>
F. <b>honn</b>		<b>honno</b>	
N. <b>hynn</b>		<b>hynny</b>	

#### 62. These pronouns are used :—

(a) absolutely, e.g. **beth yw hwnn?** *heb y Peredur wrth y kyfrwy. kyfrwy yw, heb yr Owein* “*What is this?*” *said Peredur, with reference to the saddle. “It is a saddle,” said Owein*; **Peredur oed y enw, a ieuhaf oed hwnnw** *Peredur was his name and he was youngest*; **yna y kymmerth ynteu yr hutlath. camma di dros honn**, *heb ef then he took the magic wand. “Step over this,” said he*; **yn ol honno y kerdwys ef** *he went after her*; **a hyn a dywedaf ytti and this I will tell thee**; **mi a wnaef na chaffo ef viui vyth. pa ffurf yd hynny?** *heb y Pwyll “I will effect that he shall never get me.” “How will that be?” said Pwyll*; **yn ol hynny** *after that*.

(b) After a substantive preceded by the article, e.g. **ger llaw auon a elwit yn yr amser hwnnw** *Sabrina, yn yr amser hwnn y gelwir hitheu Hafren, beside a river that was called at that time Sabrina, at this time it is called Severn*; **yn yr ynys honn** *in this island*; **y nos honno** *that night*; **yr anniveileit hynn** *these animals*; **yr enweu hynny** *those names*. Similarly in the plural with **rei**, e.g. **pa ryw aniveileit yw y rei hynny?** *what kind of animals are those?*

2 sg. 3. Pref. Pron.  
(used adverbially?)

(c) Preceded by the article, e.g. dywet, heb y Gereint, py fford oreu inni gerdet or dwy hyn. Goreu itt gerdet hon, heb ef, ot ey **yr hon** issot ny deuy trachefyn vyth "*Tell," said Gereint, "which of these two roads is best to travel."* "*It is best for thee to travel by this one,*" said he; "*if thou travel by the lower one, thou wilt never come back.*" It may be followed by a genitive, e.g. Heuel ar doythyon . . . a ossodassant eu hemendyth **ar honn Kemry holl** *Howell and the wise men set their curse and that of all the Welsh* BCh. 1. In particular **yr hwnn**, etc., is frequently followed by a relative clause, e.g. bei dywetut ti y peth a ovynnaf ytti, minneu a dywedwn **yr hynn** a ovynny ditheu *if thou wouldst tell the thing that I desire of thee, I would tell that which thou desirest*; ef a vennyc fford itti ual y keffych **yr hynn** a geissy *he will show thee a road so that thou mayest obtain what thou seekest*; pwy bynnac . . . a dremyckont dysgu **yr hynn** a dylyynt y wneuthur *whoever despise learning what they ought to do*; Bryttaen oreu or ynyssed **yr hon** a elwit gynt y wen ynys *Britain, the best of the islands, which was formerly called the White Isle*; yr heul **yn yr hwnn** y mae tri pheth *the sun in which are three things*. In this usage the plural is **y rei**, e.g. gwaged oll eithyr **y rei** oed yn gwassanaethu *all the women except* **pl. of gweir-glawd**, *such as were serving*; **gweirglodyeu** . . . **yn y rei** y maent ffynhoneu **g. a meadow.** *glow eglur or rei* y kerdant ffrydeu *meadows in which are clear bright springs, from which issue streams*. This device for expressing an inflected relative is particularly common in the translation literature.

#### ARTICLE + SUBSTANTIVE + ADVERB.

63. Some adverbs have a demonstrative force along with a substantive preceded by the article, e.g. deu ychen, y lleill yssyd **or parth hwnt** yr mynyd ar llall **or parth yma** *two oxen, one of them is on yonder side of the mountain, the other on this side*; beth yw **y rei racko?** *what are those yonder?* att **y vorwyn** draw to the maiden yonder.

## INDEFINITE PRONOUNS AND ADJECTIVES.

64. **neb** (= Ir. *nech*) *some one* is used :—

(a) Substantivally, e.g. *a weleist di neb hast thou seen any one?*  
*nyt adwaeney neb efo no one recognised him.*

(b) With the article before a relative clause, e.g. *ediuar uyd yr neb ae wnaeth whoever has done it will repent it*; *ny chigleu i dim or neb a ouynnwch chwi I have heard nothing of him of whom you ask* RB. 129.

(c) Adjectivally, e.g. *gwell yw dedyf Cristonogaeth no neb dedyf or byt the law of Christendom is better than any law in the world.*

65. **pawb** (= Ir. *cāch*) *every one* is used substantivally, e.g. *sef a orugant pawb or teulu that is what each one of the household did*; *Peredur a rodes y bawp gystal ae gilyd Peredur gave to every one as much as to the other.*

66. **pob** (the unaccented form of **pawb**, = Ir. *cach*, *cech*) is used adjectivally, e.g. *pob peth every thing*. **Pob** is also used with **un** *one*, e.g. *pob un onadunt every one of them*; the plural is **pob rei**, e.g. *a phob rei ohonunt o bop parth a gladassant y rei meirw and both sides buried the dead* RB. II. 30.

67. **oll** *all*, e.g. *y deulu oll all his household*; *gwaged oll all the women*; *cewri ynt oll they are all giants*. Before a noun is found **holl**, e.g. *yr holl gwn all the dogs*. In composition with numerals there appear **ell**, **ill**, **yll** e.g. *ell deu, ill deu, yll deu both*; *ell pedwar, yll pedwar all four*.

NOTE.—A compound **hollre** is found, e.g. *ý rolre seint all the saints* BB. 36<sup>a</sup>, *yn holre oludoed in all manner of wealth* LA. 165, *hollre genedyi anifeileit every kind of animals* LA. 166.

68. **arall** *another*, pl. **ereill**, is used :—

(a) Substantivally, e.g. *kymer ef a dyro y arall take it and give it to another*; *da arall the goods of another*; *penneu rei a dygynt, llygeit ereill, a chlusteu ereill, a breicheu ereill they took away the heads of some, the eyes of others, and the ears of others, and the arms of others.*

(b) Adjectivally, e.g. *marchawc arall another horseman*; *y*

**gymeint arall** *as much again*; **arveu gwell nor rei ereill** *arms better than the others.*

**69. neill** *one of two*, e.g. **y neill** or **llewot** *one of the two lions*; **y gwydyat vot yndaw y neill** *ae gwr ae gwreic he knew that there was in it either a man or a woman* Hg. I. 54; **ar y neill law y gwr oed Peredur yn eisted** *Peredur was seated on one hand of the man*; **pob un ar neilltu** *each one separately.*

**70. y llall** *the other*, pl. **y lleill**, e.g. **y kymmerth Peredur hanner y bwyd idaw ehun ac adaw y llall yr vorwyn** *Peredur took half of the food to himself and left the other to the maiden*; **ar vn y bydei borth ef idaw a gollei y gware, ar llall a dodei awr** *and the one whom he was helping lost the game, and the other raised a shout*; **paham na chadarnnhawyt y lleill** *velle why were not the others thus strengthened?* LA. 8; **cwyp y lleill** *the fall of the others* LA. 8; **y daw y llall** *his other son-in-law*, **an brodyr y lleill** *our other brethren* LA.

**71. y neill, y lleill, —y llall** *the one—the other*, e.g. **y neill ohonunt yn was gwineu ar llall yn was melyn** *one of them an auburn lad, the other a yellow lad*; **yn y orffeï y lleill ar y llall** *till the one overcame the other.* With a substantive **arall** is used in place of **llall**, e.g. **or neill tu—or tu arall** *on the one side—on the other side.*

**72. y gilyd** is used for *the other* in expressions like:—**dyrnodeu calet a rodei bawp onadunt y gilyd** *each of them gave hard buffets to the other*; **yn un or teir person noe gilyd** *in one of the three persons than in another*; **or mor pwy gilyd** *from sea to sea*; **corph ni glivit pa leueir y gilit** *body, who hearest not what thy fellow says* BB. 10<sup>b</sup>.

NOTE.—**y gilyd** (= Ir. a chéle) means literally *his fellow*, but, as in Irish, the phrase has become petrified in this form, and is used without respect to gender, number, or person.

#### SUBSTANTIVES IN A PRONOMINAL FUNCTION.

**73. dim** *thing*, e.g. **kymer gret y mackwy na dywetto dim** or a **welas yman** *pledge the youth that he will not tell aught of what he has seen here*; **heb allel gwneuthur dim lles** *without being able to do any good.*

74. **peth** m. *thing*, e.g. **kymmer dy varch nu a pheth oth arueu** *take thou thy horse then and some of thy arms*; **onyt ef a wyr peth or hynn** *unless he knows something of this*.

75. **rei**, e.g. **rei onadunt** *some of them*, **rei drut rei mut** *some bold, some dumb* FB. 164, cf. § 62 (c).

76. **ryw** m. *kind*, e.g. **pa ryw chwedleu yssyd gennynt** *what kind of news hast thou?* **na allei neb ryw dyn** *marwawl datkanu so that no mortal man could proclaim*; **ymlad ar ryw dyn hwnnw** *to fight such a man as that* RB. II. 182; **gwelet y ryw gatwent honno** *to see such a fight as that* ib. 58; **drwy y ryw edewidyon twyllodrus hynny** *through such false promises as those* ib. 104. Similarly **cyvryw**, e.g. **yr kyfryw wr hwnnw** *to a man of such a kind* ib. 65.

*addewid f.*

NOTE.—Observe that in expressions like **y ryw dyn hwnnw** the pronoun is attracted in gender and number to the noun preceding. Cf. the similar attraction with **sawl** below.

77. **sawl** f. *multitude* and **meint** *greatness*, e.g. **yr sawl a di-hagassei** *oe wyr yn yw* *to those of his men who had escaped alive*; **yr honn** (sc. **breich**) **a ladawd y sawl gewri** *which slew so many giants*; **by sawl nef ysyd** *how many heavens are there?* **y sawl nifer hwnnw** *such a number as that* RB. II. 139; **y ssawl vlwynyded hynny** *so many years as that* ib. 44; **colli y meint gwyr** *a oed idaw to lose all the men that he had* ib. 46; **blyghau a oruc Goronilla rac meint** *oed o varchogyon gyt ae that Goronilla became angry because there were so many soldiers with her father* ib. 66; **ymerbynyeit ar ueint allu hwnnw** *to encounter such a force as that* ib. 348; **yn y veint perigyl honno** *in so great danger as that* ib. 160; **y veint uudugolyaetheu hynny** *such great victories as that* ib. 199.

78. **un** *one*, e.g. **either bot yn prudach pryt Gwydyon noc un y gwas** *except that the aspect of Gwydyon was graver than that of the lad*.

#### INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS.

79. **pw y** *who, what*, used substantively, e.g. **pw ywyt** *who art thou?* **y bwy y rodit** *(they discussed) to whom it should be given*

RB. 258; dywet **pwý** a uu yma *tell who was here*; govyn **pwý** yw eu *tystyon to ask who are their witnesses*; **pwý** yw dy enw di *what is thy name?* LA. 128; **pwý** well genhýt *which dost thou prefer?* WB. 487; dayar **pwý** y llet neu **pwý** y thewhet *the earth, what is its breadth or what its thickness?* FB. 133; **pwý** kynt ae tywyll ae goleuat *what was first, darkness or light?* FB. 301. In the sense of *what thing?* is used **pa beth**, **py beth**, commonly abbreviated to **peth**, **beth**, e.g. **peth** yw y rei racko *what are those yonder?* *ay. tyst.*  
*aych. 293 pres subj.*, a wdost ti **peth** wyt pan vych yn kyscwyt *knowest thou what thou art when thou art asleep?* FB. 145; a gofyn idaw **beth** a wnaei a phwy oed *and asked him what he was doing and who he was.*

NOTE.—The use of **pwý** before a noun is exceptional, **pwý** ýstýr WB. 454, 456 = **pa ystyr** RB. 101 = **py ystyr** 103.

80. **pa**, **py** *what?* adjectivally, e.g. **pa drwc** digoneis inheu ytti *what evil have I done to thee?* **py drwc** yw hynny *what evil is that?* This interrogative enters into various phrases, e.g. **pa le**, **py le** (also **ble**) *where?* **pa veint**, **py veint** *how great?* **pa ryw**, **py ryw** *of what kind?* **pa sawl** *how many?* **Pa** and **py** are also found with the addition of **un**, pl. **rei**, e.g. **pa un** wyt titheu *who art thou?* ef a ovynnawd udunt **pa rei** oedynt *he asked them who they were.*

NOTE 1.—**Pa** and **py** seem to be used without distinction of meaning. In the Mabinogion when the Red Book has **pa** the White Book has very frequently **py**.

NOTE 2.—In the earlier literature **pa** and **py** are found also without a noun, e.g. **pa** roteiste oth olud *what hast thou given of thy wealth?* BB. 10<sup>b</sup>; **pa** wnaí *what shall I do?* FB. 282; hyt na wydat or byt **pa** wnaei (= **py** wnaei WB. p. 212) *so that she did not know at all what she should do* RB. 273; **py** holy di y mi *what seekest thou of me?* RB. 128, cf. further FB. 127, 145, 216, MA. 189<sup>b</sup>. Cf. also **pa** daruu y Garadawc *what has been the fate of Caradawc?* RB. 41, so 59, 287 (= **pý** WB. p. 221), **py** derw itti 176; pathawr (= **pa**-th-dawr) *what does it matter to thee?* WB. 430 = **pythawr** p. 215; Duw reen **py** bereist lyvwr Lord God, *why hast Thou made a coward?* FB. 251; **py** liuy di *why dost thou colour?* RB. 102.

NOTE 3.—**Pa** and **py** are followed by a preposition in **pahar** *for what?* e.g. **pahar** e roet *for what it was given* BCl. 30; **paham**, **pa rac**, **py rac** and **pyr** (= **py yr**) *why?* e.g. **pýr** (= **pý rac** RB. 126) ý kýuerchý dý *why dost thou call?* WB. 486.

NOTE 4.—**pa diw**, **py diw**. The following occurrences of this may be noted:—Quid (i. **pa diw**, lit. *for what*) tibi Pasiphae pretiosas sumere vestes? Ox. 41<sup>a</sup>. Cunctis genitoris gloria uestri laudetur celsi thronus est cui

394 Pres. Subj. of  
 dan-fod, to happen,  
 come to pass.

cyb-arch.

peri.  
 llwfr



*regia caeli*, where *est cui regia caeli* is translated literally and unidiomatically by *issit padiu itau gulat* Iuv. 39<sup>b</sup>. Gwynn y uyt **py diw** y rodir kerennyd Duf a hoedyl hir *blessed is he to whom is given the friendship of God and long life* FB. 308. (If a man gives a thing, and a dispute arises between two men as to *to which of them* it has been given, the word of the donor shall decide) **pa dyu** y rodes *to whom he gave it* BCh. 31. **pa diw** y damweinei y uudugolyaeth *to which the victory should fall* RB. II. 57 (so with **y to, y by diw** y damweinhei y uudugolyaeth onadunt 162, cf. CM. 32). **pa diw bynnac** y mynmynt hwy y rodi hi *to whomsoever they desired to give it* RB. II. 24, cf. further 181, 185. Here the use of **yd**, not **a** (§ 84), indicates that **diw** is a prepositional phrase (= *to him, to it?*).

81. **pw** **bynnac**, **pa**, **py**—**bynnac**, **pa** **beth bynnac**, **peth bynnac**. The addition of **pynhac** or **pynnac** gives the sense of *whosoever, whatsoever*, e.g. **pw bynnac** ae kaffei *whoever should take it*; **pa dyn** pwyllauc **benac** a ladho enuyt *whatever sane man shall slay an idiot*; **pa le bynnac** y gwelwn vwyt *wherever I saw food*; **py fford bynnac** y ffoynt *whatever way they fled*; **peth bynnac** a dywettei Peredur *whatever Peredur said*.

#### RELATIVE PRONOUNS.

82. In Welsh there is no inflected relative. In clauses which according to the Welsh idiom are relative, relativity is expressed by the relative particle **a** when the clause is positive, by the negative **ny** (cf. § 21 note) when the clause is negative, e.g. pechodeu **a** gyffesser ac **ny** wneler yr eilweith *sins that are confessed and that are not committed a second time*. Before the details of relative usage are considered, there are several general points to be noted.

83. (a) The relative **a** is not used :—

(a) Before the relative form **yssyd**, **syd** *who is, which is*, e.g. nifer a uu ac a uyd uch nef is nef meint **yssyd** *the multitude that has been and that will be, above heaven, below heaven, all that there are* FB. 114.

(β) Before the verb **pieu** (§ 161), e.g. Efracw iarll bioed iarllaeth yn y gogledd *Efracw the earl had an earldom in the north*.

(γ) Regularly in the earlier Welsh, and usually throughout the Mid.W. period before the verbal particle **ry**, e.g. mi **ryth gereis** *I have loved thee*.

*pres subj. pass.*

(δ) Before the copula when preceded by the predicate (§ 159), e.g. **llawen uu** *he was glad*; **pwyt wyt** *who art thou?* (but **pwyt a uu** *yma who was here?*)

(b) (α) In Mid.W. prose **a** is frequently absent before **oed** *was*, e.g. **Arthur oed** *yg Kaerllion Arthur was in Caerllion*. In the Mabinogion the White Book has often **a oed** when the Red Book has **oed**, cf. WB. 227, 229, 250, 453, with RB. 101, 165, 166, 183.

(β) In early poetry **a** is very often omitted, e.g. **Duu vet** (= **Duw a ved**) *God rules* BB. 15<sup>a</sup> by **Duw a wet** 13<sup>a</sup>. The details have still to be investigated.

84. In certain constructions the preverbal particle **yd** (= Mod.W. **yr**) seems to enter into concurrence with relative **a**, and in Mod.W. grammars **yr** is given along with **a** as a relative particle. This, however, comes from reading English syntax into Welsh; historically, the use of **yd**, **yr** points to a non-relative construction. In the Celtic languages the rules for the use of the relative are peculiar. In particular it should be noted that in Welsh an adverbial or prepositional phrase is not as such followed by the relative construction, e.g. **mwylhaf** *oe vrodyr y karei* *Lud y Llewelys Llad loved Llewelys more than any of his other brothers*; **pan uei mwylhaf yd ymgerynt** *when they most loved one another*; **bit chwero y talhaur** *in y diwet bitterly will it be paid for in the end*; **mi a brynaf dy gerennyd. pa delw, heb ynteu, y pryny** *di "I will buy thy friendship." "In what way," said he, "wilt thou buy it?"* **lle y gwelych eglwys** *wherever thou seest a church*; **or lle yd oed** *from the place where he was*; **yn y rei y maent ffynhoneu** *in which there are fountains*; **ar hynny att y kwn y doeth** *ef thereafter he came to the hounds*. With the first instance may be contrasted expressions like **y wreic wylhaf a garei** *the woman whom he most loved*, where without **mwylhaf** the clause would be relative, **y wreic a garei** *the woman whom he loved*; similarly **gwreica da it a wedei** *to wed would suit thee well* WB. 453.

85. In the Celtic sentence the verb normally comes first, e.g. **y kymertth y marchawc y march** *the horseman took the horse*. In Irish, when part of the sentence is to be emphasised it is brought

forward by means of the copula, e.g. **is ē beres** *it is he who carries*; sometimes the copula is omitted. In Welsh a part of the sentence is emphasised in the same way; the copula form, however, is regularly omitted. Thus in the example given above, if the subject were to be emphasised, the sentence would run: **y marchawc** a gymerth y march; if the object, **y march** a gymerth y marchawc. In accordance with the preceding paragraph, if the subject or object be thus brought forward, the following clause will be relative in form, but not if an adverbial or prepositional phrase be brought forward, e.g. **mw y karei** *he loved more*; **attunt yd aeth** *he went to them*.

NOTE.—In the development of Welsh **yd** tends to spread at the expense of **a**.

### The Expression of Case in the Relative.

86. In the relation of subject or object of a following verb, in positive clauses **a** is used (except in so far as it must or may be omitted, § 83), in negative clauses **ny**, e.g. **y gwr a doeth** *the man who came*; **y vorwyn a weleist** *the maiden whom thou hast seen*; **y wreic yssyd yno** *the woman who is there*; **meibon ny ellynt ymlad** *boys who could not fight*.

87. In connection with the use of **a**, **ny**, the following points call for special notice:—

(**a**) **or a** (Mod.W. **ar a**), neg. **or ny**, **ar ny**, lit. *of that which* (or *which not*), *of what* (or *what not*), e.g. **pawb or a oed yno** *everyone who was there* (lit. *of that which was there*); **or a welsei o helgwn ny welsei cwn unlliw ac wynt** *of all the hounds that he had seen he had never seen hounds of the same colour as they*; **pob peth or ny damweinassant eiroet** *everything that has never happened* LA. 33; **ny oes neb or ath welei ar nyth garei** *no one who saw thee would not love thee*; **pob peth or a uu ac yssyd ac a vyd** *everything that was and is and will be* (where rel. **a** is regularly omitted before **yssyd**); **llawer or yssyd da** *many who are good*. In the above examples the relative **a** appears in positive clauses. But after **or** = *of that by which*, etc., in accordance with § 84, **yd** is used, e.g. **gorchymynneu**

Duw a wneynt o bop fford **or y gellynt** *they did God's commandments in every way in which they could* LA. 119; ffo . . a oruc Pandrassus a gwyr Groec y gyt ac ef y bob mann **or y tebyckynt** *caffel dianc Pandrassus with the Greeks fled to every place from which they thought to find escape* RB. II. 44. In sentences like: paup **or y rodho** y brenhyn ofrum idaw *everyone to whom the king gives a present*, or ba hustying bynnac . . . **or y kyfarffo** y gwynt ag ef *every whisper that the wind meets* RB. 60, the use of **yd** is due to the form of the relative clause (§ 89).

NOTE.—As Zimmer has shewn, CZ. II. 86 sq. **or**, **ar** is made up of the preposition **o**, **a** + the article **yr**. Similarly **yr** = **y** to + **yr**: ef a dely medhecynyat rad **yr a uo** en e llys *he is obliged to give free medical attendance to such as are in the palace* BCh. 18.

(b) Without an antecedent **a**, neg. **ny**, is used in the sense of *what* as the subject or the object of a sentence, in a genitive relation, and after a preposition, e.g. **a gahat** o uedic da *what was got of good physicians*; mi a wnaŷ **yssyd** waeth it *I shall do what is worse for thee*; ŷs tir (= dir) nithiau **ny bo** pur *it is necessary to sift what is not pure* BB. 42<sup>b</sup>; y kym<sup>er</sup>th yntev gwrogaeth **a oed** yno onadunt *he received the homage of such of them as were there* RB. 267; **yr a welsynt** o vwynt *on account of what they had seen of food*; **or a glywyssynt** o gerd *of what they had heard of song*; mi a vydaf wrth **a dywedeisti** *I shall follow thy advice*; hyt na cheffwch byth werth un geinawc **oc yssyd** yn y dref *so that you shall never get a pennyworth of what is in the town* Hg. II. 169. In a sentence like: sef a oruc Scuthyn yn llaŷen gŷneuthur **yr oedit yn y erchi** idaw *Scuthyn did gladly what was asked of him* LA. 111, the form of the relative sentence does not admit of **a** (§ 88).

88. The genitive relation *whose*, *of which*, is expressed with the help of the possessive adjective before the noun on which in English the *whose* would depend. In Welsh, if the noun following the possessive be not under the government of a preposition the clause is relative, if it be under the government of a preposition the clause is non-relative, e.g. (a) Teithi Hen **a** oresgynnwys mor **y kyuoeth** *Teithi Hen whose kingdom the sea submerged* RB. 108; peth arall **ny** ellych byth **y gaffel** *another thing that thou wilt never be able to get*;

v. § 145.

cywryd

meddyg  
-on, n.

(b) y gur **y** buost neithwyr **yn y dy** *the man in whose house thou wert last night*; y gwr **y** buost **yn y geissaw** *the man whom thou hast been seeking.*

NOTE.—In: yr hynn a odologyssynt ac a yttoedynt **yn y damunaw** *that which they craved and were desiring* RB. II. 34, **a** is used where the above rule would require **yd**. In MA. 267<sup>a</sup> occurs: gwr am dotyw gwall oe golli *a man from whose destruction loss has come to me*. Further exceptions seem to be very rare; I have noted: amperffeith yw caru y peth **y** galler **y gassau** *it is imperfect to love the thing that may be hated* LA. 86; wrth na bu yn dyn **y** bei arnaf i **y ofyn** *because there was no living man the fear of whom was on me* CM. 30.

89. Where in English the relative is preceded by a preposition (*to whom*, etc.) in Welsh the relation is expressed by a preposition + personal pronoun, and the clause is non-relative, e.g. hyný elých yr koet ý dodhwýt **trwýdaw** *till thou goest to the wood through which thou hast come* WB. 228; yno y byd eneidew ry darffo **udunt** penydyaw *there are souls that have finished penance* (lit. *to whom penance is past*) LA. 129.

NOTE 1.—In the inverted sentence (§ 85) Madawc uab Maredud a oed idaw Powys *Madawg son of Maredudd had Powys* RB. 144, the clause is expressed relatively. Similarly in another special type of sentence: Achelarwy a uu lawen **gantaw** *Achilles was pleased* RB. II. 31, cf. RB. II. 189-20, RB. I. 94-5. In the translation literature a number of exceptions occur:—y rei a uo ragor **arnunt** *those on whom there is pre-eminence* LA. 32, cf. 130-27, 131-2, 135-8, 149-17, all in sentences of the same type; y rei hynny a ry daroed (= earlier W. rydaroed) **udunt** gwrthlad Maxen *those who had succeeded in expelling Maxen* RB. II. 111; mein a ellit gwneuthur gweith **onadunt** stones *from which building could be made* RB. II. 167; gwr...a wedo idaw *a man to whom it is fitting* CM. 77.

NOTE 2.—The following is an exceptional construction:—gwelet y bed a vynnei **trw y kaffei** (= **trw ýt gaffei** WB. 453) *gwreicka he wished to see the grave through which he might be able to marry* RB. 101; na chadarnhao dyn kelwyd trwy twng **trwy y colletto** y gymodawc *that a man shall not confirm a falsehood by an oath through which he may ruin his neighbour* LA. 143; **trwy y bei** *through which there should be* LA. 144.

## SUBSTITUTES FOR THE RELATIVE.

90. Particularly in the translation literature there are various devices for getting an equivalent of the relative admitting of a casual construction. Such are **yr hwnn**, pl. **y rei** (§ 62c), **y neb** (§ 64b), **y sawl** (§ 77).

## THE VERB.

## PREVERBAL PARTICLES.

The Particle *yd*.

91. In Mid.W. prose this particle usually appears as **yd** (i.e. **yd̄**) before a vowel or **h**, as **y** before other consonants. But by the side of **yd** there is found from the fourteenth century **yr**, which in Mod.W. has completely superseded **yd**.

NOTE 1.—Occasionally **y** appears before **h**, e.g. **y hanoed** RB. II. 109, **y hanoed** LA.

NOTE 2.—In RB. **yt** with lenation appears before a consonant in **yt gweirwyt** (from **cyweirwyt**) 120. In the WB. version of the Kulhwch story **yt** (i.e. **yd**) is more frequent: **ýt gaffei**, **ýt gaffo** 453, **ýt uo** 458, **ýt wertheý** 470, **ýt vȳd** 471, **ýt uerwit** 478. In BB. **yt** (= **yd̄**) is regular before vowels: **it oet** 10<sup>b</sup>, **it aethant** 11<sup>a</sup>, **it imne** 15<sup>b</sup>, **it elher** 17<sup>a</sup>, **ýt hoet** 22<sup>b</sup>, 23<sup>a</sup>, **it adcorssant** 23<sup>b</sup>, **it vif** 25<sup>b</sup>, **it arwet** 51<sup>a</sup>, **it aw** 51<sup>b</sup>; it is written **id** twice in **id aeth** 49<sup>a</sup> marg. Before consonants there appears both **y** and **yd** (= **ýt** of WB.); the latter lenates, though the change is not always expressed. Before **g**, **t**, **d**, **ff**, **s**, **m**, **n**, **ý** only appears: **ý godriccawr** 51<sup>a</sup>; **ý tirran** 1<sup>b</sup>, **ý talhaur** 16<sup>a</sup>, **ý teren** 32<sup>a</sup>, **ý tragho** 35<sup>b</sup>; **ý deuthan** 1<sup>b</sup>, **ý daeth**, **ý doethan** 2<sup>a</sup>, **ý doethan** 2<sup>b</sup>, **ý darparan** 3<sup>a</sup>, **ý dýlanuan**, **ý daruuan** 3<sup>b</sup>, **ý diadaud** 10<sup>b</sup>, **ý dinwassute** 11<sup>b</sup>, **ý deuth**, **ý del** 21<sup>a</sup>, **ý doeth** 22<sup>b</sup>, **ý deuthant** 23<sup>b</sup>, **ý deuant** 25<sup>a</sup>, **ý dav** 32<sup>a</sup>, **ý dinwassune** 44<sup>a</sup>, **ý duc** 44<sup>b</sup>, **ý diwedi** 51<sup>b</sup>, **ý dodir** 53<sup>b</sup>; **ý ffoes** 22<sup>b</sup>; **ý sirthei** 50<sup>a</sup>; **ý mae** 13<sup>b</sup>, 32<sup>a</sup>, 34<sup>a</sup>, 34<sup>b</sup>, 35<sup>a</sup>, 41<sup>b</sup>; **ý nottvȳ** 38<sup>b</sup>. Before **p** and **r** **yd** only: **id pridaw** 21<sup>a</sup>, **yd portheise** 27<sup>a</sup>; **ýd rotir** 23<sup>b</sup>. Before other consonants the usage varies,—**c**: **ý kuýnan** (infixd pron.?) 2<sup>a</sup>, **ý kisceisse** 25<sup>a</sup>, **ý keweis** (infixd pron.?) 43<sup>b</sup>, but **id gan** 8<sup>a</sup>, **id keiff** 43<sup>a</sup>, **id cuitin** 48<sup>a</sup>, **ýd gan** 54<sup>a</sup>. **gw**: **ý gvna** 34<sup>b</sup>, **ý gweleise** 36<sup>a</sup>, 36<sup>b</sup>, **ý guýstluý** 38<sup>a</sup>, **ý guiscav** 41<sup>b</sup>, but **id woriv** 9<sup>a</sup>, **ýd welese** 27<sup>a</sup>, **ýd vna** 32<sup>a</sup>. **b**: **ý bu** 33<sup>b</sup>, **ý bit** 28<sup>a</sup>, but **ýd vei** 34<sup>b</sup>, **ýd vo**, **ýd vit** 42<sup>a</sup>, **ýd uit** 44<sup>b</sup>. **ll**: **ý llas** 36<sup>b</sup>, **ý lleinw** 51<sup>a</sup>, but **id lathennawr** 26<sup>a</sup>, **id lathei** 48<sup>b</sup>. In the O.W. glosses it only appears: **it dagatte** Mart. Cap. 4<sup>b</sup>, **it darnesti** Iuv. p. 88. From all this it may be inferred that there was a period in Welsh when the particle was **yd̄** before vowels, **yd** with lenation before consonants. As to the origin of non-lenating **y**, it is probable that it started from verbs beginning with **d**. As **adyn** *wretch* comes from \***ad-d̄yn**, so, e.g. \***yd d̄uc** would give \***yd uc**. From association with the other forms of the verb this would naturally come to be regarded as **y duc**, and hence, probably with the help of **y** containing an infixd pronoun (§ 50<sup>b</sup>), **y** might spread as the general form before consonants. As to the later **yr**: **y** for **yd**: **y**, it is probably due to the influence of the forms of the article **yr**: **y**.

NOTE 3.—In **ac yr gyscwys** RB. 28, **ual yr lygryssit** RB. 54, **ual yr notayssynt** CM. 57, **yr = y ry**, cf. § 93 note 4.

Usage of *yd*.

92. In normal Mid.W. prose the particle **yd**, which has no appreciable meaning, is, with certain exceptions, used regularly before indicatives and subjunctives, e.g. **yd af** yn egyl gyt ac wynt *I will go as angel along with them*; **y deuei** y kythreul *the devil used to come*; ac yno **y gwelas** ef pedeir gwraged *and there he saw four women*; yn y lle **y gwelsei** Gynon *in the place where he had seen Cynon*; lle **y gwelych** eglwys *wherever thou seest a church*; **val y gwelas** y gwr Peredur yn dyuot *as the man saw Peredur coming*; megys **y mynnei** ehun *as he himself desired*; hyt **y buant** *as long as they were*.

93. But it is not used:—

(a) at the beginning of a clause before a subjunctive of wish or command, e.g. **diwyccom-ne** a digonhom o gamuet *may we make atonement for the iniquity which we have done* BB. 15<sup>b</sup>; **hanpych** gwell hail! dos titheu ar Arthur . . . ac **erchych** hynnŷ idaw *go thou to Arthur and ask that of him* WB. 454; Agamemnon . . . a dwawt . . . **gossottynt** hwy y neb a vynnŷnt yn y le ef Agamemnon *said they should set whomsoever they pleased in his place* RB. II. 24.

1 pl. pres. subj.

?

§ 140.

NOTE 1.—Contrast **yng ngoleu addef nef yt nodder** *in the light of the heavenly home may he be protected* MA. 174<sup>a</sup>.

(b) When the verb is repeated in answers, e.g. **a bery di? paraf** *wilt thou effect? I will*.

(c) In such instances as the following:—Bei dywedut ti y mi y peth a ovynnaf ytti, minneu a dywedwn y titheu yr hwnn a ovynny ditheu. **Dywedaf** yn llawen, heb yr Owein “*if thou wouldst tell me what I ask of thee, I would tell thee what thou askest.*” “*I will tell gladly,*” says Owein; ath gedymdeithas yssyd adolwyn gennyf y gaffel. **Keffy** myn vyg cret “*and I pray to obtain thy friendship.*” “*Thou shalt obtain it by my faith,*” ac yna y dywawt Peredur: **diolechaf** ynneu y **Duw na** thorreis vy llw *and then Peredur said: “I give thanks to God that I have not broken my oath”* (cf. the use of **na** § 237 c).

93 pres. subj.  
} han - foot,  
§ 160.



(d) When the predicate precedes the copula, e.g. **llawen vuant** *they were glad*.

NOTE 2.—But with verbs of naming **yd** with an infixed pronoun is used when the predicate precedes, e.g. **Peredur ym gelwir** *I am called Peredur*.

(e) After a negative, e.g. **ny welas** *he did not see*; **pony wdost** *dost thou not know?*

(f) In relative construction, e.g. **ef a doeth** *he came*.

(g) After the interrogative **a**, e.g. **a wely di** *dost thou see?*

(h) After the particle **neut**, e.g. **neud ynt** *geith now they are slaves* MA. 157<sup>b</sup>.

(i) After **mad** *well*, e.g. **mad devthoste** *happily didst thou come*, BB. 44<sup>a</sup>, unless there be an infixed pronoun, e.g. **mat yth anet** *happily wert thou born* FB. 101.

(k) After **moch** *soon* (= Ir. *mos*), e.g. **moch guelher** *soon wilt be seen* BB. 1<sup>b</sup>.

(l) After certain conjunctions, e.g. **can buost** *since thou hast been*; **kwt gaffei** *where he should get* WB. 453; **cyn gwnel** *though he does*; **kyt dywetto** *though he should say*; **o gwely** *if thou seest*; **pan welsant** *when they saw*; **pei kaffwn** *if I should get*; **tra vych** *while thou art*; **yny digwyd** *till he falls*. But it is used with an infixed pronoun after **pan**, e.g. **yr pan yth weleis** *since I saw thee*; so after **tra** (but cf. § 49<sup>b</sup>), e.g. **hyt tra yn dygyrcher** *so long as we are visited* RB. 105.

NOTE 3.—After **gwedy** after the usage is not very clear. Before a following vowel, we have on the one hand **gwedy ed eystedont** *after they sit* BCh. 53, **gwedy yd elont** *after they go* Hg. I. 11, **gwedy yd elom** *after we go* Hg. II. 146, on the other hand **gwedy aruerych** *after thou dost practise* LA. 90. Before a following consonant, in BCh. **gwedy y** (e.g. **gwedy e kafo** *after he gets* 34) is more common than **gwedy** (e.g. **gwedy roder** *after she is given* 130); in BB. is found **wide kŷwisscaran** (leg. **kŷwisscarun**) *after we separate* 12<sup>b</sup>; **gwŷdi darffo** *after it is over* 4<sup>b</sup>; in Mid.W. prose **gwedy** is much more common than **gwedy y**, but it is a question how far **gwedy** comes after fusion from **gwedy y**. It is to be noted that infixing **a-** (§ 94) is found after **gwedy** as well as after the conjunctions which are not followed by **yd**; this would seem to suggest that the use of **yd** after **gwedy** was not original, but there is need for further investigation based on fuller material.

NOTE 4.—In Mid.W. prose **yd** is sometimes found before **ry**, even when there is no infixed pronoun, e.g. **fford y rŷ** *[d]uost the way by which thou hast come* WB. 138; **ym pob gwlat or y rŷfuum** *in every country in which I have been* ib. 144; **y ry dugassei** *he had brought* RB. II. 139; **megys y ry ynathoed** *as he had done* ib. 161. Cf. the instances of **yr** § 91 n. 3.



94. In later Mid.W. the use of **yd** is more extensive than at an earlier period. In the archaic prose of the story of *Kulhwch and Olwen* it is often wanting in the White Book version where it is present in the Red Book, and in the earlier poetry it is rarer still; the conditions of the earlier usage have still to be investigated. It may be noted that in earlier Welsh, when **yd** is not syntactically permissible, **a-** is used to infix a pronoun, e.g. **a-m bo** *may there be to me* BB. 17<sup>b</sup>; **ath uendiguiste** *he has blessed thee* 18<sup>a</sup>; **as attebwys** *answered them* FB. 139; **as redwn** (leg. *rodwn*) *we will give it* WB. 475. In prose this usage survives after some conjunctions, e.g. **gwedy an gwelwch** *after ye see us* Hg. II. 1; **gwedy as cladawch hi** *after ye bury her* LA. 81; **pei as rodei** *if he gave it* RB. 136. This **a** tends to become **y** under the influence of the infixed pronoun after **yd** (**y-m**, etc.), e.g. **ys po** *may there be to him* BB. 53<sup>b</sup>; **bei yscuypun** *if I had known it* BB. 41<sup>a</sup>; **bei ys gattei** *if it had permitted it* WB. 424 = **pei as gattei** RB. 274; **kyt ym lladho** *though he slay me* RB. 280 = **kyt am llatho** Peniarth MS. 4. With fusion, e.g. **peis mynnynt** *if they desired it* LA. 69.

### THE PARTICLE **ry**.

95. The particle **ry**, which corresponds etymologically to the Ir. verbal particle **ro-**, and resembles it in its uses, is in Welsh a disappearing particle; it is much less frequent in Mid.W. prose than in the early poetry.

NOTE.—**Ry** is sometimes reduced to **r**, e.g. **nŷr darffo** WB. 230 = **ny darffo** RB. 168; **nar geueis** *that I did not get* Hg. II. 265; **ar ethynt** (v.l. **a ethynt**) *that have passed* RB. II. 205; **ar doethoed** (= **a dathoed** RB. 197) *who had come* WB. 62; **wedyr vligaw** (= **wedy y vlingaw** Hg. II. 112) *after his slaying* CM. 102. From **neu + ry** has come the common Mid.W. **neur**, cf. **neur dialawd** (= **neu rŷ dialawd** WB. 404) *he has avenged* RB. 259; **neur daroed** (= **neu rŷ daroed** WB. 402) *it was over* RB. 258. For **yr** = **y ry** see § 91 n. 3.

96. In Mid.W. prose **ry** is used :—

A. With the indicative.

(a) Optionally with the perfect (as distinguished from the preterite, § 108), e.g. **uŷ llŷsuam rŷ dŷgvŷs** (= **a dynghwys** RB. 102) *im my stepmother has sworn to me* WB. 454; **pawb rŷ gauas** (= **a gauas** RB. 113) **ŷ gŷuarws** *everyone has received his boon* WB. 470; **drycheuwch ŷ fŷrch uŷ aeleu rŷ syrthwŷs** (= **a syrthwys** RB. 119) **ar aualeu vŷ llygeit** *raise the forks of my eyelashes which have fallen on my eyeballs* WB. 478; **llawer dyd yth ry gereis** *I have loved thee many a day* RB. 118; **nŷs rŷ geueis** (= **nys keueis** RB. 126) *I have not got him* WB. 487; **ny ry gigleŷ** *i eirmoet dim y wrth y uorwyn I have never heard anything of the*

*maiden* RB. 113; a ffan **ry dyuu** amser mab a anet a elwit Bown *and when the time was come, there was born a son who was called Bown* Hg. II. 119.

(b) Optionally with the pluperfect, e.g. gwallocau a oruc y rŷn **ry adawsei** (= yr hyn a **adawssei** RB. 101) *he neglected what he had promised* WB. 453; a thrist oed genthi, **kany rŷ welsei** (= **kany welsei** RB. 116) eiroet y uŷnet ae eneit ganthaw a delhei y erchi y neges honno *and she was sad, for she had never seen anyone who came on that quest depart with his life* WB. 474; a chael yn y uedwl **na ry welsei** eiryoet mab a that kyndebycket ar mab y Pwyll *and he thought that he had never seen son and father so like as the boy was to Pwyll*; a chynn ymgyweiryaw yn y gyfrwy neur **ry adoed** heibyaw *and before he had settled himself in his saddle, she had passed by*. In the sentence: dechreu amouyn a gwyrda y wlat beth uassei y arglwydiaeth ef arnadunt hwy y vlwydyn honno y wrth **ry uassei** kyn no hynny *he began to ask the nobles of his country how his rule over them had been that year compared with what it had been before* RB. 7, **ry uassei** seems to express priority relatively to the preceding **buassei**.

#### B. With the subjunctive.

(a) With the present subjunctive **ry** appears sometimes when it has a perfect sense, e.g. ohonot ti yt gaffo ef kanŷ **ry gaffo** (= **yr nas kaffo** RB. 101) o arall *from thee he shall get (offspring) though he has not got it from another* WB. 453; **kyt ry wnelych** di sarhaedeu . . . kyn no hynn nys gwney bellach *though thou hast committed outrages before this, thou shalt not commit them further* RB. 99; yno y byd eneidau ry darffo vdunt penydyaw *there are the souls that have ended their penance* LA. 129. But also without **ry**, e.g. a chyn **gwnel** gameu it . . ny buost ti hawlwr tir a dayar eiryoet *and though he has wronged thee, thou hast never been a claimant of land and earth* RB. 44.

(b) With the past subjunctive, when it has the sense of a pluperfect, **ry** not infrequently appears, e.g. mŷnet a oruc serch y uorwŷn ym pob aelawt itaw **kŷnnŷ rŷ welhei** (= **yr nas gwelsei** RB. 102) eiroet *love for the maiden entered every limb of him though*

*he had never seen her* WB. 454; *nŷd oed waeth kŷuarwŷd ŷn ŷ wlad nŷ rŷ welei* (= *nys ry welsei* RB. 114) *eiroet noc ŷn ŷ wlad ehun he was not a worse guide in a country that he had never seen than in his own country* WB. 471; a *chyn lawenet vu a chyt ry delei idaw iechyt and he was as joyous as though health had come to him* RB. II. 183; *pei mi rŷ wascut* (= *a wascut* RB. 116) *uelly nŷ oruŷdei ar arall uyth rodi serch im if it had been me whom thou hadst so squeezed, no other one would ever have been able to show me love* WB. 474. But also without *ry*, e.g. *pei ys gwypwn ny down yma if I had known it, I would not have come hither* RB. 29, 20.

C. With the infinitive when it has a perfect or pluperfect sense, e.g. *adnabot a oruc ry gaffel dynawt ohonaw he perceived that he had got a buffet*; *gwedy ry golli eu kynr after their horns had been lost* RB. 194.

97. In early Welsh poetry the use of *ry* is much more common than in prose; there it has also some syntactical uses which have been lost in prose (cf. Eriu II. 215 sq.)

(a) With the indicative preterite, when it has a perfect sense, *ry* is much more frequent than in the prose language. As in the case of Irish *ro*, the general definition of this usage is that the past is viewed from the standpoint of the present. There may be a reference either to the personal experience of the speaker, e.g. *mi rŷth welas I have seen thee* BB. 51<sup>a</sup>, *rim artuad I have been blackened* BB. 12<sup>a</sup>, or to an indefinite past, e.g. *ry gadwys Duw dial ar plwyf Pharaonus God has kept vengeance on Pharaoh's people* FB. 170.

With respect to this usage, however, the following points have to be noted:—

1. *ry* is not found:—

(a) After a negative, e.g. *ni threghis ev hoes their life has not passed away* BB. 11<sup>a</sup>; contrast *ry treghis eu hoes* FB. 128. There are rare exceptions in the later poetry.

(β) After *mad well*, e.g. *mad devthoste ŷg corffolaeth happily hast Thou come into the flesh* BB. 44<sup>a</sup>.

(γ) After the interrogative *a*, e.g. *a gueleiste gureic hast thou seen a woman?* BB. 22<sup>b</sup>. But in prose *a ry fu has he been?* WB. 121.

2. *ry* is not preceded by relative *a*. In the later poetry there are very rare exceptions.

3. A pronoun is infixed after *ry*; it is not put before it with *yd* or *a*, e.g. *ry-n gwarawt has helped us* FB. 126, os *Dofyd ry-n digones if it is the Lord that has made us* FB. 113. In the later poetry there are rare exceptions.

(b) With the subjunctive of wish it is used optionally in positive (but never in negative) sentences, e.g. *ry phrinomne di gerenhit may we buy Thy friendship* BB. 44<sup>b</sup>; *rym gwares dy voli may Thy praise help me* FB. 109, by *ath uendicco may it bless thee* BB. 18<sup>a</sup>; but *nŷ buve trist may I not be sad* BB. 17<sup>b</sup>.

(c) With the present indicative:—

1. **Ry** may express possibility, e.g. *rŷ seiw gur ar vn conin a man can stand on a single reed* BB. 45<sup>a</sup>.

NOTE.—In prose there is an instance of **ry** with the present indicative in: ef a **ry** eill ych neckau *he may refuse you* RB. 60. With **gallu**, **ry** is also found in the potential, e.g. ef **ar** allei vot yn wir a dywedy di *what thou sayest may be true* Hg. I. 81, similarly 224, 267, 272; without **ry**: ef a **allei** llawer mab colli ŷ eneit *many youths might lose their life* WB. 100. From the perfect sense inherent in the verb, **ry** is found with the present and imperfect of **darvot** *to be finished*, e.g. os ŷ uwrw **rŷ** **derŷw** *if he has been thrown* WB. 125; **neur** **darod** idaw diffeithaw traean Iwerdon *he had already laid waste the third part of Ireland* RB. 135.

2. In a subordinate clause of a general sentence it may have the sense of a perfect, e.g. ti a nodyd a **ry** **geryd** *Thou savest those whom Thou hast loved* FB. 180. The same sense is found in the subjunctive, when that mood is syntactically required, e.g. **ry** **brynw**[y] nef nyt ef synn *whosoever has purchased heaven will not be confounded* FB. 307; a **ry** **gotwy** glew gogeleo ragtaw *let him who has angered a brave man shun him* MA. 191<sup>a</sup>.

(d) In the later poetry it is used with the future, or with the subjunctive in a future sense, without any apparent meaning, e.g. arth o Deheubarth a dirchafuŷ. **rŷ** llettaud ŷ wir ew tra thir mŷnvŷ *a bear from the South will arise. His men will spread over the land of Mynyw* BB. 30<sup>a</sup>; byddinoed Katwaladyr kadyr y deuant. **ry** **drychafwynt** Kymry, kat a wnant *the hosts of Cadwaladr mightily will they come. The Cymry will rise up, they will give battle* FB. 126.

## CONJUGATION OF THE VERB.

### Verbal Classes.

98. In Celtic as in Latin there were various types of verbal conjugation. In Old Irish the different types may still to a great extent be distinguished, e.g. 3 sg. **-beir** *carries* from \***beret**, **-guid** *prays* from \***godit** (cf. Lat. capit), **-cara** *loves* from \***carāt** (cf. Lat. amat), **-lēici** *leaves* from \***lancīt** or the like (cf. Lat. audit or monet; in Celtic ē became ī). In Welsh the several types have become obscured. There remain, however, some traces of an original difference. Such are the different forms of the 3 sg. pres. ind., e.g. **geill** (to **gallu** *to be able*) which would go back to \***gallit** or the like, **cymmer** *takes* which would correspond to an Ir. con-beir and would go back to **com-beret**, **car** *loves* = Ir. -cara; further the various forms of the 3 sg. pret. act. in **-as**, **-es**, **-is** and of the pret. pass. in **-at**, **-et**, **-it**. In particular should be noted such series as **geilw** (to **galw**, *to call*): **gelwis**: **gelwit**; **ceidw** (to **cadw** *to preserve*): **cedwis**: **cedwit**; **llysg** (to **llosgi** *to*

*burn*): **llosges**: **llosget**; **ceiff** (to **caffael** to *get*): **cavas**: **cavat**. Here there is great need for a collection of material from early texts. In some cases an original radical conjugation is indicated by certain formations peculiar to verbs of the root class, e.g. the **-t** preterites **aeth** = Ir. -acht and **cymmerth** = Ir. con-bert to pres. **a** = Ir. -aig and **cymmer** = Ir. con-beir; the pret. **gwarawt** = Ir. fo-rāith to **gwaret** to *help*; and preterites passive like **llas** = Ir. -slass to **llad** to *kill*.

### Voice.

99. There are two voices, the active and the passive. The deponential form which is found in Old-Irish has disappeared in Welsh.

### Number.

100. In the active there are two numbers, the singular and the plural. In the passive there is only one form for both numbers.

101. In the concord of a verb with a plural subject Welsh shews certain peculiarities:—

(a) If the subject be unexpressed, or if it be a personal pronoun, the verb is in the plural, e.g. **y doethant**, **y doethant wy**, **wynt a doethant** *they came*.

NOTE.—Exceptions are rare, e.g. **os wynteu ae med hi** *if it is they that possess it* RB. 91; **poet wynt athiffero** *let it be they who defend thee* CM. 35; **nyt wy dyweit** *geu llyfreu Beda the books of Beda do not lie* FB. 159; **wy a gynheil y bit** *they support the world* FB. 217; **hwy a orfyt** *they shall prevail* MA. 141<sup>b</sup>. An example with the copula is: **ys hwŷ yr rei hŷnnŷ** (= **sef yw y rei hynny** RB. 121) **Nŷnhŷaw a Pheibŷaw** *they are Nynnyaw and Peibŷaw* WB. 480.

(b) Otherwise in the prose of the Mabinogion the singular is the usual construction, e.g. **y kerdwys y kennadeu** *the messengers set out*; **beth yw y rei racko?** *egylyon ynt what are those yonder? They are angels*. But sometimes the verb is in the plural, particularly in WB. and in the more archaic texts, e.g. **y deu vrenhin a nessayssant** *the two kings drew near* RB. 5; a **meicheit** Matholwch **a oedŷnt** (= **oed** RB. 35) *ar lan ŷ weilgi and the swineherds of Matholwch were by the shore of the sea* WB. 50; **ŷ trywŷr a ganant** *eu kŷrn the three sound their horns* WB. 485 = RB. 125, 18;

**naw brenhin** coronawc **a oedýnt** wýr idaw *nine crowned kings who were his men* RB. 244; **seithwýr a oýdýnt** y danaw *seven men were under him* (by **naw eglwys ereill a vydei** *there were nine other churches*) WB. 385 = RB. 245; **ý rei a oedýnt** (=oed RB. 165) *ýn gwassanaethu those who were serving* WB. 227; **bliant oedýnt** (=oed RB. 165) **ý lleinýeu** y bwrt *the tablecloths were of fine linen* WB. 227; **kwt ýnt** (=ble mae RB. 101) **plant** ý gwr *where are the children of the man?* WB. 453. Sometimes the plural is found with a collective noun, e.g. **gwelsant niuer** Otgar eu *meint the people of Odgar saw their number* RB. 136, 3. In the earlier poetry the plural is quite common, and in corresponding constructions in Old Irish the plural is regular. In Welsh there has been an encroachment of the singular upon the plural, as there has been in later Irish.

### Person.

**102.** In the active there are three persons of each number. In the passive there is only a third person, the first and second persons being expressed, as in Irish, by means of pronouns, e.g. **y-m gelwir** *I am called*, **y-th elwir** *thou art called*, **ny-n cerir** *we are not loved*, **ny-ch cerir** *ye are not loved*; **kattwer vi** *let me be kept*.

NOTE.—In the third person there are instances of an infixed pronoun, when the verb is non-relative, e.g. **kyt ys galwer** *though they are called* LA. 88, **megys pei as gossottit** *as if it were placed* Hg. I. 304; but, on the other hand, e.g. **na rodher** *that it be not given* RB. 258, **pan ollyngit** *when it was set free* Hg. I. 315. The matter calls for further observation.

**103.** The verb regularly agrees in person with the subject, e.g. **mi a welaf** *I see*, **ti a wely** *thou seest*, **ny a dywedwn** *we say*, **mi a thi a ryuelwn** *thou and I will fight*, **mi a Bown a wysgwn** *yn arueu ymdanam a thitheu a wysgy ymdanat* *Bown and I will put on our arms, and thou wilt put on thine*. In the passive, where there is no distinction of person, the third person is used everywhere, e.g. **mi a gerir** *I am loved*. The 3 sg. copula form **ys** is used, like the corresponding Ir. is, with pronouns of the first and second persons, e.g. **ys mi** (=Ir. is mē) *it is I*.

Occasionally in a relative clause the verb is in the 3 sg. when the antecedent is in the first or second person, e.g. **mi rŷth welas** *I have seen thee* BB. 51<sup>a</sup>; **ae ti a eirch uŷ merch? ŷs mi ae heirch** *is it thou who askest for my daughter? It is I who ask for her* WB. 479; **mi aŷ had[e]ilŷawd** *I built it* WB. 394.

NOTE.—These last examples represent the original construction, which has in Welsh been replaced by congruence with the pronoun. The 3 sg. is the regular construction in Breton, e.g. **me guelas** *I saw*, in Cornish, e.g. **why a ergh** *ye seek*, and in Old Irish, e.g. **is mē asbeir** *it is I who say*.

### The Moods.

**104.** There are three finite moods, the indicative, the subjunctive and the imperative. The Celtic languages have developed no proper infinitive; the place of the infinitive in Welsh as in the other Celtic languages is taken by a verbal noun, with nominal inflexion and with nominal construction. There is a passive participle in **-edic** and a verbal of necessity in **-adwy** (corresponding to the Irish verbal of necessity in **-thi**).

### The Indicative.

**105.** The tenses of the indicative are present, imperfect, preterite, and pluperfect. Syntactically the present serves also as a future; in the earlier language, however, there are also special future forms (§ **130**). The imperfect is used both as an imperfect indicative and as a conditional (in the latter usage it corresponds in usage to the Irish secondary future). The preterite is used both as preterite and as perfect; in the latter usage it is often preceded by **ry**, particularly in the earlier language (§§ **96, 97**). The pluperfect is a new development of the British division of Celtic; it has the same endings as the imperfect, and has been formed to the preterite stem on the analogy of the imperfect to the present. It is used (**a**) as a pluperfect indicative, (**b**) as a pluperfect conditional, in which sense, however, the imperfect continues to be used in Mid.W., (**c**) as a pluperfect subjunctive, in which usage it tends in Mid.W. to replace the past tense of the subjunctive (§ **III**). The following examples will illustrate the uses of the tenses of the indicative.



## PRESENT.

**106. (a)** Actual present, e.g. beth **yw** hwnn? Kyfrwy **yw** *what is this? It is a saddle*; ti a **welŷ** ŷ sawl vorŷnŷon hŷgar **ŷssŷd** ŷn ŷ llŷs hon *thou seest all the amiable maidens who are in this court* WB. 155.

**(b)** Consuetudinal present, e.g. ef a **wŷl** pawb or a del ŷ mŷwn ac nŷs **gwŷl** neb efo *he sees everyone who enters and no one sees him* WB. 156.

**(c)** Of an action lasting into the present, e.g. **ys** gwers **yd wyf** yn keissaw a olchei vŷg cledŷf *I have been seeking for a while some one to burnish my sword* RB. 126; pump mŷned ar ethŷnt yr pan **yttŷm** ni yn arueru or ryw segurŷt hwnnw *five years have passed away since we have been enjoying that ease* RB. II. 205.

**(d)** Historic present, e.g. nyt kynt **yd yskynn** ef ar y uarch noc **yd** a hitheu hebdaŷ ef *no sooner did he mount his horse than she passed him* RB. 11; nachaf gwr du . . . a **welant** lo! *they saw a black man* WB. 486; a phan **daw** (= **doeth** WB. p. 204) hyt lle yd oed Gwenhwyvar kyuarch gwell a oruc idi *and when he came to the place where Gwenhwyvar was he greeted her* RB. 262; gossot a oruc ynteu ar y marchawc . . . nŷy **hŷllt** y daryan ac nŷy **dyrr** yr aruev *he made an onset on the horseman, till he cleft the shield and broke the arms* RB. 271.

**(e)** As future, e.g. dywet y Arthur pa le bynnac y bwyf i gwr idaw **vydaf**, ac o **gallaf** lles a gwassanaeth idaw, mi ae **gwnaf**. A dywet na **deuaf** y lys vyth nŷy ymgaffwyf ar gwr hir *say to Arthur that wherever I am I will be his man, and if I can do him advantage and service, I will do it. And say that I will never come to his court till I encounter the tall man.*

## IMPERFECT.

**107. (a)** Of an action going on or a state existing in past time, e.g. val y **kyrchei** ef y bont ef a **welai** varchawc yn dyuot *as he was making for the bridge, he saw a horseman coming* WB. p. 216; nyt y fford a **gyrchei** y tref or bont a gerdawd Gereint *it was not by the road that went from the bridge to the town that Gereint went*



WB. p. 217; yma **yd oedwn** yn kerdet ui ar gwr mwýaf a **garwn**. ac ar hýnný y doeth tri chawr o gewri attam *we were travelling, I and the man whom I most loved. And thereupon there came to us three giants* WB. 441; pan deuthum i yma gyntaf, eingon gof a **oed** yma, a minneu ederyn ieuanc **oedwn** *when first I came here there was here a smith's anvil, and I was a young bird* RB. 129.

NOTE 1.—Note the use of the imperfect with a negative in such sentences as the following: **nyt eynt** hwy oe bod *they would not go willingly* RB. 32; yr hynny **ny thawei** yny dygwydws kysgu arnei *for all that she would not be silent, till sleep fell upon her* RB. II. 51.

NOTE 2.—The imperfects of **clybot** *to hear* and of **gwelet** *to see* are frequent in narrative, parallel with the preterite of other verbs, e.g. y dyd yd aeth ef parth a chaer Dathyl, troi o vywn y llys a wnaeth hi; a hi a **glywei** lef corn *the day that he went towards Caer Dathyl, she walked within the court, and she heard the sound of a horn* RB. 74, 6; a dyuot yr brifford ae chanlynn a orugant. A choet mawr a **welynt** y wrthunt. A ffarth ar coet y deuthant. Ac yn dyuot or koet allan y **gwelynt** pedwar marchawc aruawc. Ac edrych a orugant arunt *and they came to the highway and followed it. And they saw before them a great wood. And they went towards the wood. And they saw four armed horsemen coming out of the wood. And they gazed upon them* RB. 270, 19.

(b) Representing in indirect speech a present indicative of direct speech, e.g. a galw a wnaeth attaw y verch hynaf idaw Goronilla a gofyn idi pa veint **y karei** hi efo. A thygu a wnaeth hitheu y nef a daear bot yn vwy **y karei** hi euo noe heneit ehun. A chredu a wnaeth ynteu idi hynny, a dywedut, kan **oed** kymeint **y karei** hi euo a hynny, y rodei ynteu draean y gyuoeth genti hi y wr a dewissei yn ynys Prydein *and he called to him his eldest daughter Goronilla, and asked her how much she loved him. And she swore by heaven and earth that she loved him more than her own life. And he believed her in that and said that, since she loved him so much as that, he would give the third of his kingdom with her to the man whom she should choose in the island of Britain* RB. II. 65.

(c) Of a repeated or customary action in past time, e.g. a phý beth bynnac a dywetei ar y dauawt, ef ae **kadarnhei** oe weithret ae arueu *and whatever he said with his tongue, he used to make it good by his deeds and his arms* RB. II. 41; kymeint ac a wnelit y dyd or gweith, tranoeth pan gyuotit neur **daruydei** yr dayar y lynku *as much of the work as was done by day, overnight when they arose the earth had swallowed it* RB. II. 141; ar rwym a **wneyit**

yna rwng deu dyn a wnaethpwyd y rwng Gereint ar uorwyn *and the bond that used to be made then between two persons was made between Gereint and the maiden* RB. 262, 25.

(d) As secondary future or conditional.

(a) As a secondary tense to the future, e.g. can gwýdŷwn i **ŷ** **dout** ti **ŷm** keissyaw i *for I knew that thou wouldst come to seek me* WB. 249; diheu oed genthi na **deuei** Ereint uyth *she was sure that Gereint would never come* WB. 441; ny wydyat hi beth a **wnaei** *she did not know what she should do* RB. 268, 29.

(β) In the apodosis of a future or possible conditional clause, e.g. bei gwnelhit uŷg kýghor i nŷ **thorrit** kýfreitheu llŷs ŷrdaw *if my counsel were followed, the laws of the court would not be broken on his account* WB. 458; pei clywhut ti ymdidan y marchogyon racco . . . mwy **vydei** dy oual noc y mae *if thou heard the discourse of yonder horsemen, thy anxiety would be greater than it is*.

(γ) In the apodosis of a past or impossible conditional clause, e.g. py ham vilein, heb ef, y gadut ti efo heb y uenegi imi. Arglwyd, heb ef, ny orchymyneisti euo imi; pei as gorchymynnud nys **gadwn** "*why, villain,*" said he, "*didst thou let him go without letting me know?*" "*Lord,*" said he, "*thou didst not give me such instructions. If thou hadst instructed me I should not have let him go*" WB. p. 216; pei oet idaw, ef a **ledit** (= **ladyssit** RB. 193, 8) *if he had been of age, he would have been slain* WB. 117.

NOTE 3. To **bot** to be the regular conditional is **bydwn**. The imperfect **oed**, however, (like Ir. *ba*) is used in a modal sense in expressions like the following: **oedwell genhŷf** (= Ir. *ba ferr limm*) **noe ŷssŷd ŷm gwlat bei oll ŷt uei val hŷnn** *I should prefer to all that is in my kingdom that it should be all like that* WB. 487.

#### PRETERITE.

108. (a) As preterite (the regular narrative tense), e.g. ac ŷmhoŷ lud a **oruc** ar ŷ marchawc, ac ar ŷ gossot kýntaf ŷ uwrw ŷr llawr ŷ dan draet ŷ uarch. a thra **barh[a]awd** ŷr un or pedwarugein marchawc, ar ŷ gossot kýntaf **ŷ býrŷawd** pob un onadunt. Ac o oreu ŷ oreu **ŷ doe[t]hont** attaw eithŷr ŷ iarll. Ac ŷn diwethaf oll **ŷ doeth** ŷ iarll attaw *and he turned on the horseman, and at the*

*first onset he threw him to the ground, under the feet of his horse. And while there remained one of the eighty horsemen, at the first onset he overthrew every one of them. And there came to him always one better than the last, except the earl. And last of all the earl came to him* WB. 432; *y gysgu yd* **aethant** *y nos honno. a phan welas y meichat lliw y dyd, ef a* **deffroes** *Wydyon that night they went to sleep. And when the swineherd saw the hue of day, he aroused Gwydyon* RB. 78, 12.

(b) Corresponding to a perfect in indirect speech, e.g. a thranoeth Agamemnon a wyssywys y bobyl y gyt, ac a diwadawd na **bu** ef eiryoet chwanawc yr amherodraeth honno. ac a dŷwawt nas **kymmerth** ef hi onyt o uedwl iawn *and next day Agamemnon summoned the people together, and denied that he had ever been desirous of that sovereignty. And he said that he had not taken it except with just intention* RB. II. 24.

(c) As perfect, e.g. coet **ry welsom** ar y weilgi yn y lle ny **welsam** eiryoet vn prenn *we have seen a wood upon the sea where we have never seen a single tree* RB. 35, 24; pwy a **ganhadwys** itti eisted yna *who has given thee permission to sit there?* WB. p. 225; Bendigeit Uran ar niuer a **dywedassam** ni a hwylyassant parth ac Iwerdon *Bendigeit Vran and those whom we have mentioned set out towards Ireland* RB. 35, 14.

#### PLUPERFECT.

109. (a) As pluperfect indicative, e.g. or a **welsei** ef o helgwn y byt ny **welsei** cwn un lliw ac wynt *of all the hounds that he had seen anywhere he had never seen dogs of the same colour as them* RB. 1, 21; ual **y gnottayssei** tra uu yn llys Arthur kyrchu twrneimeint a wnaei *he resorted to tournaments as he had been wont to do while he was in Arthur's court* RB. 268, 6; a dyuot kof idaw y dolur yna yn uwy no phan **y cawssei** *and then there came to him the recollection of his sorrow more than when he had received it* WB. p. 218.

(b) As pluperfect conditional, e.g. **buassei** well itti pei rodassut nawd yr mackwy *it would have been better for thee if thou hadst given protection to the lad*; a pheï nat ystyriei yr Arglwyd Duw ohonunt

wy, ef a **wnaethoed** oual tra messur udunt *and if the Lord God had not considered them he would have caused anxiety beyond measure to them* Hg. II. 71.

(c) Replacing the subjunctive in a pluperfect sense, e.g. bei **buassut** wrth vy gyghor i, ny chyuaruydei a thi na thrallawt na gofit *if thou hadst followed my counsel, neither affliction nor trouble would have come nigh unto thee* Hg. II. 123; pei **doethoed** ef yn y lle wedy dilyw, wynt a dywedynt y mae vrth Noe ac Effream y dywedassei Duw pob peth or a dywedessynt *if he had come immediately after the Flood they would have said that it was to Noah and Abraham that God had said everything that they had said* LA. 17.

### The Subjunctive Mood.

#### THE FORMATION OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE.

110. The sign of the subjunctive is **h**; for the changes that **h** undergoes in conjunction with a preceding sound see § 11g. Examples:—sg. 3 pres., **coffaho**: **coffau** *to remember*; **carho**: **caru** *to love*; **sorho**: **sorri** *to be angry*; **talho**: **tal** *pay*; **prynho**: **prynu** *to buy*; **mynho**: **mynnu** *to desire*; **bendicco**: **bendigaw** *to bless*; **cretto**: **credu** *to believe*; **atteppo**: **attebu** *to answer*; **llatho**: **llad** *to slay*; **tyffo**: **tyvu** *to grow*. After a preceding **h**, **h** is lost by dissimilation, e.g. **parhao**: **parhau** *to continue*; **amheuo**: **amheu** *to doubt*. Further **h** does not appear after **ch**, e.g. **archo**: **erchi** *to ask*, after **ff**, e.g. **caffo**: **caffael** *to get*, after **ll**, e.g. **gallo**: **gallu** *to be able*, or after **s**, e.g. **keisser** BB. 26<sup>b</sup>, **llafassed** BB. 27<sup>a</sup>, **ýssýnt** WB. 467. In the present tense the subjunctive has distinctive endings; in the past tense the endings are the same as in the imperfect indicative, so that here the **h** is the only distinguishing mark, except in the few verbs that have a special subjunctive stem.

NOTE 1.—In Mid.W. a new **h** subjunctive is formed analogically to the indicative of verbal stems ending in **d**, e.g. **cerdho** RB. 293 = **certho** WB. p. 211 : **cerdet** *to go*, **lladho** WB. p. 210 = **llatho** WB. 419 : **llad**, **rothom** RB. 105 = **rothom** WB. 458 : **rodi** *to give*; from stems ending in **v** the regular form is rare, **tyffei** : **tyvu** WB. 453, but **prouher** : **provi** *prove* BB. 3<sup>b</sup>, **safhei** : **sevyll** *to stand* WB. 466 = RB. 110. There are already in Mid.W., particularly in its later period, examples of complete confusion

of the subjunctive with the indicative stem, e.g. *clywut* RB. 274 = *clȳvut* WB. 423 = *clywhut* WB. p. 212 : *clybot* to hear, *clywych* RB. 270 = *clywhych* WB. p. 209, *guelud* : *gwelet* to see BB. 29<sup>b</sup>, *talo* RB. 268 = *talho* WB. 415, *sorro* : *sorri* BB. 28<sup>b</sup>, *cenich* : *canu* to sing BB. 42<sup>b</sup>, *medrei* RB. 76 = *metrei* WB. 104 : *medru* aim at, *mynnei* RB. 277 = *mynhei* WB. p. 214, *cerdo* RB. 273 = *certho* WB. p. 211, *llado* RB. 270 = *lladho* WB. p. 210 = *llatho* WB. 419, *rodo* RB. 286 = *rotho* WB. p. 220, *ȳvei* : *ȳvet* to drink BB. 48<sup>b</sup>. This confusion has spread analogically from cases like *gallu*, *erchi*, etc., where the subjunctive stem was in Old Welsh identical with the indicative, and from cases where later the two forms fell together by the operation of phonetic law, e.g. *mynho* to *mynno*, like *minheu* I to *minneu*. The old forms are most persistent in stems in *g*, *d*, *b*.

NOTE 2.—The earlier history of the Welsh subjunctive is very obscure. Vendryès, however, in the *Mémoires de la Société de linguistique de Paris*, XI. 258 sq. has made it probable that *h* came from prehistoric *s*, so that the formation would resemble that of the Irish *s*-subjunctive, from which, however, it differs in that in Welsh there must have been a vowel between *s* and the final consonant of the verbal stem. The explanation given by Stern, CZ. III. 383 sq. is untenable. In Early Welsh there are two subjunctives identical in formation with the Irish *s*-subjunctive :—*duch* may he lead from \**douc-set* : *dwyn* to lead, and *gwares* may he help from \**vo-ret-set* : *gwaret* to help.

#### THE TENSES OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE.

III. In early Welsh, as in Irish, the subjunctive had two tenses, a present, which syntactically had the function of a present and of a perfect, and a past, which syntactically had the function of an imperfect and of a pluperfect; in the sense of perfect and pluperfect the subjunctive may be preceded by *ry* (§ 96B.) In the later Mid.W. period the past subjunctive in a pluperfect sense tended to be replaced by the pluperfect indicative (§ 109c); sometimes in the same passage one text has the original subjunctive while another has the pluperfect indicative, e.g. *kȳn nȳs rȳ welhei* WB. 454 = *yr nas gwelsei* RB. 102, 5 *though he had not seen her*; *pei as gorchymynnūt* WB. p. 216 = *pei as gorchymynnassut* RB. 280, 7 *if thou hadst commanded it*. The indicative origin of the usage is particularly clear in forms like *pei doethoed* *if he had come* LA. 17.

NOTE.—This substitution is parallel to the general tendency to replace the subjunctive stem by the indicative; it was noted above that no instances have been found of subjunctive *h* after *s*; thus, if *ysswn* from *yssu* to eat might be either indicative or subjunctive, a pluperfect indicative like *carasswn* *I had loved* might easily have come to be used in a subjunctive sense. In *ry wnelut* WB. p. 223 = *gwnelut* WB. 445, RB. 290, a pluperfect has been formed analogically to the past subjunctive *gwnelut* (§ 142).

## THE USAGES OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE.

**112.** A thorough investigation of the uses of the subjunctive as contrasted with the indicative in Mid.W. is still wanting<sup>a</sup>. The following examples may serve to illustrate the principal types; further instances will be found under the conjunctions. Under the various headings are given, so far as they occur, (α) instances of the present subjunctive, (β) instances of the past subjunctive.

**113. A.** The subjunctive in main clauses.

(a) Wish.

(α) **an duch** ir gulet *may He bring us to the feast* BB. 20<sup>b</sup>; **Duw a rotho** da itt *may God give good to thee* WB. p. 204; **ny bo** teu dy benn *may not thy head be thine* RB. 103, 6.

NOTE.—A wish with reference to the past is expressed by the indicative, e.g. *Och Iessu na dýffv wý nihenit O Jesus! that my death had come* (lit. *Alas! Jesus, that my death did not come*) BB. 25<sup>b</sup>; *och Gindilie na buost gureic would, Cynddilig, that thou hadst been a woman* BB. 46<sup>a</sup>.

(b) Command.

(α) **yscýthrich fort** a delhich ti. a **llunhich** tagneuet *make smooth a road that thou mayest come and cultivate peace* BB. 42<sup>b</sup>; dos . . . ac **erchych** hynny idaw *go and ask that of him* RB. 102, 11; **dyuot a wnelhych** gennyf *come with me* RB. 118, 2; **dabre genhiw ným gwatter** *come with me, let me not be refused* BB. 51<sup>a</sup>.

(β) In indirect speech a command is transferred to the past subjunctive, e.g. *Agamemnon . . . a d[y]wawt y peidei ef ar llywodraeth honno yn llawen . . . a gossottynt hwy y neb a vynynt yn y le ef Agamemnon said that he would gladly give up that command, and that they should set whomsoever they pleased in his place* RB. II. 24.

(c) Futurity. This usage is common in poetry, but rare in prose.

(α) **ohonot ti ýt gaffo** ef kanýs rý gaffo o arall *from thee he shall get it, though he has not got it from another* WB. 453; **nyth atter ti** (= **nyth ellyngir di** RB. 104, 8) *ý mýwn thou shalt not be admitted* WB. 457; **nyt arbettwy** car corff y gilyd *one kinsman will not*

<sup>a</sup> A beginning has been made by Atkinson, *On the Use of the Subjunctive Mood in Welsh*, "Transactions of the Royal Irish Academy, 1894," pp. 459 sq., but he deals only with the present subjunctive.

*spare the body of another* FB. 127; *cad a uyt ym Mynydd Carn a Thrahaearn a later there will be a battle in Mynydd Carn, and Trahaearn will be slain* MA. 142<sup>b</sup>.

**114. B.** The subjunctive in subordinate clauses.

(a) Negatively after verbs of thinking, swearing, etc.

(a) *ny thybygaf inheu na wypych ti haedu ohonaw ef hynny I do not think that thou dost not know that he has deserved that* RB. II. 157; *hyt na bo neb a wypo na bo ti vo Gwrlois so that no one may know that thou art not Gwrlois* RB. II. 179; *mi a tynghaf dynghet idaw na chaffo ef enw yny kaffo gennyf i I lay this fate on him that he will not get a name till he gets it from me* RB. 69, 21; *o rodwch gret na wneloch gam idi if ye pledge yourselves to do her no wrong* RB. 117, 15.

NOTE 1.—But in indirect speech as such the indicative is the mood used. With the last example contrast: *y Duw y dygaf vyg kyffes nae werthu nae ellwng nas gwnaf i I vow to God that I will neither sell it nor let it go* RB. 56, 8; similarly 215, 15.

(β) *nyt er tebygu ohonaw ef na bei deilwg it was not because he thought that it was not worthy* RB. II. 26; *neb or ae gwelei ny wydyat na beynt eur no one who saw them knew that they were not gold* RB. 62, 1. After a primary tense:—*na wn . . . pei kahwn dýsc nas gwýpwn I do not know that, if I got instruction, I would not know how to do it* WB. 127.

(b) In indirect interrogation.

(a) *aet un y wybot pwy vo let some one go to learn who he may be* RB. 9, 1; *manac y mi pa furyf y gallwyf hynny show me how I can do that* RB. 3, 4; *yny wyper a uo byw until it be known whether he will live* RB. 261, 4; *y edrych a allwyf y dial arnaw to see whether I can avenge him on him* RB. 204, 12; *dewis ae ti a elych yr llys ae titheu a delych gyt a mi y hela ae minneu a yrro vn or teulu choose whether thou wilt go to the court, or whether thou wilt come with me to the chase, or whether I shall send one of the household* RB. 237, 9.

(β) *heb wybot pwy vei eu gelynyon pwy vei eu gwyr ehunein without knowing who were their enemies, who their own men* RB. II. 105; *val yd oed Kynan Meiradawc yn pedrussaw beth a wnelei as Kynan Meiradawg was hesitating as to what he should do*



RB. II. 114; a medylaw pa ffuruf **y gellynt** ymlad ar deu lu *and they considered how they could fight with the two armies* RB. II. 76; ef a peris y dwyn yw lys y edrych a **uei** vyw *he caused him to be brought to his court to see whether he would live* WB. p. 222.

NOTE 2.—But in dependent interrogation as such the subjunctive is not required, e.g. ny wn i pwy **wyt** ti *I do not know who thou art* RB. 2; govin a oruc pwy **oedynt** a pha le pan **hanhoedynt** a phy daear **y magyssit** arnei a phy achaws **y dathoedynt** y deymas ef *he asked who they were, and whence they came, and in what land they had been reared, and for what reason they had come to his kingdom* RB. II. 131; gouyn a wnaeth ae offeiryat **oed** ef *he asked if he was a priest* Hg. I. 33; edrych yn y chyleh a oruc a **yttoed** ef yn deffroi *she looked round about her to see if he was awaking* RB. 274, 30.

(c) Concessive clauses:—

(a) a **chyt archo** ef ytti yr eil na dyro *and though he ask thee for a second (blow), do not give it* RB. 3, 19; tydi am gwely i **kany welwyf** i dydi *thou shalt see me, though I do not see thee* RB. 173, 18.

(β) a **chyt bei** lityawc ef wrthi hi ef a gymyrth y rybud *and though he was angry with her, he took her warning* WB. p. 215.

(d) Conditional clauses:—

(β) e.g. **pei as gwypwn** mi ae dywedwn *if I knew it, I would tell it* RB. 130, 5; bei **ys cuypun...nys gunaun** *if I had known it I would not have done it* BB. 41<sup>a</sup>; or **gwnelei** ef hynny ynteu a rodei y verch idaw ef *if he did that he would give him his daughter* RB. II. 26.

NOTE 3.—In present conditional clauses the present indicative with **o** is used (§ 224<sup>a</sup>).

(e) Clauses of comparison:—

(a) gwnaet iawn **mal y barno** goreugwyr y llys *let him give satisfaction as the nobles of the court shall decide* RB. 261, 4.

(β) **mal y dyckei** eu teghetuennau y ffoassant *they fled as their fortunes led them* RB. II. 73. Of unreal comparison, e.g. llyma yssyd iawnhaf itti . . . dyuot yma auory ym kymryt i **mal na wyppwn** i dim y wrth hynny *that is thy most proper course, to come here to-morrow to take me as if I knew nothing about it* WB. p. 215.

(f) Temporal clauses:—

(a) o lladaf i y gwr racco mi ath gaf ti **tra vynhwyf**. a **gwedy** nath **vynhwyf** mi ath yrraf ymdeith *if I slay yonder man, I will*



*take thee as long as I desire; and when I no longer desire thee, I will cast thee forth* WB. p. 215; **pan agorer** y creu beuny d yd a allan *when the sty is opened every day, it goes out* RB. 78, 7; **pan delych** dy hun yth wlat ti a wely a wneuthum yrot ti *when thou thyself comest to thy land, thou wilt see what I have done for thee* RB. 6; ny luniaf i esgydyeu idi **yny welwyf** y throet *I will not shape shoes for her till I see her foot* RB. 70, 24.

(β) a pheri yr kigy d **gwedy y bei** yn dryllyaw kic dyuot idi a tharaw bonclust arnei beuny d *and he made the butcher, after he had been cutting up the flesh, come to her and box her ears every day* RB. 34, 9; a **ffan uei** hýttraf Gereint ý llawenhaei ý gwr *and whenever Gereint prevailed, the man rejoiced* WB. 398; **tra uei** y mywn coet ar vric y coet y kerdei *while he was in a wood, he would travel on the top of the wood* RB. 108, 21; y byryw[y]t y kalaned yn y peir **yny uei** yn llawn *the corpses were thrown into the cauldron till it was full* RB. 39, 23.

(g) Final clauses, and clauses following verbs of effecting, commanding, desiring, etc.

(a) carchara wynt **hyt nat elont** dracheuyn *imprison them so that they may not go back* RB. 34, 14; mi a wna f **na chaffo** ef viui vyth *I shall effect that he shall never get me* RB. 13, 16; ny allaf i **na chysgwyf** *I cannot refrain from sleep* RB. 277, 4; sef y harchaf itt **na mynnych** wreic *my request of thee is that thou shalt not seek a wife* RB. 100, 20.

(β) ereill a gyghorei it rodi dy uerch y un o dyledogyon y deyrnas hon **ual y bei** vrenhin gwedy ti *others counselled thee to give thy daughter to one of the nobles of this kingdom, so that there might be a king after thee* RB. II. 114; Andromacta...a anuones at Briaf y beri idaw wahard Ector **nat elei** y dyd hwnnw yr vrwydyr *Andromache sent to Priam to get him to prevent Hector from going to the battle that day* RB. II. 22; adolwyn a wnaeth Elenus **na wnelit** hynny *Helenus begged that that might not be done* RB. II. 32.

NOTE 4.—But in mere consecution the indicative is used, e.g. ar y llech y mae kawc aryant wrth gadwyn aryant **mal na ellir** eu gwahanu *on the flag there is a silver goblet on a silver chain, so that they cannot be separated* RB. 167; kyseu a wneuthum i **ual na wybuum** pan aeth ef *I slept so that I did not know when he went* RB. 247, 26.

(h) Relative clauses, including similar clauses of a non-relative type.

(α) wely di a **wnelych** *here is what thou must do* RB. 271, 23; kein wlad nef boed ef **yt el** *the fair land of heaven, may it be there that he goes* MA. 263b; a **vo** penn bit bont *let him who is head be bridge* RB. 36; y gymeint a **wypwyf** i mi ae dywedaf *all that I know I will tell* RB. 131; o mynwn nineu arueru o rydit a **vo** hwy *if we wish to enjoy freedom any longer*; pwy bynnac a **vynno** kanlyn Arthur bit heno y Ghernyw gyt ac ef *whoever wishes to accompany Arthur, let him be with him to-night in Cornwall* RB. 160; kymer y march kyntaf a **welych** *take the first horse that thou seest* RB. 9; na uyd...**yr** a **dotter** yndi vyth *however much be put into it it will never be (full)* RB. 15; ny cheiff ymwan...y gwr ny **bo** gyt ac ef y wreic vwyhaf a **garho** *no man will be allowed to contend who has not with him the lady whom he most loves* RB. 252; a oes ohonawch chwi a **adnapo** y uarchoges *racco is there any one of you who knows yonder horsewoman?* RB. 8; keis ath **ladho** *seek someone to slay thee* RB. 5; gwna ty...**y** **geingho** ef *make a house in which he may find room* RB. 37, 21

(β) Sef y gwelei y llew yn y ganlyn . . . ual milgi a **uackei** *ehun he saw the lion following him like a hound that he had reared himself* RB. 187; pedeir meillonon gwýnnŷon a dŷuei yn y hol mŷn **yd elhei** *four white blades of clover grew after her wherever she went* WB. 476; digavn oed hŷnnŷ yn tal gwasanaeth a **uei** uwŷ nor un a wneuthum i *that were sufficient as pay for a greater service than that which I have done* WB. 426; a pheth bynnac a **dywettei** Peredur wrthi chwerthin a wnay hitheu yn uchel *and whatever Peredur said to her, she laughed aloud* RB. 237; a chymeint oed eu gwybot ac nat oed ymadrawd . . . yr isset **y dywettit** . . . nys **gwypynt** *and such was their knowledge that there was no conversation, however low it was uttered, that they did not know* RB. 94, 18. After a primary tense: kynhebic yw yr neb a **wasgarei** gemeu mawrweirthyawc dan draet moch *he is like one who should scatter precious stones under the feet of swine* RB. II. 122.

### The Imperative.

**115.** In the active the imperative has two persons in the singular and three in the plural; in the passive it is identical in form with the subjunctive. The negative is **na**. Examples:—**gat** i mi vynet *allow me to go*; **na wiscet** dim ymdanei *let her not put anything on*; kyrchu tref arall a **wnawn** *let us make for another town*; **na rodher** *let there not be given*. The only idiom that calls for special notice is the following:—mi a rodaf vy iarllaeth yth uedyant a **thric** gyt a mi *I will give my earldom into thy possession, if thou wilt stay with me* (lit. *and stay with me*) RB. 278, 14.

### The Participle Passive in -edic.

**116.** Examples:—arueu y gwyr **lladedic** *the arms of the slain men*; ynteu **madeuedic** **yw** ganthaw y godyant ef *as for him, the injury done to him is forgiven by him* WB. 404; Gwawl . . . a doeth parth ar wled a **oed darparedic** idaw *Gwawl went to the feast that was prepared for him* RB. 14, 22.

*came/*

### The Verbal in -adwy.

**117.** Examples:—nyt **barnadwy** yn volyant *it is not to be judged a praise* Hg. II. 83; nyt **kredadwy** *it is not to be believed* CM. 111; a chanys **credadwy** yw y anedigaeth **credadwy** y varwolyaeth *and since his birth is credible, his death is credible* CM. 21; midwyf bard **moladwy** *I am a poet worthy of praise* FB. 203; odit a uo **molediw** *few are worthy of praise* FB. 272; os da gennyt ti ac or byd **ragadwy** bod it *if thou approvest and if it is pleasing to thee* RB. II. 133; a **phrofadwy** yw ry golli ohonaf i vyn ngolwc *and it is clear that I have lost my sight* Hg. I. 83; vegys bilein **profadwy** *like a proved villain* Hg. II. 129.

## The Verbal Noun or Infinitive.

## FORMATION.

**118.** The following are the chief types of formation of the verbal noun :—

(a) The prehistoric suffix has disappeared, so that the verbal noun is now identical in form with the stem of the verb. Examples:

<b>ammeu</b> <i>doubt</i> : <b>amheu-af</b> <i>I doubt</i>	<b>galw</b> <i>call</i> : <b>galw-af</b>
<b>cyvarch</b> <i>ask</i> : <b>cyvarch-af</b>	<b>gellwng</b> <i>let go</i> : <b>gellyng-af</b>
<b>dianc</b> <i>escape</i> : <b>diangh-af</b>	<b>gwarandaw</b> <i>listen</i> : <b>gwaran-daw-af</b>
<b>diodef</b> <i>suffer</i> : <b>diodev-af</b>	<b>llad</b> <i>slay</i> : <b>llad-af</b>

Further in some denominatives, e.g. **bwytta** *eating*: **bwytta-af**, **cardotta** *begging*, **lledratta** *stealing*, **pyscotta** *fishing*.

**119.** (b) The verbal noun still shows a suffix.

(a) **-i**, e.g.—

<b>bod-i</b> <i>drown</i> : <b>bod-af</b>	<b>mol-i</b> (O.W. <i>molim</i> ) <i>praise</i> : <b>mol-af</b>
<b>cyvod-i</b> <i>rise</i> : <b>cyvod-af</b>	
<b>erch-i</b> (O.W. <i>erchim</i> ) <i>ask</i> : <b>arch-af</b>	<b>per-i</b> <i>cause</i> : <b>par-af</b>
<b>meneg-i</b> <i>shew</i> : <b>manag-af</b>	<b>tew-i</b> <i>be silent</i> : <b>taw-af</b>
	<b>torr-i</b> <i>break</i> : <b>torr-af</b>

(β) **-u**, e.g.—

<b>can-u</b> <i>sing</i> : <b>can-af</b>	<b>gwassanaeth-u</b> <i>minister</i> : <b>gwassanaeth-af</b>
<b>car-u</b> <i>love</i> : <b>car-af</b>	
<b>dysg-u</b> <i>teach</i> : <b>dysg-af</b>	<b>mynn-u</b> <i>desire</i> : <b>mynn-af</b>
<b>gall-u</b> <i>be able</i> : <b>gall-af</b>	<b>pryn-u</b> <i>buy</i> : <b>pryn-af</b>

This is the common form of the verbal noun from denominatives in **-ha-**, e.g. **cennatta-u** *send message*: **cennatta-af**, **dynessa-u** *approach*: **dynessa-af**, **rydha-u** *free*: **rydha-af**.

(γ) **-aw**, e.g.—

<b>gwisg-aw</b> <i>clothe</i> : <b>gwisg-af</b>	<b>bedydy-aw</b> <i>baptize</i> : <b>bedydy-af</b>
<b>lliw-aw</b> <i>colour</i> : <b>lliw-af</b>	<b>medyly-aw</b> <i>think</i> : <b>medyly-af</b>

(δ) -at, -et, -ut, e.g.—

adeil-at *build*: adeil-af

gorderch-at *make love*: gorderch-af

cerd-et *go*: cerd-af

yv-et *drink*: yv-af

gwel-et *see*: gwel-af

dywed-ut (also dywedwyt)  
*say*: dywed-af

ymchoel-ut *turn*: ymchoel-af

(ε) Various suffixes found only in a few verbs:—

cymryt *take*: cymmer-af

dilit *follow*: dilyn-af

dyffryt *protect*: differ-af

ymlit *pursue*: ymlyn-af

edvryd *restore*: adver-af

godiwes *overtake*: godiwed-af

goglyt *shun*: gogel-af

arhos *await*: arho-af

adolwyn *entreat*: adolyg-af

dwyn *lead*: dyg-af

amwyn *protect*: amyg-af

ehed-ec *fly*: ehed-af

red-ec *run*: red-af

ered-ic *plough*: ard-af

caffael, cael *get*: caff-af

gallel (by gallu) *be able*: gall-af

gadael (by gadu) *allow*:  
gad-af

sev-yll *stand*: sav-af

chwerthin *laugh*: chward-af

igian *sob*: igi-af

darllein *read*: darlle-af

llevain *cry*: llev-af

#### USAGE.

**120.** The infinitive, being merely a verbal noun, has all the constructions of a noun; it has, however, become so far attached to the verbal system that it forms a perfect by prefixing the particle **ry** (§ 96c). Examples:—

(a) nyt oed vynych yt **gaffel** bud *it was not a common thing for you to get profit*; mynneu a ryuedeis **gallu** ohonaw ef **mynet** yn dirybud y mi *I wondered that he could go without informing me*; gwedy **llad** y gwyr hynny *after those men had been slain*; cyn awch **mynet** ymdeith ateb a geffwch *before you depart* (lit. *before your*

going) *you shall get an answer*; heb y **uenegi** imi *without showing it to me*; y eu **gochel** *to avoid them*.

(b) gwedy clybot yn Rufein **ry oresgyn** o Garawn ynys Brydein *after it had been heard in Rome that Carawon had conquered the island of Britain*. Sef a wnaethant lldiaw yn vwy no meint am **ry wneuthur** ac wynt kyfryw dwyll a hwnnw *they were exceeding wroth that such treachery had been done to them* RB. II. 75.

121. The verbal noun has no distinction of voice. If it depends upon **gallu** *to be able* or **dylyu** *to owe*, then, if the sense be passive, **gallu** and **dylyu** are put in the passive, e.g. gwreic **y gellir dywedut** idi y bot yn deckaf or gwraged *a woman of whom it can be said that she is the fairest of women*; ni a atwaenwn y neb a **dylyer y kymryt** y gantaw *we know those that ought to be taken from him* RB. 16, 20.

122. The agent with the verbal noun is commonly expressed by the preposition **o** following the noun (cf. the corresponding Irish construction with *do*), e.g. gwedy **gorwed ohonaw ef** ar traws yr auon *after he had lain across the river*; gwedy **ry gyscu ohonaw** *after he had slept*; rac dy **lad ohonaw** *lest thou shouldst be slain by him*. It may also be expressed by the preposition **y**, e.g. **tygu llyein mawr udunt wynteu** y vot yn wir *they swore great oaths that it was true* Hg. II. 131; **kymryt ofyn mawr y Vradmwnd** *Bradmwnd became sore afraid* Hg. II. 133; gwedy **udunt oresgyn** yr holl wlat *after they had conquered the whole country* RB. II. 116; gwedy **y Amic gaffel kennyat** *after Amic had got permission* Rev. Celt. IV. 218; nyt oed neb o vilwyr y vort gronn heb **idaw eu bwrw** oll yr llawr *there was no one of the warriors of the Round Table that he had not thrown down* Hg. I. 9; yr **y pawb disgynnu** *though everyone else dismounted* RB. 105, 7. Or the verbal noun may be preceded by a possessive adjective, e.g. gwedy **eu dyuot** yr weirglawd *after they came to the meadow* Hg. I. 9.

123. The verbal noun is often used in periphrasis with **gwneuthur** *to do*, e.g. **dysgynnu** ar y pren a **wnant** *they will alight upon the tree*; ac yna **ymlad** a **wnaem** ninneu am y maen *and then we would fight for the stone*; a **cherdet** recdi yr coet a

**oruc** ý uorwyn *and the maiden went on to the wood*; **rodi** penn y karw a **wnaethpwy**t y Enid *the head of the stag was given to Enid*.

**124.** The verbal noun may carry on the construction of a finite verb, e.g. drychael ý wýneb a oruc ynteu ac **ýdrych** arnei ýn lliidiawc *he raised his face and looked on her angrily* WB. 419; kennatau ý mab a orucpwyt, ae **dýuot** ýnteu ýr llýs *and the boy was sent for and came to the court* WB. 454; ac a dywawt na wnaethpwyt oe bleit ef drwc yn y byt y Briaf, namyn **rodi** Esonia idaw ef o achaws y dewret *and he said that on his part no evil in the world had been done to Priam, but that Hesione had been given to him for his valour* RB. II. 5; pan **bebillo** Lloegir in tir Ethlin a **guneuthur** Dýganhuý dinas degin *when the English shall encamp in the land of Ethlin, and make Deganwy a strong fort* BB. 28<sup>a</sup>; pan gyfodes y bobyl a **chael** Lawnsloet megys yn uarw *when the people rose and found Launcelot like one dead* Hg. I. 155.

**125.** Without a preceding finite verb the verbal noun may serve as an historical infinitive, e.g. tra yttoed vilwyr Arthur yn ymlad ar gaer, **rwygaw** o Gei y uagwyr a **chymryt** y carcharawr ar y geuyn *while Arthur's warriors were fighting with the city, Kei broke through the wall and took the prisoner on his back* RB. 131, 28; **deuy** yrof a Duw, heb ynteu. ae **dwyn** gyt ac ef yr uort oe hanuod, ac **erchi** idi wvyta yn uynych "*between God and me thou shalt come,*" said he. *And he took her to the table against her will and asked her repeatedly to eat* RB. 289; a gwedy disgynnu Arthur yr tir **dýuot** saint Iwerdon attaw y erchi nawd idaw *and after Arthur landed, the saints of Ireland came to him to ask his protection* RB. 136; **dýuot** (= **dyuot** a **oruc** RB. 126) ý porthawr ac **agori** ý porth *the porter came and opened the gate* WB. 487.

**126.** The verbal noun has special uses with certain prepositions.

(a) With **yn** the verbal noun has the force of a present participle (cf. the Irish construction with *oc*), e.g. val y gwelas y gwr...Peredur **yn dyuot** *as the man saw Peredur coming*; lleidyr...a geueis **yn lletratta** arnaf *a thief whom I caught stealing from me*. It is often used with the substantive verb to express continuing action; e.g. yr hynny hyt hediw **yd wyf i yn darparu gwled** ytti *from that time*

*till to-day I have been preparing a feast for thee* RB. 182; *canys ar y medwl hwnnw yd wyt titheu yn trigyaw since it is on this purpose that thou art fixed* RB. 253; *ual yd oed y sarff yn dyuot or garrec, y tharaw a oruc Owein a chledyf as the snake was coming from the rock, Owein struck it with a sword.* When the verbal noun precedes the verb **yn** may be added, but it is more commonly omitted, e.g. **yn eisted yd oedynt** ar garrec Hardlech *they were seated on the rock of Harlech* RB. 26, **yn adolwc y mae y ti arglwyd** (= **adolwyn** itti arglwyd **y mae** Erbin WB. p. 205) *ellwng Gereint y uab attaw he entertains thee, Lord, to let go his son Gereint to him* RB. 264; **dywedut** yrydunt ehun **y maent** *they are saying among themselves* WB. p. 211; **medylyaw yd wyf** *I am considering* RB. 75, 26 (but **yd wyf yn medylyaw** RB. 76, 22).

(b) With **gwedy** after the verbal noun has the force of a perfect participle (cf. the use of Irish *iar n-*), e.g. **y mae gwedy mynet** *gýd a Gwenhwývar y hýstavell he has gone with Gwenhwyvar to her chamber* WB. 408, **a phan yttoedynt gwedy gware** *talym, sef y klywynt kynnwryf mawr when they had played a while, they heard a great din* RB. 157; **a ffan welas y gwr...Gereint gwedy caffel dýrnawd** *and when the man saw that Gereint had received a blow* WB. 398; **Enýt a oed heb gýscu y mywn ýstauell wýdrin, ar heul yn týwýnnu ar y gwelý, ar dillad gwedy rý lithraw y ar y dwý uron ef** *Enid was sleepless in a chamber of glass, with the sun shining on the bed, while the clothes had slipped from his breast* WB. 416.

(c) With **can** with and **tan** under the verbal noun is used in sentences like the following: **Pascen...a gyffroes y bobyl honno... gan adaw** *udunt anheruynedic amylder o eur ac aryant Pascen stirred up that people, promising them an unlimited abundance of gold and silver* RB. II. 169; **tywyssawc Kernyw ae hymlynawd gan eu llad** *the prince of Cornwall followed them slaying them* RB. II. 191; **dyuot dracheuynt at Wenhwyuar dan gwynaw y dolur** *she came back to Gwenhwyuar bewailing her anguish* RB. 249; (**wynt**) **a gyrchassant parth a Ruuein dan anreithaw** *a wrthwynepei udunt they set out towards Rome, plundering all who resisted them* RB. II. 75.



## PARADIGM OF THE REGULAR VERB.

127. Types: **caru** *to love*, and the denominative **rydhaü** *to set free*. Forms in brackets are forms that have not been noted from a verb of the type.

## INDICATIVE.

## PRESENT AND FUTURE.

	sing.	plur.	sing.	plur.
1.	<b>car-af</b>	<b>car-wn</b>	<b>rydha-af</b>	<b>rydha-wn</b>
2.	<b>cer-i, cer-y</b>	<b>cer-wch</b>	<b>rydhe-y</b>	<b>rydhe-wch</b>
3.	<b>car</b>	<b>car-ant</b>	<b>rydha</b>	<b>rydha-ant</b>
pass.	<b>cer-ir</b>		<b>rydhe-ir</b>	

## IMPERFECT AND CONDITIONAL.

1.	<b>car-wn</b>	<b>car-em</b>	<b>rydha-wn</b>	( <b>rydha-em</b> )
2.	<b>car-ut</b>	<b>car-ewch</b>	<b>rydha-ut</b>	<b>rydha-ewch</b>
3.	<b>car-ei</b>	<b>cer-ynt</b>	<b>rydha-ei</b>	<b>rydhe-ynt</b>
pass.	<b>cer-it</b>		<b>rydhe-it</b>	

## PRETERITE AND PERFECT.

1.	<b>cereis</b>	<b>carass-am</b>	<b>rydheeis</b>	<b>rydhaass-am</b>
2.	<b>cereis-t</b>	<b>carass-awch</b>	<b>rydheeis-t</b>	<b>rydhaass-awch</b>
3.	<b>caras</b>	<b>carass-ant</b>	<b>rydha-awd</b>	<b>rydhaass-ant</b>
pass.	<b>carat</b>		<b>rydha-wyt</b>	

## PLUPERFECT.

1.	<b>carass-wn</b>	( <b>carass-em</b> )	( <b>rydhaass-wn</b> )	( <b>rydhaass-em</b> )
2.	<b>carass-ut</b>	( <b>carass-ewch</b> )	( <b>rydhaass-ut</b> )	( <b>rydhaass-ewch</b> )
3.	<b>carass-ei</b>	( <b>carass-ynt</b> )	<b>rydhaass-ei</b>	<b>rydhaass-ynt</b>
pass.	<b>carass-it</b>		( <b>rydhaass-it</b> )	

## IMPERATIVE.

1.		<b>car-wn</b>		( <b>rydha-wn</b> )
2.	<b>car</b>	<b>cer-wch</b>	<b>rydha</b>	<b>rydhe-wch</b>
3.	<b>car-et</b>	<b>car-ent</b>	<b>rydha-et</b>	( <b>rydha-ent</b> )
pass.	<b>car(h)-er</b>		<b>rydha-er</b>	

## SUBJUNCTIVE.

## PRESENT.

1.	car(h)-wyf	car(h)-om	rydha-wyf	rydha-om
	car(h)-oef			
2.	cer(h)-ych	car(h)-och	rydhe-ych	(rydha-och)
3.	car(h)-wy	car(h)-wynt		
	car(h)-oe	car(h)-oent		
	car(h)-o	car(h)-ont	rydha-o	rydha-wynt
				rydha-ont
pass.	car(h)-er		rydha-er	

## PAST.

1.	car(h)-wn	car(h)-em	rydha-wn	(rydha-em)
2.	car(h)-ut	car(h)-ewch	rydha-ut	rydha-ewch
3.	car(h)-ei	cer(h)-ynt	rydha-ei	rydhe-ynt
pass.	cer(h)-it		rydhe-it	

## REMARKS ON THE VERBAL PARADIGM.

## Present and Future Indicative.

128. (a) sg. 3. Many verbs show vowel infection (§ 5), e.g. *eirch* : *arch-af* *I ask*, *ceidw* : *cadw-af* *I preserve*, *ceiff* : *caff-af* *I get*, *geilw* : *galw-af* *I call*, *lleinw* : *llanw-af* *I fill*, *peir* : *par-af* *I cause*, *peirch* : *parch-af* *I honour*, *seif* : *sav-af* *I stand*, *teifi* : *tafi-af* *I cast*, *etteil* : *attal-af* *I stop*, *gweheird* : *gwa-hard-af* *I forbid*, *lleveir* : *llavar-af* *I speak*, *edeu*, *edy* : *adaw-af* *I leave*, *edeu* : *adaw-af* *I promise*, *gwerendeu*, *gwerendy* : *gwarandaw-af* *I listen*, *teu* : *taw-af* *I am silent*, *tereu*, *tery* : *traw-af* *I strike*, *gwyl* : *gwel-af* *I see*, *gweryt* : *gwared-af* *I help*, *cyll* : *coll-af* *I destroy*, *dyt* : *dod-af* *I put*, *llysg* : *llosg-af* *I burn*, *hyllt* : *holit-af* *I split*, *ryd* : *rod-af* *I give*, *tyrr* : *toir-af* *I break*, *egyr* : *agor-af* *I open*, *envyn* : *anvon-af* *I send*, *ervyll* : *arvoll-af* *I receive*, *erhys* : *arhos-af* *I await*, *deffry* : *deffro-af* *I arouse*, *ffy* : *ffo-af* *I flee*, *try* : *tro-af* *I turn*. It should be noted that, except in the 3 sg. of the present,

no vowel but **a** is subject to infection in the verb, e.g. 2 pl. **gwel-wch**, **rod-wch**, **ffo-wch** (cf. § 7 note 1).

NOTE.—Irregular are: **menyc**: **manag-af** *I shew*; **dyweit**: **dywed-af** *I say*.

(b) From the denominatives in **-hau**, **-a** spreads as an ending to other verbs, e.g. **cerda**: **cerdet** *to go*, **teruyna**: **tervynu** *to end*. Further, it is added again to the denominatives, e.g. **gnotta**: **gnotta-af** *I am wont*. Form **-áa** comes by contraction in Mod.W. **-ā**.

129. In the older language some other forms appear.

sg. 1. By **-af**, **-if** is sometimes found, e.g. **gwneif** *I will make* FB. 62, **cenif** *I will sing* MA. 140<sup>a</sup>, **gweinif** *I will serve* 142<sup>a</sup>, **cerif** *I will love* 147<sup>b</sup>.

sg. 2. In this person there is also an ending **-yd** (i.e. **yd**, cf. Bret. **-ez**, Corn. **-yth**), e.g. **ceryd** *thou lovest*, **gwesceryd** *thou scatterest*, **dywedyd** *thou sayest*, **nodyd** *thou protectest*, **clwydyd** *thou hearest*. Cf. Arch. Cambr. 1873, pp. 143 sq.

\* sg. 3. In O. Irish there are two forms of the ending, a longer which is found only in simple verbs, and a shorter which is used in compound verbs, and also in simple verbs when a negative or certain other particles precede, e.g. **berid** (from **\*bhereti**) *he carries*, but **ní beir** (from **\*bheret**) *he does not carry*, **do-beir** *he gives*. In Early Welsh there are traces of a similar distinction of ending, e.g. **pereid y ryeheu**. **ny phara ae goren** *the trenches remain, he who made them remains not* FB. 289; and in the proverb: **trengid golud, ní threing molud** *wealth perishes, fame perishes not*. Further examples of the ending are: **prinit** *buys*, **agit**, **egit** *goes* (= Mid.W. **eyt** FB. 304) in the O.W. glosses; **llicrid**: **llygru** *destroy*, **reuhiid**: **rewi** *freeze*, **ottid**: **odi** *snow*, **gosgupid** *sweeps*, **tohid**: **toi** *cover* BB. 45<sup>a</sup>, **meccid**: **magu** *nourish* BB. 45<sup>b</sup>, **briuhid**: **briwaw** *break* BB. 46<sup>a</sup>, cf. further Arch. Cambr. 1872, pp. 303 sq., 1873, pp. 145 sq. It will be seen that the **h** which appears in the old future (§ 130), and in the subjunctive has also made its way into these presents. In usage Mid.W. agrees with O.Ir. in that the longer ending is not found when the verb is preceded by a negative, it differs from O.Ir. in that the longer ending has spread to compound verbs. In early poetry there seem to be instances of a corresponding present in **-awt** (which would originally belong to **ā**-stems, cf. O.Bret. **-ot** in **fleriot** gl. **ridolet**, O.Ir. **caraid**, from **\*carāti**, *loves*, Lat. **amat**): **barýwhaud** *grows a beard*, **gvýrhaud** *bends* BB. 45<sup>a</sup>, **llewychawt** *shines* FB. 117, **gwisgawt** *clothes* FB. 307.

✓ pl. 3. In the O.W. glosses by the ending **-ant** in **itercludant** gl. **subigant** there appears also **-int** in **limnint** gl. **tondent**, **nertheint** gl. **armant**, **scamnehint** gl. **levant**. This ending seems to survive in Mid.W. poetry, e.g. **diurýssint** *hasten* BB. 45<sup>a</sup>, 54<sup>b</sup> (cf. **pan vryssyant** FB. 257), **dywedýnt** *will say* FB. 223, **torrynt** *will break* FB. 229. It seems probable that this served as a primary ending, but the matter demands further investigation.

Passive.—In the passive there is found in poetry and occasionally in proverbs a variety of forms in **-tor**, e.g. **megittor** *will be nourished* BB. 31<sup>b</sup>, **kenhittor** *will be sung* BB. 26<sup>b</sup>, **kwynitor** *is lamented* FB. 280; **kymysgetor** *is mixed* FB. 181, **kyrbwylletor** *will be mentioned* FB. 200;

x cf. *chwedid* 225, 22

*traethattor will be discoursed* FB. 137, *canhator is sung* FB. 209; *brithottor is variegated* BB. 17<sup>a</sup>. Cf. Arch. Cambr. 1872 pp. 305 sq., Dottin, *Désinences verbales en R*, 177 sq. These forms, which are clearly based on the longer form of the 3 sg. act., are especially common in the poetry of the twelfth century. Their syntactical function is present or future.

130. In Early Welsh there are also some specially future forms :

sg. 3 (a) *-hawt* (i.e. *-hawd*), e.g. *parahaud will continue* BB. 50<sup>b</sup>, *briuhau will break* BB. 29<sup>b</sup>, *methawd will fail* WB. 457, *lletawd will spread* FB. 236, *llwyprawd ( : llwybraw) will travel* MA 232<sup>b</sup>. Cf. CZ. III. 402.

(b) After a negative, *-haw* : *ny chaffaw will not get* BB. 4<sup>b</sup>, *nys gwnaw will not make* FB. 126; but also a *wnaw who will make* FB. 150.

Pl. 3. *-hawnt*, e.g. O.W. *cuinhaunt gl. dellebunt*, *gwnahawnt will make* FB. 124, *pebyllyawnt will encamp* FB. 212.

Pass. *-hawr*, e.g. *agorawr will be opened* WB. 456, *ffohawr there will be flight* FB. 126, *talhaur will be paid* BB. 16<sup>a</sup>, *nyn lladawr we shall not be killed* WB. 475, *edmyccaur will be honoured* BB. 29<sup>b</sup>. Cf. Dottin, *op. cit.*, 169 sq., CZ. III. 403.

NOTE.—There also occur forms of the type of *-ettor*, *-attor* above, e.g. *torredawd will break* FB. 236, *llettatawd will spread* FB. 129, *dÿgettaur will be led* BB. 13<sup>a</sup>, *lloscetawr will be burned* FB. 119, *galwetawr will be called* FB. 165.

### Imperfect Indicative and Conditional.

131. sg. 3. (a) In poetry there is also an ending *-i*, infecting a preceding *a*, e.g. *ceri loved*, *nodi protected*, *torri broke*, *clywi heard*. Cf. Arch. Cambr. 1874, p. 117, Cymmrod. IX. 54, Rev. Celt. VI. 16.

(b) There is also an ending *-at* (i.e. *-ad*); see the irregular verbs *gwybot* (§ 143), *adnabot* (§ 144), *pieu* (§ 160), and the verb *bot* (§ 152). So in the plup. *ry dywedysydat had said* MA. 485<sup>b</sup>.

pl. 3. In this person there is an ending *-eint* :—*achubeint* WB. 466 = pass. *achubit* RB. 110, 28, *caneint* LA. 95 = *cenynt* Hg. II. 447, *deueint*, *syrthyeint* LA. 97, *traweint* Hg. II. 184, *llauuryeint* ib. 213; cf. the subjunctive ket *ÿvein though they drank* FB. 66, *wyntwy yn llad gyt as ledeint they slaying though they slew them* FB. 276 = *a chin ri llethid ve latÿsseint and before they were slain they had slain* FB. 38, cf. Cymmrod. IX. 67. This *-eint* is an analogical formation to sg. 3 *-ei*.

NOTE.—More peculiar is *nÿ lesseint* BB. 32<sup>a</sup> which seems to mean *they were not slain* (cf. *ÿt lesseint* FB. 285, *lleseint* MA. 194<sup>a</sup>), apparently based on *llas was slain*; cf. further *meithyeint was reared?* *lledeseint were slain?* *colledeint were destroyed?* FB. 264, MA. 94<sup>b</sup>.

## Preterite and Perfect Indicative Active.

**132. sg. 3.** In this person there is a variety of endings.

(a) **-as**, e.g. *bradas betrayed*, *caffas got*, *gwelas saw*.

(b) **-es**, e.g. *agores opened*, *dodes put*, *gweles saw*.

(c) **-is**, e.g. *erchis asked*, *edewis left*, *gelwis called*.

(d) **-wys**, becoming **-ws**, e.g. *bendigwys* and *bendigws blessed*, *cyscwys* and *cyscws slept*. In the southern dialect **-ws** became the characteristic ending in this person.

(e) **-awd** (i.e. *awđ*), e.g. *parawd caused*, *cerdawd journeyed*, *parhaawd continued*. This is an encroaching ending, whence comes the Mod. literary Welsh ending **-od**.

NOTE.—In early poetry there is an absolute ending **-sit** (corresponding to the present ending **-it** (§ 129), e.g. *kewssit got*, *prynessid bought*, *delyessid (: dala) held*. Cf. Arch. Cambr. 1873, pp. 151 sq. It corresponds to the O. Bret. ending in *tinsit* gl. *sparsit*, *toreusit* gl. *attriuit*.

**1 pl., 3 pl.** In these persons by **-sam**, **-sant**, there appear also **-som**, **-sont**.

**Plur.**—In the plural there are three types of formation, (a) **-sam**, etc., (b) **-assam**, etc., (c) **-yssam**, etc., e.g.—

(a) *cawsam*, *cawsawch*, *cawsant*: *caffael get*, *kymersam*, *kymersant*: *cymryt take*, *gwelsam*, *gwelsant*: *gwelet see*.

(b) *dywedassam*: *dywedut say*, *lladassant*: *llad slay*, *nessaassant*: *nessaü approach*.

(c) *dodyssam*, *dodyssant*: *dodi place*, *kwplayssam*: *kwplaü complete*, *nessayassant*: *nessaü approach*.

**133.** In Mid.W., as in Mid.Ir., the **s**-preterite has become the prevalent formation, in which the other types of the preterite tend to merge. But particularly in poetry, and especially in the 3 sg., there are examples of two other types of the preterite.

(a) The **t**-preterite (corresponding to the Irish **t**-preterite, e.g. *asbert he said*: *asbeir says*).

*canu sing*: sg. 1 *ceint* and *ceintum*, sg. 2 *ceuntost*, sg. 3 *cant*.

*gwan pierce*: sg. 1 *gweint*, sg. 3 *gwant*.

*cymryt take*: sg. 3 *kymerth*, *kymyrth*.

*diffryt protect*: sg. 3 *differth*, *diffyrth*.

**mynet** *go*: **aeth** (= Ir. *acht*) *went* (§ 140); in composition **doeth** (§ 141), and sg. 1 **ymdeith** *went about*, sg. 3 **ymdaeth**.

**gwneuthur** *make*: **gwnaeth** (§ 142).

**magu** *nourish*: sg. 3 **maeth**, pl. 3 **maethant**.

**dyrreith** *returned* (√reg-).

**amwyn** *protect*: sg. 3 **amwyth**.

**dydwyn** *bring*: sg. 3 **dydwyth**.

(b) Forms with reduplication, or unreduplicated forms of the type of O.Ir. **rāith** *ran*: **rethid** *runs*.

**clybot** *hear*: sg. 1 **kigleu** (= Ir. *cūala* from \**cuklova*) and **kiglef**, sg. 3 **kigleu**.

**adnabot** *recognize*: **atwaen** (§ 144).

**dywedut** *say*: sg. 3 **dywawt**, also **dywot**, **dywat** (cf. Ir. *adcuaid* *has related* from \**ad-co-fāith*).

**godiwes** *overtake*: sg. 3 **godiwawd**.

**gwaret** *help*: sg. 3 **gwarawt** (= Ir. *fo-rāith* *helped*).

The same form of inflexion is exhibited by:—

**amwyn** *defend*: sg. 3 **amuc**.

**dwyn** *lead*: sg. 1 **dugum**, sg. 2 **dugost**, sg. 3 **duc**, pl. 1 **dugam**, pl. 3 **dugant**.

**gwneuthur** *make*: **goruc** (§ 142).

Here seems to belong also **amkawd** *said*, pl. 3 **amkeudant**, frequent in the WB. text of Kulhwch and Olwen.

### Preterite and Perfect Indicative Passive.

134. In origin the Welsh like the Irish preterite passive developed out of a past participle passive in **-to-**, identical in formation with Latin participles like *captus*, *amatus*, etc.

(a) In **llas** (= Ir. *-lass*): **llad** *slay* and **gwys** (= Ir. *-fess*): **gwybot** *know*, the **t** of the suffix together with the dental of the root has become **ss**, **s** (§ 11a; cf. Lat. *missus*: *mitto*, etc.).

(b) **-at**, e.g. **gwelat**: **gwelet** *see*, **caffat**: **caffael** *get*.

(c) **-et**, e.g. **dodet**: **dodi** *place*, **llosged**: **llosgi** *burn*.

(d) **-it**, e.g. **edewit**: **adaw** *promise*, **erchit**: **erchi** *ask*, **gelwit**: **galw** *call*.

(e) **-wyt**, liable to become **-wt**, e.g. **cymrwyt**: **cymryt** *take*, **hewyt**; **heü** *sow*, **lladwyt**: **llad** *slay*, **kennatawyt**: **kennataü** *send*.

(f) Forms in **-pwyt**, e.g. **dywespwyt** and **dywetpwyt**: **dywedut** *say*, **clywspwyt**, **clywyspwyt**: **clybot** *hear*, **dechreuspwyt**: **dechreu** *begin*, **roespwyt**: **roi** *give*, **kanpwyt**: **canu** *sing*, **gwanpwyt**: **gwanu** *pierce*, **ducpwyt**: **dwyn** *lead*, **maethpwyt**: **magu** *nourish*, **gwassanaethpwyt**: **gwassanaethu** *serve*, **talpwyt**: **talu** *pay*. Cf. *Cymmrod.* IX. 75 sq.

### Pluperfect Indicative.

135. Corresponding to the three types in the plural of the preterite active, there are in the pluperfect three types (a) **-swn**, (b) **-asswn**, (c) **-ysswn**, e.g. :—

(a) **cawssei**: **caffael** *get*, **gwelsei**, **gwelsynt**, pass. **gwelsit**: **gwelet** *see*, **edewssit**: **adaw** *leave*.

(b) **mynasswn**: **mynessynt**, pass. **mynassit**: **mynnu** *desire*, **cysgassei**: **cysgu** *sleep*, **lladassant**, pass. **lladessit**: **llad** *slay*, **gnottaessynt**: **gnottaü** *be accustomed*.

(c) **archyssei**, pass. **erchyssit**, **archyssit**: **erchi** *ask*, **managyssei**: **menegi** *shew*, **lladyssit**: **llad** *slay*, **mynnessynt**: **mynnu** *demand*, **gnottayssei**: **gnottaü** *be accustomed*.

136. (a) In the active there is a periphrastic pluperfect with **-oed** *was* in **athoed** (§ 140), **doethoed** (§ 141), **gwnaethoed** (§ 142). Forms in **-oed** occur also from **caffael** *get*, e.g., sg. 1 **cawssoe-dwn**, sg. 2 **cawssloedut**, sg. 3 **cawssloed**, **cassoed**, **cawssloedyat**, pl. 3 **cassoedynt**, pass. **cassoedit**; further **mynnassoed**: **mynnu**; **planasoed**; **rodassoed**, **roessoed**; **rossoed**, pass. **rossoedit**: **rodi**. Cf. *Cymmrod.* IX. 76 sq.

(b) In the passive there are some periphrastic forms with **-oed** :—sg. 3 **archadoed** *had been asked*: **erchi** *ask*, **dysgadoed**: **dysgu** *teach*, **ganadoed**, **ganydoed**: **geni** *be born*, **managadoed**: **menegi** *shew*; further **cathoed**: **caffael** *get*. Cf. *Cymmrod.* IX. 77.

## Imperative.

**137. sg. 2.** From denominatives in **-haü** **a** spreads as an ending to other verbs, e.g. **prydera**: **pryderu** *be anxious*, **paratoa**: **paratoï** *prepare*. Further **a** is added again to the denominatives, e.g. **cwplaa**: **cwplaü** *complete*, **naccaä**: **naccaü** *refuse*. From **-ää** comes Mod.W. **-ä**.

**sg. 3.** There appears sometimes an ending **-it**, e.g. **bernit** (v.l. **barned**): **barnu** *judge* MA. 182<sup>b</sup>, **elhid**: **mynet** *go* WB. 31<sup>a</sup>, **gobwyllit**: **gobwyllaw** *take heed* FB. 199, **gwrthledit**: **gwrthlad** *repulse* LA. 26, **gwrthottit**: **gwrthot** *repel* FB. 125, **rwydheyt**: **rwydhaü** *make easy* RB. 228, **madeuit**: **maddeu** *forgive* Hg. II. 185, **rothit**: **rodi** *give* BB. 47<sup>a</sup>. It will be observed that these forms shew the subjunctive stem.

## Present Subjunctive.

**138.** In the 3 sg. and 3 pl. the **o** forms become the regular forms in Mid.W. Sometimes **o** spreads to the 1 sg., e.g. **gwysgof** WB. 97. In the pass. an **wy** form appears in **rothwyr** FB. 109.

NOTE.—For **duch** *may he lead*, **gwares** *may he help*, see § 110, note 2.

## Past Subjunctive.

**139.** In the passive by **-it** there is found sometimes **-et**: **cladhet** WB. 469 = **cledit** RB. 112: **cladu** *bury*, **gofynnet** WB. p. 220 = **gouynnit** RB. 286: **govynnu** *ask*, **llafassed**: **llavassu** *dare* BB. 27<sup>a</sup>.

## IRREGULAR VERBS.

**140. mynet** *go*.

## INDICATIVE.

## PRESENT AND FUTURE.

sing.	plur.
1. <b>af</b>	<b>awn</b>
2. <b>ey</b>	<b>ewch</b>
3. <b>a</b>	<b>ant</b>
pass. <b>eir</b>	

NOTE 1.—sg. 3 absolute O.W. **agit**, **egit**, Mid.W. **eyt**.



## IMPERFECT AND CONDITIONAL.

	sing.	plur.
1.	awn	aem
2.	aut	
3.	aey	eynt
pass.	eit	

## PRETERITE AND PERFECT.

(a) 1.	euthum	aetham
2.	aethost	aethawch
3.	aeth	aethant, aethont
pass.	aethpwyt	

NOTE 2.—sg. 3 absolute eithyd FB. 179, 188.

(b) 1.	athwyf, adwyf, ethwyf,	ethym
	edwyf	
2.	athwyt, adwyt	
3.	ethyw, edyw	ethynt, edynt

NOTE 3.—Forms (b) have a perfect sense, cf. § 141, note 4.

## PLUPERFECT.

1.	athoedwn	
2.		
3.	athoed, adoed	athoedynt

## IMPERATIVE.

1.	awn
2.	dos
3.	aet
	ewch
	aent

NOTE 4.—sg. 3 also elhid (§ 137).

## SUBJUNCTIVE.

## PRESENT.

1.	el(h)wyf	el(h)om
2.	el(h)ych	el(h)och
3.	el	el(h)wynt, el(h)ont
pass.	el(h)er	

NOTE 5.—Also, in future sense, sg. 3 aho RB. 140, 16, pl. 3 ahont FB. 128.

	sing.	PAST.	plur.
1.	el(h)wn		
2.	el(h)ut		
3.	el(h)ei	el(h)ynt	
pass.	(el(h)it)		

141. *dyvot* *come*.

## INDICATIVE.

## PRESENT AND FUTURE.

1.	deuaf	deuwn, down
2.	deuy, doy	deuwch
3.	daw	deuant, doant

× || NOTE 1.—sg. 2 *doit* (i.e. *doyd*) BB. 51<sup>b</sup>1.

NOTE 2.—In poetry there is also another set of forms in a future sense:

1.	dybydaf	
	{ dybyd, dyvyd, dybydawt	dybydant
3.	{ deubyd	
	{ dypi, dybi, dyvi	
	{ deupi, <u>deubi</u>	

NOTE 3.—Preceded by *dy-*: sg. 3 *dydaw*, pl. 3 *dydeuant*, pass. *dydeuhawr*.

## IMPERFECT AND CONDITIONAL.

1.	down	
2.	dout, deuyt	
3.	deuei, deuheï, doey,	doynt
	doi	
pass.	deuit	

## PRETERITE AND PERFECT.

(a) 1.	deuthum, doethum	doetham
2.	deuthost, doethost,	doethawch, doethoch
	daethost	
3.	doeth, deuth, daeth	deuthant, doethant,
		dothant, doethont
pass.	deuthpwyd, doethpwyd	

	sing.	plur.
(b) 1.		
2.	dyvuost	
3.	dybu, dyvu, deubu	dybuant, dyvuant
(c) 1.	dothwyf, dodwyf	dodym, deuthym
2.	dothwyt, dodwyt	dodywch, doethywch
3.	doethyw, dothyw, dodyw, dedyw	dodynt, dethynt

NOTE 4.—Forms (b) are chiefly poetical, but **dyvuost**, **dyvu**, **dyvuant** occur in the prose of WB. Forms (c) are perfect in sense; in later Mid. W. they are replaced by forms (a), e.g. **deuth** RB. 126, 9 = **dodýw** WB. 486, **deuthum** RB. 105, 21 = **dothwýf** WB. 459, **doeth** RB. 115, 25, **deuth** RB. 126, 9, = **dodýw** WB. 473, 486.

## PLUPERFECT.

- |    |   |                         |
|----|---|-------------------------|
| 1. | dathoedywn                              |                         |
| 2. |   |                         |
| 3. | doethoed, daethoed,<br>dathoed, dothoed | doethoedynt, dothoedynt |

## IMPERATIVE.

- |    |              |               |
|----|--------------|---------------|
| 1. |              | down          |
| 2. | dyret, dabre | dowch         |
| 3. | deuet, doet  | deuent, doent |

NOTE 5.—There is also a 3 sg. **deuit** Hg. II. 51, and **delit** Hg. I. 4, 307.

## SUBJUNCTIVE.

## PRESENT.

- |       |           |                       |
|-------|-----------|-----------------------|
| 1.    | del(h)wyf | del(h)om              |
| 2.    | del(h)ych | del(h)och             |
| 3.    | del       | del(h)wynt, del(h)ont |
| pass. | del(h)er  |                       |

NOTE 6.—There are also forms sg. 1 **dybwyf**, sg. 3 **dyppo**, **dyffo**, **dyvo**, \***deupo**, **dideuho**, pl. 3 **dyffont**, pass. **dyffer**.

## PAST.

- |    |          |            |
|----|----------|------------|
| 1. | del(h)wn |            |
| 2. | del(h)ut | del(h)ewch |
| 3. | del(h)ei | del(h)ynt  |

NOTE 7.—There is also 3 sg. **dybei** and **dyffei**.

142. gwneuthur *to make*.

## PRESENT AND FUTURE.

	sing.	plur.
1.	gwnaf	gwnawn
2.	gwney	gwnewch
3.	gwna	gwnant
pass.	gwneir	

NOTE 1.—Fut. sg. 3 gunahaud BB. 27<sup>b</sup>, gwnawt FB. 224, gwnaw FB. 126, 150, pl. 3 gwnahawnt FB. 124.

## IMPERFECT AND CONDITIONAL.

1.	gwnawn	gwnaem
2.	gwnaut	gwnaewch
3.	gwnaei	gwnaent
pass.	gwneit	

## PRETERITE AND PERFECT.

(a) 1.	gorugum	gorugam
2.	gorugost	
3.	goruc	gorugant
pass.	gorucpwyt	
(b) 1.	gwneuthum	gwnaetham, gwnaethom
2.	gwnaethost	gwnaethawch
3.	gwnaeth, gwneuth	gwnaethant, gwnaethont
pass.	gwnaethpwyt	

NOTE 2.—In poetry there is also sg. 3 *goreu*, cf. Mid. Bret. *guereu*.

NOTE 3.—The *gwnaeth* forms encroach at the expense of the *goruc* forms, e.g. *gorucpwyt* WB. 452, 477, 487 = *gwnaethpwyt* RB. 100, 118, 127.

## PLUPERFECT.

1.	gwnathoedwn	
2.	gwnaethodut	
3.	gwnaethoed, gwnath-	gwnathoedynt
	oed, gwnadoed	
pass.	gwnathoedit	

## IMPERATIVE.

	sing.	plur.
1.		gwnawn
2.	gwna	gwnewch
3.	gwnaet	gwnaent
pass.	gwnel(h)er	

## SUBJUNCTIVE.

## PRESENT.

1.	gwnel(h)wyf	
2.	gwnel(h)ych	gwnel(h)och
3.	gwnel	gwnel(h)wynt, gwnel(h)- ont
pass.	gwnel(h)er	

NOTE 4.—sg. 3 also *gunelwŷ* BB. 24<sup>a</sup>, *gunaho* BB. 35<sup>b</sup>, *gwnaho* FB. 119, \* 235, pl. 3 *gvnahont* BB. 31<sup>a</sup>, *gwnahon* FB. 155. With fut. ending *gwnelawr* FB. 213.

## PAST.

1.	gwnel(h)wn	
2.	gwnel(h)ut	
4.	gwnel(h)ei	gwnel(h)ynt
pass.	gwnel(h)it	

143. *gwybot* *know*.

## INDICATIVE.

## PRESENT.

1.	gwnn	gwdam, gwdom
2.	gwydost, gwdost	gwydawch, gwdawch, gwdoch
3.	gwyr	gwydant, gwdant
pass.	gwys	

## IMPERFECT.

1.	gwydwn, gwydywn	gwydem, gwydyem
2.	gwydut, gwydyut	
3.	gwydat, gwydyat	gwydynt
pass.	gwydit	

## ITERATIVE PRESENT AND FUTURE.

	sing.	plur.
1.	gwybydaf	
2.	gwybydy	gwybydwch
3.	gwybyd	gwybydant
pass.	gwybydir	

NOTE 1.—In poetry there is also 3 sg. *gwybi*.

## ITERATIVE IMPERFECT AND CONDITIONAL.

1.		gwybydem
2.	gwybydut	gwybydwch
3.	gwybydei	
pass.	gwybydit	

NOTE 2.—This comes to be used for the past subjunctive, e.g. *Bei ath wybydem if we had known thee* FB. 122.

## PRETERITE AND PERFECT.

1.	gwybuum	
2.	gwybuost	
3.	gwybu	gwybuant
pass.	gwybuwyd	

## PLUPERFECT.

3.	gwybuyssynt
pass.	gwybuassit

## IMPERATIVE.

1.		gwybydwn
2.	gwybyd	gwybydwch
3.	gwybydet, gwypet	gwybydent
pass.	gwybyder	

## SUBJUNCTIVE.

## PRESENT.

1.	gwypwyf	gwypom
2.	gwypych	gwypoch
3.	gwypwy, gwypo	gwypwynt, gwypont
pass.	gwyper	

	sing.	PAST.	plur.
1.	gwypwn		
2.	gwyput		
3.	gwypei		gwypynt

144. *adnabot* *recognize*.

## INDICATIVE.

## PRESENT.

	1.	adwaen, adwen, atwen	atwaenwn
	2.	atwaenost	etweynwch, atweynwch, etwenwch
2.	3.	edwyn, atwen	atwaenant

## IMPERFECT.

	1.	atwaenwn	adwaenam
	2.	atwaenut	
	3.	atwaenat, atwaeniat	atwaenynt
pass.		etweinit	

## ITERATIVE PRESENT AND FUTURE.

	1.	adnabydaf, etnebydaf	adnabydwn
	2.	adnabydy	
	3.	adnebyd, ednebyd	adnabydant
pass.		adnabydir	

## ITERATIVE IMPERFECT AND CONDITIONAL.

	1.	adnabydem
	2.	
	3.	adnebydei

## PRETERITE AND PERFECT.

	1.	adnabuum	adnabuam
	2.		
	3.	adnabu	adnabuant

	IMPERATIVE.
sing.	plur.
1.	
2. ednebyd, adnebyd	adnebydwch
3.	

## SUBJUNCTIVE.

## PRESENT.

1.	adnapom
2. adnepych	
3. adnapo	adnappoent, adnappont
pass. adnaper	

## PAST.

1.	
2.	
3. adnapei	
pass. adnepit	

145. caffael, caffel, cahel, cael *get*.

## INDICATIVE.

Pres. and Fut.:—**caffaf**, **ceffy**, **ceiff**, etc.; also **caf**, **cehy**, **cey**, etc.

Imperf. and Cond.:—**caffwn**, etc., also **cawn**, etc.

Pret. and Perf.:—**ceveis**, **ceis**, **ceveist**, **cavas**, **cawssam**, **cawssawch**, **cawssant**, **cawssont**; pass. **caffat**, **cavat**, **cahat**, **cat**.

Cawssant 178, 31 Pluperf.:—(a) **cawsswn**, etc., (b) **cawssodwn**, etc. (§ 136<sup>a</sup>).

## SUBJUNCTIVE.

Pres.:—**caffwyf**, etc.

Past:—**caffwn**, etc., also **cahwn**, **cawn**, etc.

NOTE.—For an enumeration of forms see Cymmrod. IX. 111 sq.



**146. rodi, roi** *give*.

The peculiarity of this verb is that it has forms with and without **d**, e.g. ind. pres. sg. 2 **rody** and **roy**, imper. sg. 2 **ro**, subj. pres. sg. 3 **rotho**, **rodo** and **ro**. In the ind. pret. by **rodeis**, **rodeist**, **rodes** occur **roesum**, **roesost**, **roes**, and in the pass. by **rodet**, also **roespwynt**. In the plup. by the regular forms occur sg. 2 **roessut**, sg. 3 **roessei**, **royssei**, **roessoed**, **rasoed**, pl. 3 **rossoedynt**.

**147. tawr, dawr**.

This verb is used impersonally, e.g. **ny-m-tawr** *it does not concern me* RB. 284, 28, **pathawr** (= **pa-th-dawr**) *what does it concern thee?* RB. 279, 19, **ny-m-torei** WB. 172 = **ny-m-torei** RB. I. 238, *it would not concern me*, **ni-m-dorbi** BB. 30<sup>b</sup>. In the same sense is found the compound **didawr**; verb. noun **didarbot** Hg. I. 320.

**148. moes** *give*.

Only as imperative :—sg. 2 **moes**, pl. 2 **moeswch**.

**149. hwde** *take*. Used only as imperative.**150. med** *says*.

Inflected in the present and imperfect; it is used in quotation, e.g. a **wdest di pwy yw?** heb **hi**. **gwnn**, heb **ynteu**. **Edyrn uab Nud yw, med** ef "*dost thou know who he is?*" *says she*. "*Yes,*" *said he*. "*He is Edyrn son of Nudd, he says,*" RB. 259; **y gouynnei beth yssyd yman**. **Broch, medynt wynteu** *he asked what was there*. "*A badger,*" *said they* RB. 15.

**151. heb** *says*.

This word, of adverbial origin and uninflected, is used like **Ir. ol** to give the very words of the speaker, **heb ef** *says he*, **heb wynt** *they say*, etc.

Before a proper name **heb** is followed by **y**, **yr**, e.g. **heb y Goewin**, **heb y Gwenhwyfar**, **heb yr Arthur**. The same is not infrequently found before a pronoun, e.g. **heb y mi** RB. 32, 7, **heb yr ynteu** RB. 245, 181 = **heb ynteu** WB. 386, p. 217, **heb yr ef** WB. 386 = **heb ef** RB. 245, **heb yr wynt** WB. 185 = **eb wynt** WB. p. 93<sup>a</sup>; cf. *Mod. W. ebr*. No satisfactory explanation of this has yet been given.

THE SUBSTANTIVE VERB *bot* to be.

## Paradigm.

## INDICATIVE.

## 152. PRESENT.

	sing.	plur.
1.	wyf	ym
2.	wyt	ywch
3.	iw, yw	ynt
	mae	maent
	oes	
	ys	
	neut	
	nyt <i>is not</i>	
	nat <i>is not</i> (dependent)	
	os <i>if it is</i>	
	yssit <i>there is</i>	yssydynt
	ossit <i>if there is</i>	
	yssyd, syd, yssy, sy, rel. <i>who, which is, are</i>	
	Impersonal ys, ydys	

## PAST.

1.	oedwn	oedem
2.	oedut, oedyt	oedewch
3.	oed, oedat, oedyat	oedynt
	Impersonal oedet	

NOTE 1.—There are also forms preceded by *ytt*, *yd*: *yttwyf*, *yttiwi*, *ydiw*, *yttoedwn*, etc.

## ITERATIVE PRESENT AND FUTURE.

1.	bydaf	bydwn
2.	bydy	bydwch
3.	byd	bydant

NOTE 2.—Specially future forms: sg. 3 *bythawt*, *bydhawt*, *bydawt*, *biawt*, *bi*; pl. 3 *bydawnt*.

NOTE 3.—In poetry there seems to be a consuetudinal sg. 3 *bit*, cf. FB. 245, 247, where the imperative sense does not suit.

## ITERATIVE IMPERFECT AND CONDITIONAL.

	sing.	plur.
1.	bydwn	bydem
2.	bydut	bydewch
3.	bydei	bydynt
impers.	bydit	

NOTE 4.—Poetical forms: sg. 3 buei, **bwyat**, pl. 3 buyint (i.e. **bwyynt**).

## PRETERITE AND PERFECT.

1.	buum, bum	buam
2.	buost	buawch
3.	bu	buant, buont
impers.	buwyt	

## PLUPERFECT.

1.	buasswn	
2.	buassut	
3.	buassei	buassynt, buessynt, buyssynt

## IMPERATIVE.

1.		bydwn
2.	byd	bydwch
3.	bit, boet, poet	bint

NOTE 5.—**bynt** is clearly imperative BCh. 17, cf. **bint** LA. 81. RB. 105 has **bint** where WB. 457 has the future **bythawd**.

## SUBJUNCTIVE.

## PRESENT.

1.	bwyf, bof	bom, bwym	
2.	bych	boch	
3.	bo	<u>bwynt</u> , boent, bont	x

NOTE 6.—There are, particularly in poetry, analogical subjunctive forms from the indicative stem: sg. 1 **bydwyf**, sg. 2 **bydych**, sg. 3 **bytho**, pl. 3 **bydont**.

## PAST.

1.	bewn	beym
2.	beut	
3.	bei	beynt

NOTE 7.—Both in poetry and in prose the past indicative is often used for the subjunctive, e.g. kyny **bydwn** WB. 172=kyn ny **bewn** RB. 238. The impersonal pan **uythit** WB. 104=pan **vydit** RB. 76 is a subjunctive form based on the indicative.

REMARKS ON *bot.*

## Present and Imperfect.

**153.** The precise syntactical functions of the various forms of these tenses still require a detailed investigation, particularly their uses in early poetry. From the material to hand the following points of prose usage may be noted, (A) where the forms have the function of a substantive verb predicating existence, (B) where the forms are merely copular.

**154. A. Substantive verb.**

(a) In the 3 sg. pres. *he is*, etc., is expressed by **mae**, pl. **maent**, unless the verb is preceded by the negative or by other preverbal particles and conjunctions which are not followed by the particle **yd** (§ 93 g sq.), e.g. yma **y mae** brenhin Iwerdon *here is the king of Ireland*; o ellwng Riannon or poen **y mae** yndaw *from releasing Riannon from the punishment in which she is*; nat gan y vod **y mae** yn dyuot *that it is not with his will that he is coming*; **y mae** y enw yn barawt *his name is ready*; **y maent** yn symudaw enweu *they are changing names*. **Mae** is also used in the sense of *where are?* e.g. **mae** Ynwl iarll . . . ae wreic ae uerch. **maent** (= **y maent** RB. 256) yn y loft racco *where are Ynwl and his wife and his daughter?* *They are in the chamber yonder* WB. 400. In the sense of *there is*, *there are* **yssit**, **yssydynt** are found, e.g. **yssit** nas keffych *there is something that you will not get* RB. 121 sq.; chwedleu porth y gennynt. **ysydynt** gennyf *hast thou tidings of the gate?* *I have* RB. 126. If the verb is preceded by a negative, etc., then (a) if the subject is definite **ytti**, **ydyw**, pl. **yttynt**, **ydynt** are used, (β) if the subject is indefinite **oes** is used, e.g.—

(a) **ny** **ytti** y clawr y lle kyntaf y kefeist *the board is not where thou didst get it first* RB. 241; **nat ydiw** y uorwyn honno yn y byt *that that maiden is not in the world* RB. 113; **ny** **yttynt** namyn pedwar *they are only four* CM. 46; **neut ydynt** yn gynyon boneu vy esgyll *the stumps of my wings are like wedges* RB. 130; **a ytti** **w** Kei yn llŷs Arthur. **ytti** **w** *is Kei in Arthur's court?* *He is* WB.

(β) **nyt oes** yndi neb nyth adnapo *there is no one in it who will not recognize thee* RB. 3; **a oes** borthawr. **oes** *is there a porter?* *There is* RB. 103. With **o** *if*, the definite form is **ot ydiw**, e.g. **ot ydiw** yg karchar *if he is in prison* RB. 179, the indefinite **ossit**, e.g. **osit** rann y mi oth uab di *if I have any part in thy son* RB. 109; **osid** ay hammehuo *if there is any one who doubts it* BCh. 53. The relative form is **yssyd**, e.g. y gwr hir **yssyd** yno *the tall man who is there*; pa ryw chwedleu **yssyd** gennyt. **nyt oes** namyn da *what kind of news hast thou?* *Only good news.*

NOTE 1.—In poetry **yssit** is found also with a definite subject, e.g. **yssit** imi teir kadeir *I have three seats* FB. 154; **yssit** ym argluyd *I have a lord* MA. 176<sup>a</sup>. It seems to be a disappearing form, cf. **y mae** yni beth a wnelom *we have something to do* Hg. 1. 10, **y mae** ym .a. wnelwyf 69. **Ossit** also seems to be a disappearing form; for **ossit** a uynho *if there is anyone who desires* WB. 122, RB. 197 has: **or byd** neb kyehofnet.

(b) In the first and second persons the subject is always definite, and here after negatives etc., **yttwyf**, **ydwyf** are usual both in the present and in the imperfect, e.g. **nyt yttwyf** (= **nyt ydwyf** i WB. 437) yn ansawd *I am not in a condition* WB. p. 219; **nyt yttoedwn** i yn holi dim ytti *I was not claiming anything from thee* RB. 5. In the third persons of the imperfect there is in the Mabinogion a very general distinction after negatives etc., between (a) **yttöed**, **ydoed** when the subject is definite, (b) **oed** when the subject is indefinite, e.g. (a) **ydrých yn ý chýlch a oruc a yttöed** ef yn deffroi *she looked about her to see if he was stirring* WB. 424; **pann yttöed** (= **pan ydoed** WB. 99) y dyd yn dyuot *when the day was coming* RB. 72; **tra yttöed** ef yn hynny *while he was in that* RB. 133; **ýný ýttoýd ý** chwýs ar gwaet yn dwyn lleuuer ý llýgeit udunt *until the sweat and the blood were taking the light of their eyes from them* WB. 398; (b) **nyt oed** dim yno *there was nothing there* RB.; Gereint a ofynnnawd y wr y ty **a oed** getymdeithon idaw . . . oes, heb ynteu *Gereint asked the master of the house if he had friends. "I have," said he.*

NOTE 2.—But there are a good many instances of (b for (a): **nat oes** (= **nat ydiw** RB. 113) hi yn y byt *that she is not in the world* WB. 470; kwt ynt plant y gwr *where are the children of the man?* WB. 453; **pan oed** y dyd yn goleuhau *when the day was becoming light* RB. 72; **yny oed** yn y eidaw ef *Arduddy till Arduddy was in his possession* RB. 77; **yny oed** y

gwaet yn lliaw y llenn *till the blood was colouring the mantle* WB. 391 = RB. 249; **yny oed** (= **hyny yttoed** WB. p. 218) eu llygeit yn colli eu lleuer *till their eyes were losing their light* WB. 435 = RB. 283.

NOTE 3.—In a number of cases the **ytt-**, **yd-** forms are found not preceded by a negative, etc.: berth **yd ytwyt** (= **yd wyt** RB. 115) *finely thou art* WB. 473; **yth ewylls yd ydym** *we are at thy will* RB. 66; **hyt yd ydiw** *dayar as long as the earth is* WB. 459 = RB. 105; ar hynny **yd yttoed** yn deffroi *thereupon he was stirring* WB. p. 212; yma **yd yttoedwn** (= **yd oedwn** WB. 441, RB. 287) yn kerdet *there I was journeying* WB. p. 221; ual **yd yttoed yn kerdet** WB. 170 = RB. 236; ymlodeu dy dewred **yd yttwyt** (= **yt vyt** WB. 413 = **yd wyt** RB. 266) *thou art in the flower of thy night* WB. p. 207; for: o hynny **yd yttoed** RB. 218, WB. 149 has ac hynny **yttoed**, and for ae **yd yttoed yn troi** RB. 215 WB. 145 has y doeth **yd ydoed yn troi**. So in the present impersonal forms occur: **vyg kareharu yd ydys** (**yd ydys** om. WB. 235) *I am imprisoned* RB. 187; yn y gyveistydaw **yd ydys** (= **yd yttys** WB. 167) *it is being besieged* RB. 233, by **yd ys yn kadw** or **enw hwnnw** *that name is preserved* RB. 60; **yd ys yn lluydaw yn an hol** *there is a hosting after us* RB. 63, 1.

NOTE 4.—In Hg. I. **yttiwi**, etc., are not unfrequently copula forms, e.g. gwell **yttiwi vy marw** *it is better that I should die* 145, pa un **ytwyt** *who art thou* 95; cf. hyny **yttoedynt** (= **yny oedynt** WB. 446, RB. 291) *kystal ac y buont oreu eirot till they were as good as they had ever been* WB. p. 223.

### 155. B. Copula.

(a) In the third person of the present there is a variety of forms:—

(a) **ys**, used (like Ir. *is*) at the beginning of a clause before its predicate, e.g. **is gwell** *it is better*; **is gohelyon hwnn** *he is a remnant*; **ys mi** ae heirch *it is I who ask her*. It is often preceded by the conjunction **can**, e.g. **kanys gwell yw genyt ti** *since thou preferrest*; **kanys arnam ni y berneist** *since it is on us that thou hast passed judgment*.

NOTE 1.—In poetry **ys** is used with an infixed personal pronoun, e.g. **yssim edinar** *I repent* BB. 51<sup>a</sup>, cf. O.Ir. *issum écen it is necessary for me*.

(β) **yw**, used when the predicate precedes, e.g. **negessawl yw wrthyt** *he has business with thee*; **pw yw hi** *who is she?* **miui yw Llwyd** *I am Llwyd*; **y deu lygat yw y dwy lynn** *the two lakes are his two eyes*; **nyt gwr yw hwnnw** *that is not a man*; **kanys mawr yw** *since it is great*. It is also used after the conjunction **pan**, e.g. y dyuedassant wynteu **pan yw merchet ieirll oedynt** *they said that they were daughters of earls* (cf. § 226, 5).

(γ) **ynt** is the plural form, e.g. **bychein ynt wynteu** *they are small*; **nyt ynt iach** *they are not whole*.

(δ) **nyt** is a negative form, e.g. **nyt oet** ymi gwreicka *it is not time for me to wed*; **nyt egŷlŷon** ŷ rei racko *those yonder are not angels*; **nyt wyntwy** bioed yr antur *it is not to them that the adventure belonged*.

(ε) **nat** is the dependent negative, e.g. **menegwch** . . . **nat hawd** gennyf ynheu nae lad ef nae diuetha *declare that it is not easy for me to slay him or to destroy him*.

(ξ) **os** is the form with **o** *if*, e.g. **os da** gennyt ti *if it seems good to thee*; **os wynteu** ae med hi *if it is they that have it in their power*.

(η) **ae** is the interrogative = *is it?* e.g. **ae gwell** *is it better?* **ae kyscu** yd wyt ti *art thou asleep?*

(θ) **ponyt** is the interrogative = *is it not?* e.g. **ponyt** dros y neb yssyd yna *is it not for one who is there?*

(ι) **neut** is the copula form with the particle **neu** (§ 220), e.g. **neut araf** *he is gentle*.

(κ) The relative form is positively **yssyd**, negatively **nyt**, e.g. **kans** mi **yssyd athro** itt *for it is I who am thy teacher*; **gwaew nyt gwaeth** *a spear that is not worse*.

(λ) **mae** seems to be used where according to § 159 the predicate follows, e.g. **am hŷnnŷ ŷ may reit** ŷ titheu uot *therefore it is necessary for thee to be* WB. 396, **o achaws hynny y mae dygassawc** yr adar yr tylluan *because of that the birds are enemies to the owl* RB. 80; **ŷn ŷ mae goreu** y gwyr *where the men are best* WB. 119. **Mae** is used also in indirect speech, e.g. **menegi ŷ Arthur mae** mi ath vŷrŷawd *to declare to Arthur that it is I who have thrown thee* WB.; **ereyll a deueyt e may** hyn eu y naud *others say that this is his protection* BCh. 9.

(μ) Otherwise the forms **wyf**, etc., are used for the copula, e.g. **pw yd wyt** *who art thou*, **yd ym** drist ni *we are sad*, **nyt oed ef nes** idi *he was no nearer to her*.

### bydaf and bydwn.

156. **bydaf** is used :—

(a) As an iterative or consuetudinal present, e.g. **mi a uydaf** borthawr y Arthur bop duw kalan Ionawr *I am Arthur's gate-*

*keeper every New Year's Day* RB. 103, 7; *lle ny bo dysc ny byd dawn where there is no learning there is no gift* FB. 244.

(b) As an historical present, e.g. *ual y bydant yn eisted wynt a welynt gwreic as they were sitting they saw a woman* RB. 8; *a chyuaros Gereint a oruc yny uyd yn agos idi and she waited for Gereint till he was near her* RB. 271, 1.

(c) As a future, the most common use, e.g. *y gyt a mi y bydy yn dyscu marchogaeth thou shalt be with me learning horsemanship; mi a vydaf athro it I shall be thy teacher.*

**157. bydwn** is used :—

(a) As an iterative or consuetudinal past, e.g. *a pheï vwyhaf uei y vrys ef pellaf vydei hitheu y wrthaw ef the greater his haste the further she was from him* RB. 9, 5.

(b) Describing a single action in past tense: *ual y bydynt yn eisted wynt a welynt y wreic as they were sitting they saw the woman* RB. 9, 29.

(c) As a secondary future or conditional, e.g. *wynt a welsant or kaffeï vedic da y bydei vyw they saw that if he got a good leech he would live* RB. 212, 12.

### Past Subjunctive.

**158.** The following forms are to be noted: **pei yt uewn i** (= **bei etu(ni)** WB. 71) *yn dechreu vy ieuenctit if I had been in the beginning of my youth* RB. 51, 24; **beyt uei** *ar y ffurf iawn if she had been in her proper form* RB. 175, 18; *ar mul ae kanlynawd megys pei at uei milgi and the mule followed him as if it had been a hound* Hg. I., 336; *hi a vynnei pet vei hi a Lawnsloſt yn y fforest she would that she and Launcelot were in the forest* Hg. I., 368; *a phettut un wreic di or byt, ny mynnwn i ddim ohonat ti and if thou wert the only woman in the world, I would desire nothing of thee* Hg. II., 315. Like the modern **pettwn** these forms seem to express unreality.



## POSITION OF THE COPULA.

**159.** In Middle Welsh prose in positive affirmative sentences (with the exception of **ys** which always precedes the predicate) the normal position of the predicate is before the copula, e.g. **Lunet wyf i** *I am Lunet*, **cennadeu ym ni** *we are messengers*, **llawen vu** *he was glad*, **reit vyd** *it will be necessary*, **trwy gynghor Branwen uu** *hynny oll all that was through the advice of Branwen*. But the predicate follows the copula in the imperative, in negative and interrogative sentences, in subordinate clauses, and very generally when an adverb or an adverbial phrase precedes, e.g. **a vo penn bit bont** *let him who is head be bridge*, **nyt da dy gyghor** *thy advice is not good*, **a wyt uorwyn art** *thou a maiden?* **o byd reit** *if it is necessary*, **tra vu da** *as long as it was good*, **ual y bydynt gadarnach** *so that they would be stronger*, **paham ydwyf trist i** *why am I sad?* **yna y bu marw** *there he died*, **undyd ym penn y vlwydyn y bu barawt** *on the same day at the end of the year it was ready*. But after adverbs and adverbial phrases there are instances where the predicate precedes, e.g. **yna ryued uu gan Arthur hynny** *then Arthur wondered at that* Hg. I., 339; **am hynny reit vyd** *therefore it will be necessary* Hg. I., 311 (by *am hynny y byd reit* 307); **ar eil vlwydyn mab mawr oed** *and the second year he was a big boy* RB. 69. 4.

NOTE 1.—This order seems to have developed from sentences in which a copula form **ys**, etc., preceded, such as, e.g. **canys gwr uuassei** lit. *since it is a man that he had been*, **os byw vyd** lit. *if it is alive that he shall be*. Thus the development would be parallel to that of sentences like **Peredur a oruc** *Peredur did* (§ 85).

NOTE 2.—In the early poetry the copula freely precedes the predicate, as in Irish. And in the more archaic prose there are instances of the same order, e.g. **oed dyhed** (= **ys oed gryssyn** RB. 116) *kelu y ryw was hwnn* *it were a grievous thing to hide such a lad as that* WB. 475; **oed melynach**, **oed gwynnach** WB. 476 = **melynach oed**, **gwynnach oed** RB. 117; **oed reit** WB. 487 = **asoed reit** RB. 126, 27; **oed glyssyn** WB. 151 = **ys oed gryssyn** RB. 220; **oed dyhed mawr**, **oed iawn** RB. 173; **oed well** RB. 176. As to **as oed**, **ys oed** the **as**, **ys** is in origin the infixing particle **a** (§ 94) with an infixed pronoun which has become meaningless, cf. **as bwyf** *may I be!* MA. 142<sup>b</sup>; this usage has developed from cases like **ys caffo drugared** *may he find mercy!* MA. 224<sup>b</sup>, where formally **s** may be an anticipation of the object.

COMPOUNDS OF *bot.*

**160.** *ar-gan-vot* *perceive*, *can-vot* *perceive*, *cyv-ar-vot* *encounter*, *dar-vot* *to be ended*, *gor-vot* *overcome*, *han-vot* *to be sprung*.

## INDICATIVE.

## PRESENT.

	sing.	plur.
1.	<i>canhwyf</i> ; <i>handwyf</i> , <i>hanwyf</i> , <i>henwyf</i>	<i>handym</i> , <i>hanym</i> , <i>henym</i>
2.	<i>handwyt</i> , <i>hanwyt</i> , <i>henwyt</i>	
3.	<i>cenyw</i> ; <i>deryw</i> , <i>derw</i> ; <i>henyw</i> ; <i>garyw</i>	<i>derynt</i> ; <i>henynt</i>

NOTE 1.—sg. 3 *handit* RB. 71, 178, and frequently in poetry; cf. *Cymmrod.* IX. 116, CZ. III. 389. *hanvit* Hg. I. 200.

## IMPERFECT.

	sing.	plur.
2.	<i>handoedut</i>	
3.	<i>canoed</i> ; <i>daroed</i> ; <i>handoed</i> , <i>hanoed</i>	<i>hannoedynt</i>

## FUTURE.

1.	<i>gorvydaf</i>	<i>gorvydwn</i>
2.	<i>gorvydy</i> ; <i>henbydy</i>	<i>cyvarvydwch</i>
3.	<i>cyvervyd</i> ; <i>dervyd</i> ; <i>hanbyd</i> , <i>henbyd</i>	
pass.	<i>gorvydit</i>	

## ITERATIVE IMPERFECT AND CONDITIONAL.

3.	<i>cyvarvydei</i> ; <i>gorvydei</i> ; <i>hanbydei</i>	<i>gorvydynt</i>
pass.	<i>gorvydit</i>	

NOTE 2.—sg. 3 *handei* RB. 85.

## PRETERITE AND PERFECT.

1. arganvum; cyvarvum; darvuam; gorvuam  
gorvum
2. cyvarvuost; gorvuost gorvuawch, gorvuoch
3. arganvu; darvu; gorvu, arganvuant; gorvuant
- pass. arganvuwyd; cyvarvu-  
wyd; gorvuwyd

## PLUPERFECT.

3. cyvarvuassei; darvuassei;  
gorvuassei
- pass. gorvuessyt

## IMPERATIVE.

3. hanvit

NOTE 3.—sg. 3 derffit RB. 155.

## SUBJUNCTIVE.

## PRESENT.

1. cyvarffom; gorffom
2. henpych
3. arganffo; cyvarffo; cyvarvoent  
darffo; gorpo, ? gorffont 182, 5<sup>r</sup>  
gorffo; hanffo
- pass. gorffer

## PAST.

3. cyvarffei; darffei; cyverffynt  
hanffei gorffei  
(191, 6)

## Pieu.

161. The primary use of **pieu** is in interrogation, direct or indirect, in the sense of *whose is?* e.g. **pieu** y gaer, heb wynt. nyt oes yn y byt ny wypo **pieu** y gaer honn "*whose is the city?*" said they. "*There is no one in the world who does not know to whom this city belongs*" RB. 126; Peredur a ovyynnawd **pioedynt** gwyr wy *Peredur asked whose men they were* Hg. I. 314. But it is

frequently used with lenation **bieu**, etc., but not preceded by relative **a**, in a non-interrogative sense *to whom belongs*, e.g. *Effrawc iarll bioed iarllaeth y gogled to Effrawc the earl belonged the earldom of the north* RB. 193, 1; *Duw bioedynt they belonged to God* Hg I. 426. The inflexion follows that of **bot**, e.g.

## INDICATIVE.

Pres.:—Sg. 2. **piwyt**; 3. **pieu**; pl. 3. **piewynt**.

Imperf.:—Sg. 3. **pieuoed**, **pioed**, **piewed**, **pieuat**; pl. 3. **pioedynt**.

Fut.:—Sg. 3. **pieivyd**; pl. 1. **pieivydwn**.

Condit.:—Sg. 3. **pieivydei**.

Pret.:—Sg. 3. **pieivu**, **pieuu**.

## SUBJUNCTIVE.

Pres.:—Sg. 3. **pieuvo**.

Past:—Sg. 3. **pieiffei**, **pieuvei**.

NOTE.—cf. Bezz Beitr. XVII. 292 sq. In: *ni ae pieifydwn we shall possess them* CM. **pieu** has developed into a transitive verb *to possess*, as it did in Cornish, cf. Cymmrod. IX. 100.

## THE PREPOSITION.

**162. ac, a** *with*; with the article **ar**; with possessive pronouns **am**, **ath**, **ae** etc., e.g. *minneu a chwaryaf a thitheu I shall play with thee*; *wrth ryuelu a Gwrtheyrn to fight with Vortigern*; *yny oedynt gynefin ac ef till they were familiar with him*; *taraw a oruc Owein a chledyf he struck Owein with a sword*; *llanw crochan a dwfyr to fill a vessel with water*; *taw ath ucheneidaw have done with thy sighing*; *peidaw a bwyta a oruc he stopped eating*; in *amvin* *ev terwin a guir Dulin defending their land from the men of Dublin*. It is often used after verbs compounded with **ym**, e.g. *ymadaw a oruc Arthur ar llyn Arthur left the lake*; *ymgolli ae gedymdeithon to lose his comrades*; *a do y ymwelet ac Arthur wilt thou come to see Arthur?*

**163. ach.** In the phrase **ach y law** *beside him*.

164. **am** (Ir. *imm*) *about, on account of*, e.g. corn canu **am y vynwgl** *a horn about his neck*; gwisce **ymdanat** *dress thyself*; **am y uagwyr ar karcharawr** *on the other side of the wall from the prisoner*; iawn y medreis i **am benn** y carw *rightly did I determine about the head of the stag*; hyt na dywedit **am vn vorwyn** vwy noc **amdanei** *so that there was not more talk about any maiden than about her*; **am hanner bwytta** amofyn a oruc y gwr *about the middle of the meal the man asked*; haelaf oed **am rodyon** *he was most liberal with respect to gifts*; y oual **am y wreic** *his anxiety about his wife*; or sarhaet a wnathoed **am adaw** y llys *for the outrage which he had committed in leaving the court*; dothyw **am Oweyn** *Owein has perished* MA. 252<sup>a</sup>; a derŷv **am Keduŷv** *has K. perished?* BB. 1<sup>a</sup>; trist oed **am angeu** y uab *he was grieved because of the death of his son*. In the phrase **am benn**, e.g. yn y del y iarll . . . **am penn** y lle hwnn *until the earl comes to attack this place*; pan yttoedynt pawb yn mynu mynet **am penn** y Saeson *when they were all eager to attack the Saxons*.

**ymdan**, e.g. **ymdan y varch** *about his horse*.

**y am** (O.W. *diam*) *from off*, e.g. y dynnu y wisce hela **y amdanaw** *to pull off his hunting dress*; dogyn o arueu **y am hynny** *plenty of arms besides* WB. p. 225; o lu uii nyn **e am e mam ay tat** ae y brodir a chuait *by the oath of seven people including her mother and her father and her brothers and her sisters* BCh. 36.

165. **ar** *on*, etc., **ar uarch** *on a horse*; Lawnsloŷ a eistedawd y vwyta **ar y bwrđ** *Launcelot sat down at the table to eat*; **edrych** a wnaeth Manawydan **ar y dref** *Manawyddan looked upon his town*; **y dodet ar yr avon** *Hafren the river was called the Severn*; ae geuyn **ar yr heul** *and his back towards the sun*; cymrŷt cleuyt **arnaw** a oruc *he pretended to be ill*; rac meint karyat y brenhin **arnei** *because of the greatness of the king's love for her*; rac caffael y gaer **arnaw** *lest the city should be taken on him*; **y wassanaethu arnaw** *to wait upon him*; **taerwn arnei** ehun diuetha y mab *let us insist that she herself killed her son*; nyt **gwerth arnaw** ef dim *it is not worth anything*; hitheu . . . a gytsynnywys **ar anvon** y mab y Pwyll *she agreed to send the boy to Pwyll*; dyuot a oruc ef **ar**

v. p. 91 (dyuot)

(=att RB. 287) **Enyd** *he came to Enid* WB. p. 221; a roti ý uanec **ar** (=att RB. 116) **ý kýmhar** *and he gave the glove to his wife* WB. 473.

In phrases, e.g. **ar y drydyd** *with two others*; **ar y ganuet** *with a hundred men*; sef y key yn nef **ar y ganuet** *thou shalt receive in heaven a hundredfold*; **ar vrys** *in haste*; am eu carcharu **ar gam** *because they were wrongfully imprisoned*; **ar gel** *secretly*; **ar gyhoed** *publicly*; y marchawc y gwnaethpwyt **ar y odeu** *the knight for whom it has been made*; y marchogyon goreu a oed **ar y helw** *the best horsemen that were in his possession*; **ar hynny** *after that*; **ar hyt** y glynn *along the valley*; **ar hyt** y dyd *throughout the day*; **ar eu hol** *after them*; **ar uedwl** mynet *with the intention of going*; **ar uessur** llad y benn *with the purpose of cutting off his head*; **ar tal** y pebyll *before the tent*; **ar tal** y lin *on his knee*; **ar draws** yr avon *across the river*; y tharaw **ar draws** y hwyneb *he struck her across her face*.

NOTE 1.—For the phrase **ar y ganvet** see Rev. Celt. 28, p. 206.

**y ar** (O.W. **diar**), **odyar** *from*, e.g. y dygwydawd yn varw **y ar uarch** *he fell dead from his horse*; byrywch awch blinder **y arnawch** *cast your weariness from you*.

NOTE 2.—But **y ar** is used also in the sense of **on**, e.g. y gwelynt wreie **y ar uarch** *they saw a woman on a horse* RB. 248.

NOTE 3.—In O.W. **guar** (=Ir. *for*), e.g. **guar** ir dreb gl. *edito*, **guar** ir henn rit *above the old ford* Lib. Land. 73. In Lib. Land. is also found **ar**, cf. Ir. **ar**. In Mid. W. the two prepositions are confused.

166. **att** *to*, e.g. dyuot a oruc **att y uorwyn** *he came to the maiden*; y chwedyl a doeth **att Uatholwch** *the tidings came to Matholwch*; dyret y gyt a mi **hyt att Arthur** *come with me to Arthur*.

167. **can**, **gan** (corresponding in sense to Ir. *la*) *with, by*, e.g. mynet a oruc Mabon **ganthaw** *Mabon went with him*; ef a edewis **genthi** dwy iarllaeth *he left with her two earldoms*; a **chan gennyat** y ewythyrr cychwyn ymeith *and with his uncle's leave he set out*; nawd a geffy . . **gan uynet** dracheuyn y fford y deuthost *thou shalt have mercy on condition that thou returnest by the way by*

*which thou hast come*; hyny yttoed eu llygeit yn colli eu lleuuer **gan y chwys ar gwaet** *till their eyes were losing their light with the sweat and the blood*; atdeb nys kauas ef **genthi hi** *he got no answer from her*; ny phrynit dim **ganhunt** *nothing was bought from them*; ny chollet oen eiryoet **ganhaw** *not a lamb had ever been lost by him*; **gan lan** y weilgi *by the shore of the sea*; os da **gan y uorwyn** da yw **gennyf ynneu** *if it pleases the maiden, it pleases me*; drwc vyd **gantunt** *it will be displeasing to them*.

**y gan** *from*, e.g. cymer gedernit **y ganhaw** *take security from him*; annerch **y genhyf i** ef *greet him from me*.

168. **cer, ger** *near by*, e.g. **ker tir** Tyssilyaw *by the land of Tyssilyaw* MA. 237<sup>b</sup>; **ger glan** yr avon *by the bank of the river*; ae kymmerth **ger y awwyneu** *he took him by his reins* CM. 56; yn ymauael ar ebawl **geir y vwng** *seizing the foal by its mane*. In some phrases:—**ger bronn**, e.g. ae vwrw **ger bronn** Owein *and threw it before Owein*; ar abat . . . a doeth ac ef hyt **geyr bronn** yr allawr *and the abbot took him before the altar*; **ger llaw**, e.g. ae dodi **ger llaw** y gerwyn *and placed it beside the cauldron*.

169. **cyvrwng** *between*, e.g. **kýfrwg deu ýskýuarn** Twrch Trwyth *between the ears of Twrch Trwyth*; **cyfrwng mor a glan** *between sea and shore*.

170. **cyn** *before*, e.g. **kynn y nos** *before night*; **cyn myned** mab Cynan y dan dywawd *before Cynan's son went under the sod* MA. 140<sup>a</sup>.

171. **cyt** *union* serves as a preposition in the phrases **cyt ac, y gyt ac** *together with*, e.g. mynet a orugant **gyt ar mackwy** *they went along with the youth*; yn gorymdeith **y gyt ar amherawdyr** *walking together with the Emperor*.

172. **eithyr** (= Ir. *echtar*) *outside of, except, beyond*, e.g. neb rýw dim ný welýnt **eithyr guydlwdyn** *they saw nothing except wild beasts*; a phan welas Chyarlys hynny ryuedu a oruc **eithyr mod** *and when Charlemagne saw that he was astonished beyond measure*.

**dieithyr**, e.g. ef a edewis y holl longeu . . . **dyeithyr un llong** *he left all his ships except one ship*.

**odieithyr**, e.g. gwede mýnet Arthur **odieithyr y llýs** *after Arthur*

*cerwyn f.*

*went out of the palace*; ef . . . ae cassaawd **odieithyr messur** *he hated him beyond measure.*

**173. erbyn** (prep. **er** + dat. of **penn** *head* = Ir. ar chiunn cf. § 25) *against, before, by*, e.g. mi ae paraf . . . yn gyniachet **erbyn penn y mis** ac y gallo marchogaeth *I will make him so well by the end of the month that he will be able to ride*; ar abat yna **erbyn y law** ae kymmerth *and the abbot then took him by his hand.*

**174. gwedy, wedy** (O.W. guetig) *after*, e.g. **gwedy y gawat** goleuhau a oruc yr awyr *after the shower the sky cleared*; uot y crydyon **wedy duunaw** ar y lad *that the cobblers had conspired to slay him*; **hyd guedy** gosper *till after evening.*

**175. heb** (= Ir. sech) *past, without, besides*, e.g. nyt kynt yd yskynn ef ar y uarch noc yd a hitheu **hebdaw ef** *no sooner did he mount his horse than she passed him*; **heb dant** yn y phenn *without a tooth in her head*; abreid vu eu hattal **heb torri** eu hamot *they could hardly be kept from breaking their covenant*; y kahat o ynys Prydein ehun trugein mil o varchogyon aruawc **heb deg mil** a adawssei urenhin Llydaw *there was got from the island of Britain itself sixty thousand armed horsemen besides ten thousand that the King of Brittany had promised.* In the phrase **heb law**, e.g. pan yttoed honno yn kerdet **heb law** Breint *when she was going past Breint* RB. II., 246.

**176. herwyd** *according to, by*, e.g. **herwyd anyan** *according to nature*; **herwyd vyg gallu i** *according to my power*; a chymryt y mab **herwyd y draet** *and he seized the boy by his feet.*

**177. hyt** (a prepositional use of **hyt** *length*) *as far as, up to*, e.g. o vor Ut **hyd vor** Iwerton *from the English Channel to the Irish Sea* MA. 202<sup>a</sup>; **hyt dyd brawt** *until Doomsday*; **educher** (= **hyt ucher**) *until evening.*

NOTE.—In O.W. there are also prepositional phrases **behet**, e.g. **behet hirmain** *as far as the long stone* Lib. Land., **bet rit ir main** *as far as the ford of the stone* ib., and **cihit**, e.g. **cihit i nant** *to the valley*, **cihitan**, e.g. **cihitan clouric** Lib. Land., and **cihitun**, e.g. **cihitun ceng** *ir esceir* Ox. gl.

**178. is** (= Ir. is) *below*, e.g. **is nef** *below heaven.* In the phrase **islaw** *below*, e.g. kawc a oed **islaw** y drws *a bowl that was below*



*the door*; y dodit **islaw** y teulu *he was placed beneath the household*; **odis**, e.g. neur disgynnassei Arthur . . . **odis Kaer Vadon** *Arthur had descended beneath Caer Vaddon* RB. 151, 22; **adhis Guaissav** Lib. Land. 241.

**179. ithr** (only O.W. = Ir. *etir*) *between*, e.g. **ithr ir dwy ail** *between the two eyelashes* Mart. Cap.

**180. mynn** (a nominal preposition = Ir. *mind* *a holy relic, an oath*) *by* (in oaths), e.g. **myn dy law di** . . . **mi a af y gyt a thi** *by thy hand I will go with thee*; **myn vyg cret** *nyth gredaf* *by my faith I do not believe thee*.

**181. mywn** (nominal preposition) *in*, e.g. **wynteu a dywedassant** *bot adanc mywn gogof* *they said that there was a monster in a cave*; **ryuedu** . . . **a orugant bot mywn un dyn** . . . **hanner hynny o nerth** *they marvelled that half as much strength should be in one man*; **neuad a welsant y mywn** (= **o vewn** WB. p. 93a) **y gaer** *they saw a palace within the city* RB. 87, 17.

**182. nes** (cf. **nes** *nearer*) *until, unless*, e.g. **ny cheffir Mabon vyth** . . . **nes caffel Eidoel** *Mabon will never be got till Eidoel is got*; **nes dyuot** *Guilenhin urenhin Ffreinc nŷ helir Twrch Trwyth vŷth hebdaŷ unless Gwilenhin King of France comes, Twrch Trwyth will never be hunted without him* RB. 124, 28.

**183. o, a** *of, from, by*; with the article **or**; with possessive pronouns **om, oth, oe** etc.; before pronouns beginning with a vowel there is also a form **oc**; **oc awch** *of your*, **oc eu** *of their*, **oc a** *of what*, e.g., **mil o bunneu** *aryant a thousand pounds of silver*; **y rann vwyhaf or vlwydyn** *the greatest part of the year*; **mawr a beth yw gwelet dwyawl dial ar y bobyl** *a great thing it is to see divine vengeance on the people*; **pebyll o bali** *a tent of satin*; **yn llawn or dwfyr** *full of the water*; **kany cheffynt o ennyt wiskaw eu harueu** *for they got no time to put on their arms*; **pei karei Duw wynt o dim** *if God loved them at all*; **aduet o oet** *ripe in years*; **wytt ditawl o bob chwant** *thou art free from every desire*; **o mynwn nineu arueru o rydit** *if we wish to enjoy freedom*; **na naccaa ui ohonunt** *do not refuse them to me*; **ef a gychynnwys o Arberth** *he set forth from Arberth*; **yn dyuot or coet allan**

*coming out of the wood*; am lad **ohonat titheu** y gwr priawt *because her husband has been slain by thee*; na ellir kynnal dy gyuoeth di namyn **o wilwryaeth ac arueu** *that thy dominion can be maintained only by valour and arms*. In phrases, e.g. **o achaws** *because of*; **oe vod** *with his will*; **oe hanvod** *against his will*; **or diwed** *at last*; **o hynny allan** *from that time forth*; **o barth** y vam *on his mother's side*; **oc eu plith** *from among them*.

184. **parth** *part*, in **parth ac**, **parth ac att** *towards*, e.g. bryssyaw a orugant **parth ar mwc** *they hastened towards the smoke*, yn dyuot ar hyt y dyffryn **parth ac attaf** *coming along the valley towards me*.

185. **py** (= Ir. co) *to*; with possessive pronoun **pwyl, py**, e.g. or mor **pwyl gilyd** *from one sea to the other*; ar ffo o le **py gilyd** *in flight from place to place*; ac yna y kymertth Seint Alban Amphibalus yd oedit **awr py awr** yn y dwyn oe verthyru ac y kudywys yn y dy ehun = *quorum Albanus confessorem suum Amphibalum a persecutoribus insectatum et iam iamque comprehendendum primum in domo sua occuluit* RB. II. 107.

186. **rac** *before, against, on account of*, e.g. mal heu **rac moch** myreryd *like scattering pearls before swine*; kymer di y pedwar meirch a gyrr **rac dy vronn** *take the four horses and drive them before thee*; kerdet a orugant **racdunt** hyt att vwyalch Gilgwri *they went on till they came to the blackbird of Kilgwri*; am notwy **rac auar** *may he protect me against grief*; nys kelaf **ragot** *I will not hide it from thee*; ffo ditheu ymeith **rac dyuot** ohonaw *flee forth lest he should come*; yn keissaw diffryt y deu wr **rac eu bodi** *in seeking to save the two men from drowning*; llidiau a oruc Arthur **rac hwyret** y gwelei y vudugolyaeth yn dyuot idaw *Arthur was angry because he saw the victory coming to him so slowly*; y kenir efferenneu **rac y eneit** *masses are sung for his soul*; yn aballu **rac newyn** *dying of hunger*.

**y rac** *from*, e.g. ninheu a dygwn **y racdunt** yr eidunt *we will take their property from them* RB. II. 207.

187. **rwng, y rwng** *between*, e.g. **rwg nef a dayar** *between heaven and earth*; **y rwng deuglust** Twrch Trwyth *between the*

*ears of Twrch Trwyth*; pany bei ammot **yrof am gwlat** amdanunt *if there were not a covenant between me and my land about them*; **rwng dicter a llit** taraw ym plith y llygot a wnaeth *between rage and anger he struck among the mice*; dywedut **y ryngthunt** ehunein y maent *they are saying among themselves*; **rwg deu** onadunt *between two of them* RB. II. 141; y kerdwys **y ryngtaw a Ruuein** *he set out to Rome* RB. 85, cf. ib. 12, 24.

**odyrwng** *from between*, e.g. a ducpwynt yn teirnoſsic **odyrwng y vam** ar paret *who when three nights old was taken from between his mother and the wall* RB. 129, 10.

188. **tan, dan, ydan, adan** (cf. O.W. **guotan**) *under*, e.g. ffynnwawn a welwn **dan y prenn** *I saw a fountain under the tree*; y clywei dygyuor . . . **y dan** (= **dan** WB. 92 = **adan** RB. 66) **baret** yr ystauell *he heard a commotion under a wall of the chamber* RB. 67, 15; gobennyd **dan penn y elin** *a cushion under his elbow*; **dan wynt a glaw** *under wind and rain*; y ellwng y gwn **dan y coet** *to let loose his dogs in the wood* RB. 1, 10; awn **adanunt** (= **ydanunt** RB. 48) **a lladwn** *let us attack and slay them* WB. 67; yny uyd y llygot yn gwan **adan y groft** *until the mice were falling upon the field* RB. 53, 27, cf. RB. 28, 29; dyuot a wnaeth Corineus at Locrinus **dan dreiglau** bwyell *Corineus came to Locrinus brandishing an axe*.

189. **trag, tra** *beyond, across*, e.g. ton **tra thon** toid tu tir *wave beyond wave covers the side of the land* BB. 45<sup>a</sup>; ac eigyl racdaw draw **dra thonneu** *and angels before him yonder across the waves* MA. 196<sup>a</sup>; maith dy dreisiau **drag Euas** *great are thy deeds of violence across Evas* MA. 145<sup>a</sup>; oes **trag oes** *age beyond age* FB. 230; **tra messur** *beyond measure* FB. 155; rybud **drae gilyd** = *quotidianos rumores* RB. II. 131.

NOTE.—Often in the phrase **drachefyn** *back*, by which there are also forms with possessive adjectives, e.g. **tra-m-kefyn** WB. 232 = **drachefen** RB. 169, 16, **tra-th-gefyn** WB. 124 = **drachefyn** RB. 198, 25, **dra-e-gefyn** CM. 73, **dra-e-chefyn** RB. 177, 12, **dra-e-kefyn** CM. 45, also forms like **drach eu kevyn** Hg. I. 301.

190. **trus, tros, dros** *across*, e.g. **trus ir minid** *across the*

*mountain* Lib. Land; ual yd oed . . . yn kerdet **dros vynydd** as he was journeying across a mountain; yny ehedawd y glot **dros wyneb y deyrnas** until his fame flew over his dominion; y ymlad **dros y wlat** to fight for his country; y rodes Hengyst ateb idaw **dros y gedymdeithyon** Hengist answered him on behalf of his companions; pan allasant wy gyntaf talu drwc **dros da** as soon as they were able to return evil for good.

191. **trwy, drwy** (Ir. tre) *through*, e.g. **trwy y koet** through the wood; **trwy gynghor Branwen** through the advice of Branwen; ar tes oed vawr, ar arueu **trwy y chwys ar gwaet** yn glynu wrth y gnawt and the heat was great, and the armour by reason of the sweat and blood was sticking to his flesh; ar dyd hwnnw ar nos honno a treulasant **trwy gerdeu a didanwch** and that day and that night they spent in songs and entertainment WB. p. 204; Arthur **drwy amlaf rodyon** ae henrydedei Arthur honoured him with many gifts.

*comes* 192. **tu** side in **tu ac, tu ac att** towards, e.g. pan daw **tu ar drws** when he goes towards the door; yn dyuot . . . **tu ac attat** coming towards thee.

193. **uch** (Ir. ūas) above, e.g. **uch nef** above heaven; yn eisted **uch penn** y weilgi sitting above the sea; **uch law** y bont . . . y gwelynt kastelltref above the bridge they saw a fortified town.

**diuch**; **diuch i lan** Lib. Land. 73.

**oduch**, e.g. **oduch y dwvyr** above the water WB. p. 90<sup>b</sup>; eithyd **oduch gwynt** he went above the wind FB. 179; pei delhei y bŷt **oduchti** if the world should come above it WB. 481.

194. **wrth** (O.W. gurth, Ir. fri) against, towards, etc., e.g. ny ellir dim **wrth a uynho Duw** nothing can be done contrary to what God wills; pan yuei o wual yuei **urth peduar** when he drank from the horn, he would drink against four BB. 48<sup>b</sup>; **wrth y drws** llyma vab bychan lo! at the door was a little boy; yn eu pobi **wrth y tan** being cooked at the fire; yn dyuot **wrth y diaspat** coming at the cry; pob kyfryw anieileit a ducpwynt yno **wrth eu haberthu** every kind of animals was led there to be sacrificed; reit oed ym **wrth gynghor** I had need of counsel; y

dynu a orugant **wrth raffeu** y mywn *they pulled him in with ropes*; **wrth ych kynghor** y bydaf *I will follow your advice*; llew **wrth aer** a llwfr **wrth eirchyeid** *a lion for battle and a weakling towards suppliants*; cyt bei lityawc ef **wrthi hi** *though he was angry with her*; **wrthyt ti** y mae vy neges *my business is with thee*; yn glynu **wrth y gnawt** *sticking to his flesh*; y dywawt y dat **wrthaw** *his father said to him*; sef a wnaeth gwyr Rufein drychafel Geta yn vrenhin . . . **wrth hanuot** y vam o Rufein *the men of Rome raised Geta to be king because his mother was sprung from Rome*; **wrth hynny** *therefore*; **y wrth** *from*, e.g. yr pan athoed **y wrthunt hwy** *since he had gone from them*; ny ry giglef i eirmoet dim **y wrth y uorwyn** *I have never heard anything of the maiden*.

195. **y** (O.W. **di**, Ir. **do**) *to*. With the article **yr**; with possessive adjectives **ym**, **yth**, **yw**, etc. (§ 58*b*), e.g. dyuot **yw** (= **y** RB. 284) *lety came to his lodging* WB. p. 219; gwyr Troea ae hymlityassant **y eu llogeu** *the men of Troy pursued them to their ships*; y. deuynt drannoeth **oc eu hamdiffyn** *they would come on the following day to defend them*; deu uab oed **im** *I had two sons*; keuynderw **dy** (= **y** RB. 100, 13) *Arthur oed he was a cousin of Arthur* WB. 452; or tu draw **yr bont** *on the further side of the bridge*; heb wybot **yr kawr** *without the knowledge of the giant*; mi ae talaf **ywch** *I will pay it to you*; ni ae dywedwn **itti** *we will tell it to thee*; gouyn a oruc Gwrhwr **idi** *Gwrhwr asked her*; na hawl ef **ynni** *do not demand him of us*; pan daruu **udunt** darllein *when they had finished reading*.

NOTE.—In Irish **do**=*to* (cf. Bret. **da**), **di**=*from*. Already in Old Welsh **di** has the sense of Ir. **do**, e.g. **map di Iob**=Ir. **macc do Iob** *a son of Jupiter*, **anu di Iuno**=Ir. **ainm do Iuno** *a name of Juno*, **di erchim** *to ask*. The sense of *from* is kept before other prepositions, e.g. **di am** *later y am from off*, **y wrth** *from*, and in some phrases, e.g. **blwydyn y hediw** *a year from to-day*, **y dreis** *by violence*, **y werth** WB. p. 214=**ar werth** RB. 277, 21 *for a price*.

196. **yn** (Ir. **i n-**) *into, in*. With possessive pronouns **ym**, **yth**, e.g. kylllell a edyw **y mwyt** a llynn **y mual** *(the) knife has gone into (the) food and (the) drink into the horn*; dyuot a orugant **hyt yn lle** yd oed karw Redynure *they came to where the stag of*

*Redywre was* ; nŷ chlyweist **yth wlat** dŷ hun eirŷoet kerd kŷstal ac a ganant hwŷ *thou hast never heard in thy own country such song as they will sing* ; ny byd vy eneit **ym korff** *my life will not be in my body* ; pa rŷw weith ŷd wŷti **yndaw** *in what manner of work art thou engaged?* **ym penn** y seith mŷned *at the end of the seven years* ; gormod vyd agheu gwas kystal ac Edern **yn sarhaet** *morwyn the death of so excellent a youth as Edern will be too much for an insult to a maiden.* In many phrases :—dwy (ŷstondard) yssyd **yn y vlaen** a dwy **yn y ol** *two standards are before it and two after it* ; **yn ol** y twryf y daw kawat *after the noise will come a shower* ; **ym bron** *close by* ; **yg kylch** y tan round *about the fire* ; edrych a orugant **yn eu kylch** *they looked around them* ; **yg gwyd** Arthur *in the presence of Arthur* ; nat elych **ym herbyn** *that thou shalt not go against me* ; **yn herwyd** gweledigaeth *according to appearance* ; **ŷ mywn** cadeir *in a chair* ; ef a chwawl or a gollassei **hyt yn oet** y tlws lleihaf a gafas *he got all that he had lost even to the smallest treasure* ; ef a welei bebyll **ym plith** y pebylleu ereill *he saw a tent among the other tents* ; y vrenhines a eistedawd **yn ymyl** Galaath *the queen sat beside Galahad.*

197. **yr, er** *for, on account of, since*, e.g. oes obeith gennyt ti ar gaffel dy ellwng ae **yr aur** ae **yr aryant** *hast thou any hope of obtaining thy liberation either for gold or for silver?* py glot a geffy ti **yr llad** gwr marw *what fame wilt thou get for slaying a dead man?* nyt **yr drwc** itti y deuthum *I have not come to thee for evil* ; pei tebygwn y wneuthur ohonat ti **yrof i** beth *if I thought that thou wouldst do something for me* ; **yr y byt** na wnewch hynny *for the world do not do that* ; **yr Duw** a wdost ti dim y wrth Uabon *for God's sake, dost thou know anything of Mabon?* **yr mwyn** y gwr mwyhaf a gery arho vi *for the sake of the man whom thou most lovest, wait for me* ; pa hustyng bynnac **yr y vychanet** a uo y rwng dynyon *whatever whisper, however low, there is between men* ; **yr a** uyrít yndi ny bydei lawnach no chynt *however much was thrown into it, it was not fuller than before* ; oed llesach yr march pei ass archut **yr meittyn** *it would have been better for the horse if thou hadst asked it a while ago* ; y gwr y buost **yr ys talym** o amser yn

y geissaw *the man whom thou hast been seeking for a long time* (lit. *since it is a while of time*).

NOTE.—This preposition is frequent with *oet time*, together with a possessive adjective, e.g. *ny ry giglef i eirmoet I have never heard*; *na welsei eiryoet that he had never seen*. The form *eiryoet* becomes petrified into a phrase used of all persons, e.g. *ny chiglef i eiryoet I have never heard*; *ny chlyweist eiryoet thou hast never seen*.

*heard/*

## THE CONJUNCTION.

198. *a* and; *ac* before vowels and the negative particles *ny*, *na*, and sometimes before other consonants; with the article, *ar*; with possessive adjectives: *am*, *ath*, *ae* etc., e.g. *vyg kewilyd am llit my disgrace and my anger*; *a phryderu a oruc yn uawr and she was very anxious*. *a—a* both *and*, e.g. *y gwassanaeth goreu a allwyf i mi ae gwnaf ac idaw ac y uarch the best service that I can I will render both to him and to his horse*; *a hediw a pheunydyd both to-day and every day*. After the comparative of equality (§ 39), e.g. *vn kyndecket a hi one so fair as she*; similarly, *a honno a aei trwy gallonneu y dynyon ae hofnockaei yn gymeint ac y collei y gwyr eu lliw ac eu nerth and that went through the hearts of the people and terrified them so that the men lost their hue and their strength*. Introducing an accompanying or qualifying circumstance, e.g. *gwelem . . . mynyd mawr geir llaw y coet a hwnnw ar gerdet we saw a great mountain beside the wood, and it walking* RB. 35, 26; *goueileint a delis yndaw o gamhet idaw attal y mab gantaw ac ef yn gwybot y vot yn vab y wr arall he was seized with great sadness because of the wrong that he did in keeping the boy with him though he knew that he was the son of another man* RB. 22, 20; *nyt a mi yn uyw yd aho ef y Gernyw he shall not while I live go to Cornwall* RB. 140, 16. Adversatively, e.g. *mi a rodaf y carcharawr itti ac ny darparyswn y rodi y neb I will give thee the prisoner, although I had not intended to give him to anyone* RB. 128, 26.

199. *achaws* (nominal conjunction) *because*, e.g. *galw Gwrhryr Gwalltawt (leg. Gwalstawt) Ieithoed, achaws (om. WB. 471) yr holl ieithoed a wydyat he summoned Gwrhryr, the interpreter of*



*tongues, because he knew all languages* RB. 114, 14; *o achaws na chaffant gennyt because they do not get from thee* RB. 85, 26.

200. *am na* *because not*, e.g. *tristuart uytaf am na daw I shall be a sorrowful bard because he will not come* MA. 183<sup>b</sup>; *am na weles ef yno na gwr na gwreic ryued vu ganthaw he was astonished because he saw there neither man nor woman* Hg. I., 154.

201. *yr awr* (nominal conjunction) *when*, e.g. *yr awr y kenych ef a a y nywl ymdeith when thou soundest it the cloud will vanish* WB. 451; *yr awr y rodes un llef arnaw yd aeth y nywl ymdeith when he blew a single blast on it the cloud vanished*, ib.

202. *can* *for, since*; neg. *can ny*; with the present of the copula, *canys*, e.g. *yr hynnny hýt hediw yd wýf i yn darparu gwled ýtti, can gwýdýwn i y dout ti ým keissyaw i from that time till to-day I have been preparing a feast for thee, for I knew that thou wouldst come to seek me* WB. 249; *kanys gollyngy yr hynnny mi a rodaf it pedeir punt ar ugeint o arýant since thou wilt not let it go for that, I will give thee twenty-four pounds of silver* WB. 78; *a chanys vy lles i yd oedut ti yn y uenegi im, manac pa fford vei hynny and since thou wert shewing me my advantage, shew how that might be* RB. 177, 15.

NOTE.—The copula form *canys* comes to be used simply in the sense of *can*, e.g. *a chanys nys gwnn (=a chanys gwnn WB. 76) since I do not know it* RB. 54, 30.

203. *cwt, cw* *where*, e.g. *kwt ynt plant y gwr where are the children of the man?* WB. 453; *mýnet a oruc y brenhin yg kýghor kwt gaffei wreic the king took counsel where he could get a wife* ib.; *a wdosti cwd uyd nos yn arhos dyd knowest thou where is night waiting for day?* FB. 146; *a thrýdit rýuet ýv merwerit mor, cv threia, cud echwit, cvd a, cvd ymda, cv treigil, cv threwna and the third wonder is the tumult of the sea where it ebbs, where it swells, where it goes, where it moves about, where it rolls, where it settles* BB. 44<sup>b</sup>.

204. *cyn* *before*, (a) with indicative, e.g. *gwr a rodei gad kyn dybu i dyt a man who used to give battle before his day came* MA. 141<sup>a</sup>; (b) with subjunctive, e.g. *gweinif i hagen ym Reen ri*



**cyn bwyf** deierin *I yet will serve my Lord King before I am of the earth* MA. 142<sup>a</sup>, a **chin ri llethid** ve llatysseint *and before they were slain they had slain* BB. 36<sup>b</sup>.

**205. cyt, cyn, though; negative cyn ny, cyny, cany.**

(a) With indicative, e.g. **kid y lleinv** keudaud nis beivr calon *though it fills the body, it does not stir the heart* BB. 51<sup>a</sup>; **cyd doeth** ef nid aeth yn warthegawc *though he came, he did not go with spoil of cattle* MA. 140<sup>b</sup>.

(b) With subjunctive, e.g. **kŷn nŷ buŷf** arglwŷdes, heb i, mi a wnn beth ŷw hŷnnŷ “*though I am not a lady,*” said she, “*I know what that is*” WB. 51; **ked archwyf** ym llyw y lloergant yn rot, ef am ryt yn geugant *though I ask of my sovereign the moon’s orb as a gift, he will assuredly give it me* MA. 212<sup>a</sup>; a thydi am gwely i **kany welwyf** i dydi *and thou wilt see me, though I see thee not* RB. 173; a **chyt bei** lityawc ef wrthi hi, ef a gymyrth y rybud *and though he was angry with her, he took the warning* WB. p. 215; nyt oed ef nes idi yna no **chyn bei** ar y gam *he was no nearer to her there than though he had been at a walking pace*; neur daruydei yr dayar y lynku heb wybot dim y wrthaw mwy no **chyn ny ry fei** eiryoet vch y dayar *the earth had swallowed it so that nothing more was known of it than though it had never been above the earth* RB. II., 141; annoc y Brytanyeit **megys kyt** bei un onadunt *he incited the Britons as though he had been one of them* RB. II., 94.

NOTE.—In the verb “to be” after **cyt** the 3 sg. imper. regularly takes the place of the 3 sg. pres. subj., e.g. ar mab a geiff enw **kyt boet** drwc gennyt ti *and the boy shall get a name though it displease thee* RB. 69, 23.

**206. cyt union** in the phrase **y gyt ac**, e.g. **y gyt ac y doethant** rac bron Kynan y hannerchassant o bleit amherawdyr Rufein *as they came before Cynan they greeted him on behalf of the Emperor of Rome* RB. II. 113; **y gyt ac nat** oes *since there is not* BCh. 81.

**207. delw** (nominal conjunction) *as*, e.g. **delw yt wytt** pen rieu pen reith yt wyf pen prifueirt om prifyeith *as thou art head of princes, head of law, I am head of chief bards from my most excellent speech* MA. 157a.

**208. eissoes** *however, nevertheless*, e.g. a dic vu wreic y melinyd wrth Peredur, ac **eissoes** y melinyd a rodes aryant yn echwyn idaw *and the miller's wife was wroth with Peredur; nevertheless the miller gave him a loan of money* RB. 229.

**209. eithyr na** *except that not*, e.g. ac erbyn auory y vot yn gystal ac y bu oreu, **eithyr na byd** llyueryd gantaw *and by the morrow he will be as good as he ever was, except that he will not have the power of speech* RB. 31.

**210. gwedy after**; negative **gwedy na**:—(a) with indicative, e.g. keugant kŷwraghaun (MS. -um) **wide kywisscarun** (MS. -an) *verily we shall meet after we part* BB. 12<sup>b</sup>; a **gwedy na allwys** Kaswallawn kael y gwr . . . gogyuadaw Auarwy a oruc *and after Kaswallawn could not get the man, he threatened Auarwy.*

(b) With subjunctive, e.g. a **gwedy byryer** llawer yndi, ef a ovynt itt *and after a quantity has been thrown into it, he will ask thee* RB. 14; mwy boen yw koffau kyuoeth **gwedy coller** it is a greater torment to remember power after it is lost RB. II. 67; kanys ymdiret a wnaei ef caffel clot . . . **gwedy y gorffei** ar y alon *for he trusted that he would get fame after he had conquered his enemies* RB. II. 7; kanys **gwedy darffei** idaw ef llad Galogryuant diogel oed ganthaw y lledit ynteu gwedy hynny *for after he had slain Galogryvant he was sure that he would be slain after that* Hg. I. 114; a **gwedy na chaffei** dagneued o neb ryw ford y gantaw, sef a wnaeth anuon y geissaw nerth a chanorthwy y gan Ulkesar *and after he could not get peace from him in any way, he sent to seek support and help from Julius Caesar* RB. II. 89.

**211. hagen** *yet, however*, e.g. a phan deuthant yno tybygu rylad Kei. wynt a welsant **hagen**, or kaffei vedic da y bydei vyw *and when they came there, they thought that Kei had been killed. They saw, however, that if he got a good leech he would live* RB. 212, 11.

**212. herwyd, yn herwyd** (nominal conjunction) *according as*, e.g. a **herwyd y dyweit y** kŷuarwŷdŷt ef a uu arglwŷd wedŷ hŷnnŷ ar Wyned *and as the story says, he was lord over Gwynedd after that* WB. 111; a gwedy eu hannoc uelly **yn herwyd y gallei**, erchi a wnaeth dineu delw efydeit drwy danawl geluydyt *and after he had*

*thus exhorted them to the best of his power, he asked that a bronze effigy should be cast through the art of fire* RB. II. 138.

**213. hevyt** *further, also, likewise*, e.g. *ÿ Duv ÿ harchaw arch hewid of God I will ask a request still* BB. 36<sup>a</sup>, *ac enryuedodeu ereill heuyt a weleist yno and other wonders likewise thou sawest there* RB. 233, 2.

**214. hyt** (nominal conjunction).

1. *as long as, as far as*.

(a) With the indicative, e.g. *ti a geffy y kyfarws a notto dy benn ath dauawt, hyt y sych gwynt, hyt y gwlych glaw, hyt y treigyl heul thou shalt have the gift that thy mouth and thy tongue indicate, as long as wind dries, as long as rain wets, as long as the sun revolves* RB. 105, 25; *hyt y gwelir ymi gwlat ffrwythlawn yw hon as far as appears to me, this is a fruitful land* RB. II. 116; *nyt aeth neb is nef hyt yd aeth ef no one under heaven went as far as he* FB. 197.

(b) With the subjunctive, e.g. *taw hyt y mynnych be silent as long as thou wilt* RB. 13, 8.

2. **hyt na** *so that not*.

(a) With indicative (of consequence), e.g. *drycyruerth a wnaeth hyt nat oed well genti y byw noe marw she made lamentation so that she did not deem her life better than her death* RB. 51, 18.

(b) With subjunctive (of purpose), e.g. *carchara wynt hyt nat elont dracheuyn imprison them so that they may not go back* RB. 34, 14.

**215. lle** (nominal conjunction) *where*; negative **lle ny**, e.g. *lle y gwelych eglwys kan dy pader wrthi wherever thou seest a church, recite thy pater to it* RB. 195; *am uenegi ohonaf i ytti dy les lle nys metrut dy hun because I shewed thee thy advantage where thou didst not think of it thyself* RB. 177.

**216. mal, val** (O.W. **amal** = Ir. **amail**).

1. **as**, *when*.

(a) With indicative, e.g. *sef mal yd eistedassant that is how they sat* WB. p. 224; *pei gwypwn vot yn da gennyt ti mal y mae da gennyf i if I knew that it pleased thee as it pleases me* RB. 213; *ual y daw y mywn arganuot yr adanc a wnaeth as he came in, he perceived the monster* RB. 226, 5; *ÿd adnabu ÿr amherawdyr ÿ wlat*

**mal y gwelas** *the emperor recognised the country when he saw it* WB. 186.

(b) With subjunctive, e.g. **mi wnaf ual y dywettych di** *I shall act as thou mayest direct* RB. 276; **hwýnt ae torrýnt ual y dyckid attunt** *they broke them as they were brought to them.*

2. *as if* (with past subjunctive), e.g. **mal pei** *teu uei as if it were thine* RB. 127; **dyuot yma auory ym kymryt i mal na wyppwn i dim y wrth hynny** *to come here to-morrow to take me as if I knew nothing about it* WB. p. 215.

3. *so that.*

(a) With indicative (of consequence), e.g. **kyscu a wneuthum i ual na wybuum** *pan aeth ef I slept so that I did not know when he went* RB. 247, 27.

(b) With subjunctive (of purpose), e.g. **par weithon wahard y llongeu . . . ual nat** *el neb y Gymry issue now a prohibition to the ships so that no one may go to Wales* RB. 34, 12; **ereill a gyghorei itt rodi dy uerch y un o dyledogyon y deyrnas hon ual y bei vrenhin gwedy ti** *others advised thee to give thy daughter to one of the nobles of this kingdom so that he might be king after thee* RB. II. 114.

#### 217. **megys ; megys na.**

1. *as*, e.g. **y gwledychwys Peredur gyt ar amherodres pedeir blyned ar dec, megys y dyweit** *yr ystoria Peredur ruled with the empress for fourteen years, as the story tells* RB. 232; **megys y gallwys gyntaf** *ef a aeth parth a Chaerwynt as soon as he could he went towards Caerwynt* RB. II. 173; **megys y del y coelbrenn udunt y deholir** *as the lot falls to them they are banished* RB. II. 131.

2. *as if*, e.g. **y mgaru a orugant megys na ry ymwelynt** *drwy lawer o yspeit kyn no hynny they embraced one another, as if they had not seen one another for a long time before that* RB. II. 186.

3. *so that*, e.g. **pa achaws na ladwn ni y mynach hwnn megys y kaffo** *Gwrtheyrn gwedy hynny y deyrnas why do we not slay this monk, that Vortigern may thereafter get the kingdom?* RB. II. 129.

218. **myn** *where*, e.g. **dyuot a orugant myn yd oed** *yr heussawr they came to where the herdsman was* RB. 115, 13; **mýn yd vo truin yd uit trev** *wherever there is a nose, there will be a sneeze* BB. 42a.

219. **namyn, namwyn** *except, but.*

e.g. nýt edewis uynet **namyn** hýt yd elhut titheu *I did not promise to go except so far as thou shouldst go* WB. 472; paham y kymerwn ninneu hynny y gan y taeogeu lladron . . . **namyn** eu llad hwy oll *why do we take this from these thievish churls and not rather slay them all?* RB. 49; y prenn a dyfawd yn dec . . . **namyn na** thyfawd neb ryw ffrwyth arnaw *the tree grew fairly, except that no manner of fruit grew upon it* Hg. I. 130.

220. 1. **neu** = (Ir. *nō*) *or*, e.g. nýt oed un llestýr . . . **namyn** eur **neu** aryant **neu** uuelýn *there was not a single vessel...except gold or silver or horn* WB. 227.

221. 2. **neu**, before vowels **neut**; with the present of the copula **neut**; with **ry, neur** (§ 95 note), with infixed pronoun: **neu-m**, etc. The original meaning may have been *now*, but the precise force of the particle is not altogether clear.

e.g. pan douthume attad oeth bichan vi anuad. **neu** rimartuad oth laur kiueithad *when I came to thee, my ill was small; now I have been blackened through thy...co-operation* BB. 11<sup>b</sup>; och, heb y Riannon, paham y rody di atteb uelly; **neus** **rodes** uelly arglwydes yg gwyd gwyrd, heb y mackwy "*Alas!*" said Riannon, "*why dost thou answer so?*" "*I have so answered, lady, before nobles,*" said the youth RB. 13; **neus** **gwarchae** mynwent y mynwes daear, **neud** gwar gwawr trydar *now the graveyard imprisons him in the bosom of the earth, now the light of battle is gentle* MA. 160<sup>a</sup>; **neu** chwithieu pan doethawch. **neur** **doetham** y erchi Olwen *whence have ye come? We have come to ask for Olwen* RB. 118. Many examples will be found in MA. 275<sup>b</sup>.

222. **no, noc** *than*; with the article, **nor**; with possessive adjectives **nom, noth, noe** etc., e.g. oed melýnach ý fenn **no** blodeu ý banadýl *her head was yellower than the blossom of the broom* WB. 476; **noc** amws naw gaýaf oed mwy *he was bigger than a stallion of nine years* WB. 472; nachaf ý twrýf ýn dýfot yn vwy . . . **noc** y dywedassei ý gwr du *behold the dín became greater than the black man had said* WB. 231; a llawenach uuwyth wrthyf y nos

hono **nor** nos gynt *I had greater welcome that night than the night before* WB. 233.

With the particle **et**, **nocet**, **nocyt**, **nogyt**, e.g. dial Duw arnaf onyt dewissaf (*leg.* dewissach) genhyf uy agheu oe law ef **nocet** o law arall *God's vengeance on me if I would not rather die by his hand than by the hand of another* WB. p. 210; pa beth yssyd iawnach weithon **nocy**t na chretter idaw *what is more proper now than that he should not be believed?* CM. 76.

NOTE.—For **et** see Rev. Celt. VI. 57.

223. **nu**, *now*, e.g. **nu** ným car i Guendit *now Gwendydd loves me not* BB. 25<sup>b</sup>; yth law di **nu** y rodaf i *into thy hand now I will give it* RB. 266; beth bynnac **nu** a dylyych, kymer yr un march ar dec *whatever then thou art entitled to, take the eleven horses* RB. 279.

NOTE.—In the usual Mid.W. orthography the word should be written **nw** (=Ir. nu); it had gone out of use, and so the scribes retained the spelling of an earlier period. Cf. Loth Mab. II. 195.

224. **o**, before vowels **ot** *if*; also **or**, **os**; negative **ony**, before vowels **onyt**; with the present of the copula **os**, negative **onyt**.

(a) With present indicative, e.g. **ot** ey yr hon (sc. fford) issot ny deuy trachefyn vyth *if thou goest by the lower one, thou wilt never return* WB. p. 223; **os** býw uyðaf i . . . ti a glýwý chwetleu **o** dianghaf *if I live, thou shalt hear tidings, if I escape* WB. 392; **or** dianghaf i . . . uyg kýwirdeb am cariat a uyd ar ý uorwýn . . . **ony** dianghaf uinheu kýndiweiret uyð ý uorwýn a chýnt *if I escape, the maiden shall have my loyalty and my love; if I do not escape, she will be as pure as before* WB. 396; mi ath amdiffýnaf **os** gallaf *I will defend thee if I can*; ný mwynha ý gwaet **onyt** ýn dwým ý keffir *the blood is of no use unless it is got warm*.

NOTE 1.—A negative clause continuing a clause introduced by **o** has **ae na** with the subjunctive (§ 236, note 1).

NOTE 2.—**onyt** sinks to the sense of *except, but* (Mod.W. **ond**), e.g. ny mynnaf i dim **onyt** mynet yr gware *I desire nothing but to go to the play* WB. p. 224; ny mynnaf i neb **onyt** Duw *I desire no one but God* Hg. I. 178.

(b) With the preterite and pluperfect, e.g. **or** bu (= **os** RB. 104) ar dy gam ý dýuuost ý mýwn, dos ar dý redec allan *if thou camest in at a walk, go out at a run* WB. 458; **o** ry dywedyssei hitheu

dim a uei wrthwyneb ganthaw ef, hi a wnaei iawn idaw *if she had said anything to displease him, she would give him satisfaction.* Hg. II. 130.

(c) With the past subjunctive, e.g. **o bei** orderch itt goreu gorderch oedut *if thou hadst a mistress, thou wouldst be a matchless lover* WB. 237; **or bei** eisseu dim arnaw nŷ adei ef hun uŷth ar legat dŷn *if he lacked anything, he would never allow sleep on any man's eye* WB. 465; dywedut na bydei vy eneit ym corff **only delei** = **deuhei** WB. 256) ef ym amdiffyn i *they said that my life would not be in my body, unless she came to defend me* RB. 187.

X

NOTE 4.—It will be observed that in the last example corresponding to what in direct speech would be **o daw** the older text has the imperfect indicative, the later the past subjunctive.

NOTE 5.—**os** contains the infixed pronoun of the third person singular, **os gallaf** *if I am able (to do) it*; from such cases **os** develops into a special form of the conjunction. **or** comes from **o + ry** as **neur** from **neu + ry** (§ 95 note), so that originally it would have been used before those tenses with which **ry** was used. But it tended to spread beyond its proper bounds, cf. **or clywy, or gwely** RB. 195 = **o chlywy, o gwely** WB. 119, 120.

225. 1. **pan** *whence?* e.g. **pan iv** dŷ echen *whence is thy lineage?* BB. 49<sup>b</sup>; guaur llv pŷ dv **pan doit.** **Ban deuaw** o kad *"hero of a host, whence comest thou?"* "I come from battle" BB. ib.; pa le **pan deuy di . . . pan deuaf** o lys Arthur *"whence comest thou?"* "I come from Arthur's court" RB. 200, 1. Note the repetition of **pan** in the answer.

X

226. 2. **pan** *when.*

(a) With present (or future) indicative, e.g. **kŷntaw** geir a dŷwedaw ŷ bore **ban kyuodaw** *the first word that I will say in the morning when I arise* BB. 41<sup>b</sup>; **ban wanha** ŷ gnaud *when his flesh becomes feeble* BB. 10<sup>a</sup>; **pan agorawr** (= **agerer** RB. 103, 24) ŷ porth . . . **bŷdhawt** ragot ti gŷntaf ŷd agorawr ŷ porth *when the gate is opened, it will be opened for thee first* WB. 456.

NOTE.—This construction gives place to **pan** with the subjunctive.

(b) With a past tense of the indicative, e.g. a **phan yt** oed yn mynet yr llog ac **na welei** neb y gyt ac ef namyn ar y drydyd . . . y dywawt *and when he was going to the ship and saw no one with him save his two companions, he said* RB. II. 67; a **ffan deuthum**

yno hoffach oed genhŷf *and when I came there it pleased me more* WB. 229; **pan glywssynt** hwy y uarwolyaeth ef yd ym-gynullyssynt *when they had heard of his death, they had assembled* RB. II. 173.

(c) With the subjunctive, e.g. **pan delych** dy hun yth wlat ti a wely *when thou thyself comest to thy land thou wilt see* RB. 6, 10; **pan agorer** y creu beunydyd a allan *when the pen is opened every day, it goes forth* RB. 78; **pan elhei** y teulu y yvet y gwin . . . nyt aey ef y gyt a neb onadunt wy *whenever his household went to drink the wine he would not go with any of them* RB. 85.

3. In some phrases.

(a) **hyt pan** *until*, e.g. ar pump meis hynny a uagassant **hyt pan uuant** weisson mawr *and those four boys they reared till they were big lads* RB. 43; Duw a wyr nat ymchoelwn **hyt pann welhom** y uorwyn *God knows that we will not return till we see the maiden* RB. 117.

(b) **or pan** *from the time that*, e.g. **or pan gauas** y tir ny allwys na chi na dyn na march y ganhymdeith *from the time that it reached the land neither dog nor man nor horse could keep up with it* RB. 141; **or pann agoroch** y drws hwnnw ny ellwch uot yno *after ye open that door ye will not be able to be there* RB. 40.

(c) **yr pan** *since the time that*, e.g. kyvriuwch awch treul **yr pan doethawch** yma *reckon up your expenditure since ye came hither* RB. 228; gwedy dwyn ar gof onadunt eu collet **yr pan gollyssynt** arglwydiaeth ynys Brydein *after they called to mind their losses since they had lost the lordship of Britain* RB. II. 108.

4. *since*, e.g. gwae ni **pann** yn trewit o delli *woe to us that we have been struck by blindness* LA. 84; pa gyfryw wr yw awch tat chwi **pan allo** lleassu pawb uelly *what kind of a man is your father that he can kill everyone in this way?* RB. 221; pa drwc a digoneis i ytti **pan wnelut** titheu ymi . . . a wnaethost hediw *what evil have I done to thee that thou shouldst do to me what thou hast done to-day?* WB. 232.

5. *that*, e.g. ny wydym **pan** oed ti a grogem *we knew not that it was thou whom we were crucifying* FB. 122. In prose it is



common in the phrase **pan yw** *that it is*, e.g. *y dywawt y gwr . . . pan yw* Peredur ae goruwassei *the man said that Peredur had overcome him* RB.

227. **pei** *if*, negative **pei na** ; followed by the past subjunctive or by the pluperfect indicative which takes its place (§ 109c), e.g. **pei as gwypwn** mi ae dywedwn *if I knew it, I would tell it* RB. 130 ; *nyt oed gyfyg gennyf ymlad a thidi bei na bei yr anifeil gyt a thi I should not think it difficult to fight with thee if the beast were not with thee* RB. 189 ; a **phei na ry bylei** y cledyf ar vodrwyeu y benffestin ef a vuassei agheuawl or dyrnawt honnw *et nisi collisione cassidis mucronem hebetasset, mortiferum vulnus forsitan intulisset* RB. II. 198 ; *buassei well itti pei rodassut nawd yr mackwy it would have been better for thee if thou hadst given protection to the youth* RB. 216.

NOTE.—**pei, bei** is in origin sg. 3 past subjunctive of **bot**. By itself it has the sense of *if it were*, e.g. **pei oet idaw ef a ladyssit** *if he had been of age, he would have been slain* RB. 193.

228. **pryt na** (nominal conjunction) *since not*.

(a) with the indicative, e.g. *py holy di y mi pryt nam gedy yn y tarren honn what dost thou seek of me that thou dost not leave me in peace on this stony height?* RB. 128 ; a **phryt na thygyawd** idaw geissyaw mynet y mywn trist vu ganthaw *and since he did not succeed in getting in he was sad* Hg. I. 39.

(b) With the subjunctive, e.g. *pa uedwl yw dy teu di unben pryt na bwyttehych what is in thy mind, sir, that thou dost not eat? (that keeps thee from eating)* RB. 292 ; *py wyneb yssyd arnat ti pryt na delut y edrych y gofot a uu arnaf i what face hast thou that thou didst not come to see the grief that was upon me?* RB. 176.

229. **pyr** (**py + yr** *for what?*).

1. *Why?* e.g. **pyr** (= **py rac** RB. 126) **y kyuerchy dy** *why dost thou call?* WB. 486.

2. *Since, that*, e.g. *gvae vi pir imteith genhide in kyueith woe to me that I walked in associateship with thee* BB. 11<sup>b</sup>.

230. **tra** *while* ; often preceded by **hyt**.

(a) With the past indicative, e.g. *ny omedwyt neb tra barhaawd no one met with refusal while it lasted* RB. 17 ; y

tyuawd heint yndaw a nychtawt **hyt tra uu** uyw *there developed in him a sickness and a wasting as long as he lived* RB. 108.

(b) With the subjunctive, e.g. **tra vych** ti yn kyscu mi a af y ymwelet ar iarll *while thou art sleeping, I will go to see the earl* WB. p. 214; **hyt tra ym gatter** yn vyw hanbyd gwaeth drem vy llygeit *while I am left alive my eyesight will be worse* RB. 119; **tra uei** y mywn coet ar vric y coet y kerdei *while he was in a wood he would walk on the tops of the trees* RB. 108; **pei nam goganewch . . . mi a gysgwn tra uewn** yn aros vy mwyt *if you would not laugh at me, I would sleep while I wait for my food* RB. 162; **hyt tra uei** yn gorffywys yd archei eu blygaw yn vyw rac y vron *while he was resting he asked that they should be flayed alive before him* RB. II. 79.

*hkingo to flay*

231. **wrth** *because*; negative **wrth na**, e.g. **adolwyn** yw genhyf itt y gadw yn da, **wrth nas rodwn** i ef iti yr y seith dinas goreu yth gyuoeth, ac **wrth** hefyt **y lledir** dy benn etwa ac ef *I entreat thee to guard it well, because I would not give it thee for the seven best towns in thy kingdom, and because too I will yet cut off thy head with it* CM. 31; **guerth na buost** vffil *because thou hast not been submissive* BB. 11<sup>b</sup>.

232. **yn** 1. *where*, e.g. **dos ragot y lys Arthur yn y** (= **yn lle** RB. 195) **mae** goreu y gwyr *go to Arthur's court where the men are best* WB. 119; **yn** (= **lle** RB. 195) **y gwelych** eglwys can dy pater wrthi *where thou seest a church, recite thy pater to it* WB. 119.

2. *when*, e.g. **yn y** bo canmoledig Gruffudd . . . cerddwn weithon ar ddarogan Merddin *when Gruffudd has been praised, let us now pass to the prophecy of Merlin* MA. 723<sup>a</sup>; **yn y** bei orchyuygedic anghau a gyuodes y trydyd dyd *who, when death had been overcome, arose on the third day* Hg. II. 76.

NOTE.—See Rev. Celt. 28, p. 198.

233. **yny** *until*.

(a) With a past indicative (or historic present), e.g. **wynt** a drigyassant **yny daruu** idaw ef hynny *they stayed until he had finished that* RB. 267; **dyuot** a orugant yr holl niferoed **hyny**

**vydant** yn emyl y kae *the whole multitude came till they were beside the enclosure* WB. p 224.

(b) With the subjunctive, e.g. arhowch y gyt a mi **yny darffo** ym gymryt gwrogaeth vyg goreugwyr *wait with me till I have received the homage of my nobles* RB. 267 ; y byryw[y]t y kalaned yn y peir **yny uei** yn llawn *the corpses were cast into the cauldron till it should be full* RB. 39.

**234. yr na** *since not, though not.*

(a) With indicative, e.g. am ernyw **yr na daw** *it afflicted me since he will not come* MA. 183<sup>b</sup>.

(b) With subjunctive, e.g. darogan yw idaw kaffel etiued ohonat ti **yr nas kaffo** o arall *it is his fate that he shall have offspring of thee though he has had none of another* RB. 101 ; ny chyffroes un aelawt ar Gopart yr y uedru mwy noc **yr na metrit** *not one limb of Copart was affected, though it was hit more than though it had not been hit* Hg. II. 149.

## NEGATIVE PARTICLES.

**235. ny**, before a vowel **nyt** ; infixed pronouns **ny-m-**, **ny-th-**, **ny-s-**, etc.

(a) Except before the imperative, **ny** is the regular negative in main clauses, e.g. **ny chelaf** *I will not conceal* ; **ny lyuassei** *neb no one dared* ; **nyt oed** da gennyf ynneu hynny *that did not please me* ; **ny bo** teu dy benn *may not thy head be thine*.

(b) **ny** introduces relative clauses (where Bret. and Corn. like Ir. have **na**), e.g. yn y wlad **nŷ rŷ welei** eiroet *in a country that he had never seen*.

NOTE.—In such clauses **na** is exceptional in Welsh, e.g. yssit **nas keffych** (by yssyd **ny cheffych** 120) *there is something that thou wilt not get* RB. 121—123.

**236. na**, before a vowel **nat** ; with infixed pronouns **na-m-** etc. This is the regular negative in dependent clauses, e.g. ryued yw gennyf i **nam atwaenost** *I wonder that thou dost not know me* ; ef a gadarnhaei y gwennwynei y dwfyr hwnnw genedyl y Corannyeit

ac **na** ladei ac **nat** eidigauei neb oe genedyl ehun *he gave assurance that that water would poison the race of the Corannyeit, and would not kill and would not harm anyone of his own race* RB. 96; breid vu **na** syrthyawd yr llawr *she almost fell to the ground* Hg. I. 308; mi a wnaf itt **na** bo reit itt uot yn trist *I will bring it about for thee that there will be no need for thee to be sad*; golychaf y wledic pendefic mawr **na** bwyf trist *I will entreat the king, the great Prince, that I may not be sad* FB. 182. Further examples will be found under the conjunctions (but **can** **ny**, **cyn** **ny**, **ony**).

NOTE 1.—**na** is found in the second member of a conditional sentence introduced by **o** (of which the negative is **ony**), e.g. **o** gwely vwyd a diawt, or byd reit itt wrthaw ac **na** bo **o** wybot a dayoni y rodi itt, kymer dy hun ef *if thou seest food and drink, if thou hast need of it, and no one has the courtesy and kindness to give it thee, take it thyself* RB. 195.

NOTE 2.—The use of **na** may be noted in sentences like the following: **kans** estrawn genedyl a phaganyeit ywch ac **nat** atwen inheu etwa nach moes nach deuodeu *for ye are foreigners and pagans, and I do not yet know your character or your customs* RB. II. 134; a gwedy menegi y bawp **o** tywyssogyon Freinc ar neilltu ac **na** chauas **na** phorth **na** nerth *after he had set forth the case to each of the chiefs of France separately and got neither help nor support* RB. II. 74.

237. **na**, before vowel **nac** (cf. Ir. *näch*-); with infixed pronouns **na-m-** etc. **na(c)** is used:—

(a) As the negative with the imperative, e.g. **na** dos *do not go*; **nac** amouyn amdanaw *do not ask about it*. **na** is also sometimes found with the subjunctive used in an imperative sense, e.g. **na** discýnných *do not dismount* WB. 399.

(b) In negative answers to questions (§ 241).

(c) Not preceded by a question, in vivid negation, e.g. dyret y uwytta, heb ef. **nac** af yrof a Duw, heb hi *"come to eat," said he. "I will not go, between God and me," said she* RB. 289; eres yw gennyf **na** uedrut gymedroli ar wneuthur esgidyeu wrth uessur. **na** uedreis, heb ynteu. mi<sup>n</sup> ae metraf weithon *"I am surprised that thou couldst not succeed in making shoes by measurement."* *"I could not," said he; "I shall be able to do it now"* RB. 70; erchi a oruc y iarll y Enit ymdiarchenu a chymryt gwisc arall ymdanei. **na** uynnaf yrof a Duw, heb hi *the earl asked Enid to unrobe*

*herself and put on another dress. "I will not, between God and me," said she.*

NOTE.—For a similar usage in the other British languages and in Irish see the "Transactions of the London Philological Society" 1898-9, page 54, note.

238. **na**, disjunctive particle; before vowels **nae**; with the article **nar**; with infixed possessive adjectives **nam**, **nath**, **nae** etc., e.g. tegach oed noc y gallei neb y gredu **nae** dywedut *he was fairer than anyone could believe or tell* CM. 1; heb wybot dim or vrat **nae** thybyaw *without knowing or suspecting anything of the treachery* RB. II. 218; **na**—**na**, e.g. ny byd reit itt torri **na** gwaew **na** chledyf *there will be no need for thee to break either spear or sword*; y Duw y dygaf vyg kyffes **nae** werthu **nae** ellwng nas gwnaf i *I vow to God that I will neither sell it nor let it go* RB. 56; beth bynnac a uo y marchawc racco **na** byw **na** marw *whatever becomes of yonder knight, whether he lives or dies* RB. 289; py beth bynhac a gaffer drwy **na** thwyll **na** chedernit *whatever is got through treachery or force* RB. II. 206; pan dycko beich **na** mawr **na** bychan *uo when he brings a load whether it be great or small* RB. 109.

## INTERROGATIVE AND RESPONSIVE PARTICLES.

### INTERROGATIVE PARTICLES.

239. **a**; with the present of the copula **ae** (§ 155η).

(a) In direct questions, e.g. **a** weleist di varchawc *hast thou seen a horseman?* **ae** amser ynni vynet yr byrdeu *is it time for us to go to table?*

(b) In indirect questions, e.g. govyn a oruc y gwr y Peredur **a** wydyat llad a chledyf *the man asked Peredur whether he knew to smite with a sword*; edrych a oruc **a** yttoed ef yn deffroi *she looked to see if he was stirring.*

(c) **ae**—**ae** *whether—or*, e.g. yn amheu beth a dywedei **ae** gwir **ae** geu *doubting whether what he said was true or false* RB. II. 47; e kefreyth a deueyt bod en yaun provy **ae** moruyn **ae** nyt

moruyn *the law says it is right to try whether she is a maiden or whether she is not a maiden* BCh. p. 40; ny wydyat hitheu beth a wnaei . . . **ae** dywedut hynny **ae** tewi *she did not know what she should do, whether she should tell that or keep silent* R.B. 270; *either—or*, e.g. a uynny di **ae** diawt **ae** dim *dost thou desire drink or anything?* RB. 276; a thebic yw genhyf i na doeth y wrthunt heb lad **ae** rei onadunt **ae** cwbyl *and I think that he did not leave them without slaying either some or all of them* WB. p. 221.

**240. pony** (= Ir. cani), before vowels **ponyt**; with the present of the copula **ponyt** = *nonne?* e.g. **pony** chlywy di *dost thou not hear?* RB. 272; **ponyt** oed iawn y titheu *would it not be right for thee?* RB. 246.

### RESPONSIVE PARTICLES.

**241.** In answers to questions the verb or the predicate noun is often repeated, e.g. a gaffaf i letty gennyti ti, heb y Peredur. **keffy**, heb ynteu, yn llawen “*shall I get a lodging with thee?*” said Peredur. “*Yes,*” said he, “*gladly*”; a yttiwi Kei yn llys Arthur. Yttiwi “*is Kei in Arthur’s court?*” “*Yes*”; **ae** amser ynni vynet yr byrdeu. **amser** “*is it time for us to go to table?*” “*Yes*.” In negative answers **na(c)** is used, e.g. a atwaenost di y marchawc racco mawr. **nac atwen** “*knowest thou yonder great horseman?*” “*No*”; dywet, heb ef, a vu ef gennyti a gwneuthur anuod arnat. **na vu**, myn vyg cret, heb hi, na cham nys goruc ym “*tell me,*” said he, “*was he with thee and did he do violence to thee?*” “*No,*” said she, “*and he did me no wrong*”; **ae** byw. **na vyw** “*is he alive?*” “*No*.” In answer to **ae**, **nac ef** (= Mod.W. **nage**) is found, e.g. dywet unbenn, heb ef, **ae** o anwybot **ae** o ryfyc y keissut ti colli ohonof i vy mreint . . . **nac ef**, heb y Gereint, ny wydywn i kaethu fford y neb “*tell me, sir, is it through ignorance or arrogance that thou didst seek to make me lose my privilege?*” “*No,*” said Gereint, “*I did not know that the road was debarred to any one*” WB. p. 217.

NOTE.—**nac ef** is also found without a preceding question, e.g. arhowech vi yma, heb y Peredur, mi a af y ymwelet ar pryf. **nac ef**, arglwyd, heb wynt, awn y gyt y ymlad ar pryf “*wait for me here,*” said Peredur, “*I will go to visit the worm.*” “*Nay, lord,*” said they, “*let us go together to fight with the worm.*”

242. Certain particles are used in answer.

**ie, ieu**, affirmatively, e.g. *ae gwr y Arthur wyt ti. Ie myn vyg kret, heb y Peredur "art thou one of Arthur's men?" "Yes, by my faith," said Peredur; gouyn a wnaeth ef yr gwr . . . ae offeiryat oed ef. Ieu arglwyd, heb ynteu he asked the man if he was a priest. "Yes, Lord," said he.*

**do** (cf. Ir. *tó*) affirmative, **nado** (Ir. *nā thō*) negatively, in answer to a preterite (or pluperfect of indirect question), e.g. *a unben, heb ef, a leweist ti dy ginnyaw. do, heb ef "Sir," said he, "hast thou eaten thy dinner?" "Yes," said he; deffroi a oruc Arthur a gofyn a gysgassei hayach. do arglwyd, heb yr Owein, dalym Arthur awoke and asked if he had slept for some time. "Yes," said Owein, "for a while." a vwyteeist di dim hediw. nado, heb ynteu "hast thou eaten anything to-day?" "No," said he.*

NOTE.—Both **ie, ieu** and **nado** are found without a preceding question, e.g. *ar hýnny llýma hitheu ýr iarllles ýn datlewygu. ie, heb hi, ae kychwyn a uýnný ti. ie, heb ef thereupon lo the countess recovered from her swoon. "Really," said she "dost thou desire to set forth?" "Yes," said he WB. 119; ie (=ieu RB. 210), heb y Peredur, ýma y býdwn heno "truly," said Peredur, we will remain here to-night" WB. 139; mi a debygaf...na cheueist na bwyf na diawt. nado yrof a Duw, heb ynteu "I think that thou hast got neither food nor drink." "No, between God and me," said he RB. 275.*

## THE INTERJECTION.

243. Interjections proper are :—

**a, ha** (= Ir. *ā*), in address, e.g. **a vorwýn**, heb y Peredur, a doý ti ý dangos imi ýr aniuail hwnnw "*maiden," said Peredur, "wilt thou come to shew me that beast?" ha (=a WB. 169) unbenn,* heb y uorwyn, pei gwnelut vyg kyghor . . . ti a gaeut y drws "*Lord," said the maiden, "if thou wouldst follow my advice, thou wouldst shut the door"* RB. 235.

**oi a**, e.g. **oi a uorwyn dec** a bery di bot vym march i am arueu yn vn lletty a mi heno *hark! my fair maid, wilt thou see that my horse and my arms are in the same lodging with me to-night?* RB. 217; dyhed a beth bot gwr kystal a thi heb gedymdeith;

**oi a wrda** y mae y mi gedymdeith "*it is a strange thing that a man like thee should have no companion.*" "*But, my lord, I have a companion*" RB. 127.

**oian a**, e.g. **oian a parchellan** a parchell dedwit *ho! little pig, happy pig* BB. 26<sup>b</sup>.

**och**, e.g. **och Iessu** na dýffv wý nihenit kýn dýffod ar wi llave lleith mab Guendit *O Jesus that my end had come before the death of Gwendydd's son came upon my hand* BB. 25<sup>b</sup>; **och**, heb y Riannon, paham y rody di ateb uelly "*alas!*" said Riannon, "*why dost thou answer thus?*" RB. 13; erchi y vendyth a wnaeth; **och a truan**, heb ef, ny dylyy gaffel bendyth *he asked him for his blessing. "Unhappy wretch," said he, "thou dost not deserve a blessing"* RB. 236.

**ub**, e.g. neu chwitheu pwý ýwch. kenhadeu Arthur ýssýd ýma yn erchi Olwenn; **vb wyr** nawd dýw ragoch, ýr ý být na wnewch hýnný "*and who are you?*" "*Messengers of Arthur that are here seeking Olwen.*" "*Alack! men, God preserve you. For the world do not do that*" WB. 473.

244. Of an interjectional character are the following :—**llyma** *lo here!* (like Fr. **voici**), e.g. **llyma** weithon ual ýd hellawd Arthur ý carw *Lo now! this is how Arthur hunted the stag* WB. 402; **llyma** ý uorwýn ý kefeist ti dy warthrud oe achaws *See here is the maiden on whose account thou didst get thy shame* WB. 407. Also **llyman** RB. 87, WB. 185, p. 92<sup>b</sup>; **llyna** *lo there!* (like Fr. **voilà**), e.g. **llyna** ýssýd iawnaf am hýnný *Lo! that is the fairest course with reference to that* WB. 406; ie vorwýn, heb y Kei, **llyna** vedru ýn drwc "*Indeed, woman,*" said Kei, "*that is ill behaviour*" WB. 123; **nachaf** *lo! behold!* e.g. **nachaf** uarchawc yn dyuot yr porth *behold a horseman coming to the gate* RB. 233; **wely dy** (lit. *dost thou see?*) *lo! behold!* e.g. **wely dý** racco (= **weluch chwi** racw WB. p. 94<sup>a</sup>) ý gaer *Lo! yonder is the city* WB. 185.



A Middle-Welsh  
Reader



# I. LEAR AND HIS DAUGHTERS.<sup>a</sup>

## FROM THE RED BOOK OF HERGEST.

1. Ac yna gŵedy marŵ Bleiddu, y drychafwyt<sup>1</sup> Lyr y vab ynteu yn vrenhin. A thrugein<sup>2</sup> nlyned y bu yn llywyaŵ y vrenhinyaeth<sup>3</sup> yn wraŵl, ac a adeilŵys dinas ar auon Soram, ac ae gelŵis Kaer Lyr; ac yn Saesnec y gelŵir Leissestyr. Ac ny bu idaŵ un mab namyn teir merchet. Sef oed enŵeu y verchet:<sup>4</sup> Goronilla, Ragaŵ,<sup>5</sup> Cordeilla. A diruaŵr y karei eu tat ŵynt, a mŵyaf eissoes y karei y verch jeuaf idaŵ Cordeilla.

2. A phan yttoed yn llythraŵ parth ae henein,<sup>1</sup> medyllyaŵ a wnaeth pa ŵed y gadawei<sup>2</sup> y gyuoeth gŵedy ef y<sup>3</sup> verchet. Sef a ŵnaeth profi pŵy vŵyaf oe verchet ae karei, ŵrth rodi idi y ran oreu or kyuoeth gan wr. A galŵ a ŵn[a]eth<sup>4</sup> attaw y verch hynaf idaŵ Goronilla, a gofyn idi pa veint y karei hi efo.<sup>5</sup> A thygu a ŵnaeth hitheu y<sup>6</sup> nef a<sup>7</sup> daear<sup>8</sup> bot yn vŵy y karei hi euo noe heneit ehun. A chredu a ŵnaeth ynteu idi<sup>9</sup> hynny, a dyŵedut,<sup>10</sup> kan oed kymeint<sup>11</sup> y karei hi euo a hynny, y rodei ynteu draean<sup>12</sup> y gyuoeth genti hi y ŵr<sup>13</sup> a deŵissei yn ynys Prydein.

3. Ac yn ol honno galŵ attaw Ragua<sup>1</sup> y verch eil hynaf idaŵ, a gofyn idi pa veint y karei hi euo. A thygu a ŵnaeth hitheu y gyuoeth<sup>2</sup> y nef ar daear<sup>2</sup> na allei hi<sup>3</sup> dyŵedut ar y thauaŵtleueryd pa veint y karei hi euo.<sup>4</sup> A chredu a ŵnaeth ynteu hynny, ac adaŵ idi hitheu y rodi<sup>5</sup> yr gŵr a deŵissei, a thraean<sup>6</sup> y gyuoeth<sup>7</sup> genti.

<sup>a</sup> Letters enclosed in square brackets [ ] are wanting in the MS.

### VARIANTS FROM BRITISH MUSEUM, ADDITIONAL 19,707.

Ch. 1.—1 drycheuit 2 thrugeint 3 yn y llywyaŵ hi 4 eu henwen 5 ragau

Ch. 2.—1 a heneint 2 yd adaŵei 3 yŵ 4 wnaeth 5 ef 6 yr 7 ar 8 dayar 9 idi hi 10 dywedut ŵrthi 11 kymeint 12 drayan 13 yr gŵr

Ch. 3.—1 ragau 2 dayar 3 om. 4 y karhei 5 y rodei hi (hi over line) 6 thrayan 7 kyfoeth

drychafwyt to raise,  
left, rise  
to rule, direct

wraŵl  
only, brave,  
to

how

\*

tyngu to swear,  
take an oath

owers  
kingdoms

spoken word verbal  
evidence,  
adau to promise  
his

deured prowess, valour, prime of life  
blyngħän to become angry, grow  
di-farnu to judge, decide against

140

# LEAR AND HIS DAUGHTERS

4. Ac yna y gelöis<sup>1</sup> y verch jeuaf idaö attao, a gouyn idi pa veint y karei hi euo.<sup>2</sup> A dyöedut a önaeth hitheu y rygaru<sup>3</sup> ef eiryoet<sup>4</sup> megys y dyliei uerch garu y that, ac nat ytoed etöa<sup>5</sup> yn peidaö ar karyant hönnö<sup>a</sup> ac erchi  
 5 idaö göarandaö yn graff pa veint oed hynny. A sef<sup>6</sup> oed hynny, y<sup>7</sup> veint y bei y gyuoeth ae jechyt ae deöred. A blyghau a lliidia<sup>8</sup> a oruc ynteu, a dyöedut örthi, kan oed kymeint y tremygassei euo<sup>9</sup> a hynny, val na charei<sup>10</sup> hi euo megys y karei y chwiorid ereill,<sup>11</sup> y diuarnei ynteu hi hyt  
 10 na<sup>b</sup> chaffei neb ryö ran or ynys y gyt ac öynteu. Ny dyöat<sup>12</sup> ynteu nas rodei hi<sup>13</sup> y wr ny hanfeie<sup>c</sup> or ynys, o damöeineie yr kyfryö ör hönnö y herchi heb argyfreu  
 genti. Hyn heuyt a gadarnhaei hyt na lauuryei y geissaö gör idi megys yr rei ereill.<sup>14</sup> Kany's möy y  
 15 karyssei ef hi nor rei ereill eiryoet,<sup>15</sup> a hitheu yn y dremygu ynteu<sup>16</sup> yn vöy nor rei ereill.<sup>17</sup>

v. Gloss

to become angry

a marriage portion  
 labour, endeavour, attempt  
 v. 640.

joint counsel

Cennaduriö  
 message, tidings

= d

5. A heb öhir o gytgyghor y wyrda y rodes y döy verchet hynaf idaö y dywyssogyon<sup>1</sup> yr Alban a Chernyö, a hanner y gyuoeth<sup>2</sup> gantunt hyt tra [vei]<sup>3</sup> vyö ef, a  
 20 göedy bei varö, y kyuoeth gantunt<sup>4</sup> yn deu haner. Ac yna göedy clybot o Aganipus vrenhin Freinc clot a phryt a thegöch Cordeilla, anuon kenadeu a önaeth oe herchi yn wreic idaö, a dyöedut örth y that y genadöri.<sup>a</sup>  
 Ac ynteu a dyöat<sup>5</sup> y rodei y verch idaö ef heb argyfreu  
 25 genti,<sup>6</sup> kan daroed idaö rodi y gyuoeth ae eur ae alyant y<sup>7</sup> döy verchet ereill.<sup>8</sup> A phan gicleu Aganipus tecket y voröyn,<sup>9</sup> kyflaön vu oe charyat. A dy[ö]edut<sup>10</sup> a wnaeth bot idaö ef digaön o eur ac alyant, ac nat oed reit idaö ef örth dim namyn göreic delediö<sup>11</sup> dylvedaöc y kaffei blant

Ch. 4.—1 y gelwis ynteu 2 y karei ef 3 ae y dywvnt hitheu y karei 4 eiroet 5 om. a karyat hönnö 6 ae ysef 7 yny 8 a lliidiaö om. 9 hi euo 10 ual y karei 11 megys y chwiorid y lleill a dyuarnei ynteu hi na 12 dywaöt 13 na rodei ef hi a hanfei 14 megys y lleill 15 hihi nor lleill 16 tremygu ef 17 nor lleill

Ch. 5.—1 tywyssogyon 2 y kyfoeth idaö 3 tra uei 4 yn göbyl udunt öynteu a genadöri 5 ae y dywvnt ynteu 6 om. 7 gan y 8 y lleill 9 ae thelediwet add. 10 dywedut 11 telediö

Cadarnhaen to strengthen, fortify, confirm, ratify, affirm

§ 97C.

to cease from  
 craft, from,  
 steadfast

tremygu to despise

go-hir to delay;  
 delay, respite

high-born, noble

etifeð m. an heir; (coll.) heirs  
yspeid f. a while, a space of time, a respite  
dau m. a son-in-law; pl. dofyon  
gor-essyn to invade, overrun

# LEAR AND HIS DAUGHTERS

141

ohane<sup>12</sup> yn etiued ar y kyuoeth. Ac yn diannot<sup>13</sup> y kadarnha<sup>14</sup>yt y briodas y rygtunt.<sup>14</sup> priodas fem.

di-annot  
without delay

6. Ac ym pen yspeit yg kylch di<sup>15</sup>ed oes Lyr y goresgynn<sup>16</sup>ys y dofyon y ran or kyuoeth<sup>1</sup> a ganhalassei<sup>2</sup> ef yn uraðl dr<sup>3</sup>oy hir o<sup>3</sup> amser; ac y rannassant y rygtunt yn deu hanner. Ac o gymodloned y kym<sup>4</sup>erth Magla<sup>5</sup>un

about, towards

= d

ty<sup>6</sup>oyssa<sup>6</sup>ac yr Alban Lyr att<sup>6</sup>a<sup>6</sup> a deugein marcha<sup>6</sup>ac y gyt ac ef, rac bot yn gebilid ganta<sup>6</sup> bot heb varchogyon yn<sup>4</sup>y osgord. A g<sup>6</sup>uedy bot Lyr yn y wed honno gyt a Magla<sup>6</sup>un, blyghau a oruc Cordeilla<sup>5</sup> rac meint oed<sup>6</sup> o

cewilyð shame  
gweð f. form  
 fashion

v. 677

varchogyon gyt ae that,<sup>7</sup> ac rac eu g<sup>6</sup>asanaeth<sup>6</sup>oyr lynteu yn teruysgu y llys. A dy<sup>6</sup>edut a unaeth urth y g<sup>6</sup>ur bot yn<sup>8</sup> digaa<sup>6</sup>n deg marcha<sup>6</sup>ac ar hugeint gyt ae that, a gell<sup>6</sup>og y rei ereill ymdeith. A g<sup>6</sup>uedy dy<sup>6</sup>edut hynny urth Lyr, lli<sup>6</sup>dia<sup>6</sup> a oruc, ac ymada<sup>6</sup> a Magla<sup>6</sup>un, a mynet hyt at arll Kerny<sup>6</sup> y dað y lla<sup>6</sup>ll; ae erbynyeit o h<sup>6</sup>onn<sup>6</sup>o yn anrydedus.

part with leave,  
 desert  
 to receive

7. Ac ny bu benn y vl<sup>6</sup>oydyn yny daruu teruysc y rwg eu g<sup>6</sup>asanaethwyr. Ac urth hynny y sorres Ragua y verch urtha<sup>6</sup>, ac erchi ida<sup>6</sup> ell<sup>6</sup>og y varchogyon y urtha<sup>6</sup> eithyr pump marcha<sup>6</sup>ac ae g<sup>6</sup>asanaethei. A thrista<sup>6</sup> a

trouble, conflict,  
 uproar  
 sarni to be angry,  
 frown

unaeth Lyr yna yn va<sup>6</sup>ur, a chych<sup>6</sup>oyn ody<sup>6</sup>na elch<sup>6</sup>oyl hyt at y verch yr hynaf ida<sup>6</sup>, o dybygu trugarhau ohonaei urtha<sup>6</sup> oe gynnal ae varchogyon y gyt ac ef. Sef a unaeth hitheu dr<sup>6</sup>oy y lli<sup>6</sup>t tygu y gyuoeth<sup>6</sup>eu nef a dayar na chaffei ohir, ony ellygei y holl varchogyon y urtha<sup>6</sup> eithyr vn y gyt ac ef ae g<sup>6</sup>asanaethei; a dy[<sup>6</sup>]edut nat oed reit y wr kyuoet ac euo vn llu<sup>6</sup>ossogr<sup>6</sup>oyd y gyt ac ef, na theulu namyn vn g<sup>6</sup>ur ae goassanaethei. A g<sup>6</sup>uedy na chaffei dim or a geissei gan y verchet, ell<sup>6</sup>og y varchogyon 30 a unaeth eithir vn y gyt ac ef.

(to serve)  
 a second time, again  
 to commiserate

Ch. 5.—12 ohonei 1<sup>3</sup> dianot 1<sup>4</sup> y rydunt

Ch. 6.—1 y dofyon arna<sup>6</sup> y gyfoeth 2 gynhalassei 3 om. 4 urth 5 Goronilla recte 6 a oed 7 gyt ac ef 8 from here to ody<sup>6</sup>no (ch. 10, 1. 7) om.

multitude

cynhal, cynnal (kanal) to sustain, support, maintain

cymod—loned a concord, agreement

tristaw to become sad, grieve

llid m. anger, indignation

zorgard  
 re tinua  
 v. p. 140

t. disturb

earll  
 honorable  
 v. s. v.  
 envye de bus)

set out, more  
 stant

teilyng-dawd f. dignity  
medyant m. possession, power, authority  
bistâu to become sad, grieve

awhile

8. A gúedy bot velly rynaûd, dôyn ar gof a oruc y gyuoeth  
 ae deilygdaû ae anrydet ae vedyant, a thristau yn vaûr,  
 a medylaû gofûy y verch a athoed y Freinc idaû. Ac  
 5 gellygassei ef hi y ôrthaû; ac eissoes ny allûys diodef y  
dianrydedu mal y daroed. A chychûyn tu a Ffreinc a  
 ûnaeth.

to call to  
 mind

Phlepy of  
 mynet 8/14

= d

to suffer

to visit,  
 unloving, unkind

to dishonour

with two others

fates, fortunes

accustomed, usual

level, even,

constant

9. A phan ytoed yn mynet yr llog ac na ôlei neb y gyt  
 ac ef namyn ar y drydyd, gan ûylaû y dyûaû yr  
 10 ymadraûd hûnn: "Ae chûichûi tyghetuennu! pa le y  
 kerdûch chûi dros aûch gnotaedic hynt? Pa achaûs y  
 kyffroassaûch chûi vivi eiryoet y ar vyg gûastat detwydyt?  
 Kanys mûy boen yû koffau kyuoeth gûedy coller, no  
chytdiodef achenocit heb ordyfneit kyuoeth kyn no  
 15 hynny, Mûy boen yû genyf i yr aûr hon goffav uyg  
 kyuoeth am anryded yn yr amser hûnnû, yn yr hûn yd

gryllas  
 crying, weeping

/Pr. Subj. Pass.  
achenocit  
 want, indigence

a many, multitude;

of saw, those

to plunder, ravage

for?

oed y saûl gan mil o varchogyon ym damgylchynu yn  
 20 kerdet y gyt a mi, pan vydûn yn ymlad ar kestyll ac ar  
 dinassoed ac yn anreithaû kyvoeth vyg gelynyon, no  
 diodef y poen ar achenocit a ûnaeth y gûyr hynn y mi,  
 y rei a udynt yna dan vyn traen.<sup>a</sup> Och vi, a dûyweu  
 nef a dayar! pa bryt y daû yr amser y gallûyf y talû  
 elchûyl yn y gûrthûyneb yr gûyr hynn? Och Cordeilla  
 vyg karedic verch! mor wir yû dy ymadraûd teu di,  
 25 pan dyûdeist panyû val y bei vyg gallû am medyant am  
 kyuoeth am jeuegtit, panyû velly y karut ti vyui! Ac  
ûrth hynny, tra vu vyg kyuoeth i yn gallû rodi rodyon,  
 paûb am karei; ac nyt mi a gerynt namyn vy rodyon am  
deuodeu am donyeu. Ac ûrth hynny, pan gilyûys y  
 30 rodyon, y foes y karyat. Ac ûrth hynny pa ffuruf y  
 gallaf rac keûilyd adolûyn nerth na chanhorthûy y genyt  
 ti, ûrth rysorri yg kam ohonaf i ûrthyt ti am dy doethineb

to surround

pl. of dûw god

to pay in return

= that it is

because of that,  
 therefore

ffo to flee

to beseech

697C.

cilyaw tootra  
 desert, jail  
 how

help, aid

dawn, pl. donyen soft.

<sup>a</sup> leg. traet.

dedwydyd happiness, felicity

cyd-diodef to suffer

gon-dyffneid to experience, enjoy habitually.

defawd, pl. defoden f. custom, practice, habit, ordinance.

all- tnd a foreigner, alien; exile

amyllder plenty, abundance,  
multitude

owynaw to lament

anghyf- nerth helplessness, impotence

anghyf- reith injustice, wrong

## LEAR AND HIS DAUGHTERS

143

needy,  
destitute

di, ath rodi yn dremygedic gan debygu bot yn waeth dy diŵed noth whioryd ereill, a thitheu yn well ac yn doethach noc ŷyntŷy? Kanys gŵedy a rodeis i o da a chyuoeth udunt hŷy, y gŵnaethant hŷy vyui yn alltut ac yn echenauŵc om gŵlat am kyuoeth."

[dy. yn echenauŵc  
ac yn alltut?]

5  
gŵed. m. affliction,  
injury.

greetings

leaf sick

equip

10. Ac y dan gŷynaŵ y aghyfnerth ofut yn y wed honno ef a doeth hyt ym Paris, y dinas yd oed y verch yndaŵ. Ac anuon amylder o annercheu at y verch a ŵnaeth y dyŵedut y ryŵ agkyfreith a gyuaruu ac ef. A gŵedy dyŵedutor gennat nat oed namy[n] ef ae [y]swein, sef a wnaeth hit[h]eu anuon amylder o eur ac aryant, ac erchi mynet ae that odyndy hyt y myŵn<sup>1</sup> dinas arall, a chymryt arnaŵ y vot yn glaŵ, a gŵneuthur enneint idaw, ac ardymheru y gorff a symudaŵ<sup>2</sup> dillat, a chymryt attaŵ deugein marchaŵc ac eu kŵeiraŵ<sup>3</sup> yn hard ac yn syberŵ<sup>4</sup> o veirch<sup>5</sup> a dillat ac arueu; a gŵedy darffei hynny, anuon oe ulaen at<sup>6</sup> Aganipus vrenhin ac at<sup>6</sup> y uerch y dyŵedut y vot yn dyuot. A gŵedy daruot gŵneuthur kymeint ac a archyssei,<sup>7</sup> anuon a ŵnaeth llythyreu<sup>8</sup> at y brenhin<sup>a</sup> ac at y verch ynteu y dyŵedut<sup>9</sup> y uot<sup>10</sup> yn dyuot<sup>11</sup> ar y deugeinuet o varchogyon<sup>12</sup> 20

10 acquire

to feign  
to temper, warm

15 stately, noble

197c.

gŵedy y<sup>13</sup> rydehol oe dofyon o ynys Prydein, yn dyuot y geissaŵ porth gantunt ŷynteu<sup>13</sup> y oresgyn y gyfoeth dracheuen.<sup>14</sup> A phan gigleu y brenhin hynny, kychŷyn a ŵnaeth ef ae wreic ae deulu<sup>15</sup> yn y erbyn<sup>16</sup> yn anrydedus, mal yd oed deilŷg<sup>17</sup> erbynyeit<sup>18</sup> gŵr a uei yn gyhyt ac euo<sup>19</sup> 25 yn vrenhin ar ynys Prydein. A hyt tra uu yn Freinc, y rodes y brenhin lywodraeth<sup>20</sup> y gyuoeth<sup>21</sup> idaŵ, mal<sup>22</sup> y bei haŵs idaŵ cafel porth a nerth y oresgyn y gyuoeth drachefyn.<sup>23</sup>

to expel, banish  
garesgyn to misde,  
overrun

honourable, noble,  
dignified  
to receive

while

management

in par. of  
and easy

a summons,  
command

11. Acyna yd anuonet gŷys dros ŷyneb teyrnas Freinc

v. W. L. p. 327

Ch. 10.—1 hyt yn 2 y add. 3 kyweiraŵ 4 yn hard syberŵ 5 veirych 6 ar 7 kymeint a hynny 8 llyr a brenhin 9 ynteu y dywedut om. 10 ef add. 11 yn dyuot om. 12 deugeinuet marchaŵc 13 om. 14 kyuoeth drachefyn 15 teulu 16 yn erbyn llyr 17 teilŷg 18 erbyneit 19 ef 20 llywodraeth 21 kyuoeth 22 val 23 idaŵ ef add.

teilwng (y) worthy of, meet, fit for, deserving, acceptable  
yn gyhyd ac as long as



= Warriors (v.  
close.)

y gynulla<sup>1</sup> hoŵl deured y uynet<sup>2</sup> gyt a Lyr y oresgyn y  
gyuoeth<sup>3</sup> drachefyn ida<sup>4</sup>. A gŵedy bot pob peth yn  
bara<sup>5</sup>, kychŵyn a oruc Lyr a Chordeilla y verch ar llu  
hŵnn<sup>6</sup> gantunt, a cherdet yny doethant y ynys Prydein,

without delay  
gwydu to be fit,  
submit

5 ac yn diannot ymlad ae dofyon a chael<sup>4</sup> y fudugolyaeth.  
A gŵedy gŵedu pob peth or ynys ida<sup>4</sup> ef<sup>5</sup> i<sup>6</sup> bu var<sup>6</sup> Lyr  
yn y dryded vlŵydyn; ac y bu [var<sup>6</sup>]<sup>7</sup> Aganipus vrenhin  
Freinc. Ac yna y kymertth Cordeilla llybodaeth y  
deyrnas<sup>8</sup> yn y lla<sup>9</sup> ehun. Ac y clad<sup>10</sup>yt Lyr y my<sup>11</sup>ŵn

m.o.f.

a subterranean  
vault

10 dayardy<sup>a</sup> a ŵnaeth ehun y dan auon Sorram. Ar demyl<sup>b</sup>

596A (b)

honno ry ŵnathoed<sup>9</sup> yn anryded yr du<sup>6</sup> a el<sup>6</sup>it yna<sup>10</sup>

fen.  
Plat. 5142

gwyllfa f. festival,  
watch, ward

Bifrontisiani. A phan delei wylua y demyl<sup>11</sup> honno, y  
deuei hoŵl grefyd<sup>12</sup>yr y dinas ar wlat oe anrydedu. Ac y

to begin, inaugurate

dechreuit<sup>c</sup> pob gŵeith or a dechreuit hyt ym pen y  
15 vlŵydyn. A gŵedy gŵledychu pump<sup>12</sup> mlyned o Gordeilla

tangnefedus,  
peaceful

yn dagnouedus,<sup>13</sup> y kyuodes y deu nyeint yn y herbyn,  
Morgan<sup>14</sup> vab Magla<sup>15</sup>ŵn tyŵyssa<sup>16</sup>ŵc yr Alban, a Chuned<sup>15</sup>  
vab Henwyn tyŵyssa<sup>16</sup>ŵc Kernyw, a llu arua<sup>16</sup>ŵc gantunt.

pl. of nei adpals

seize, capture  
grief, anguish

A daly Cordeilla a ŵnaethant ae charcharu.<sup>16</sup> Ac yn y  
20 carchar hŵnn<sup>17</sup> o dolur kolli y kyuoeth<sup>18</sup> y gŵnaeth ehun  
y lleith. death

Ch. 11.—1 y add. 2 ŵrth eu heŵl<sup>10</sup>g y 3 kyfoeth 4 chaffel 5 om. 6 y  
7 var<sup>6</sup> 8 teyrnas <sup>a</sup>dayarty <sup>b</sup>temyl 9 a ŵnathoed ehun 10 ena  
11 demhyl <sup>c</sup>dechreuit 12 pvm (but a stroke has been added below as if  
to change v to y) 13 dagneuedus 14 Margan 15 Chueda 16 A—  
charcharu: ae daly ae charcharu 17 hvnv 18 chyfoeth



dayoni goodness, virtue, valour  
anyanawl natural, native, innate  
rad 7. grace, favour, blessing  
ar - derchocän to exalt, honour<sup>145</sup>  
dyffygysaw to fail, lack

## II. THE STORY OF ARTHUR.

### FROM THE RED BOOK OF HERGEST.

1. A gúedy maró Uthur Pendragon yd ymgynullasant  
 holl wyrda ynys Prydein, jeirll a baróneit<sup>1</sup> a marchogyon  
 vrdaöl ac escyb ac abadeu ac athraöon hyt yg Kaer Silchester  
 Vudei. Ac o gytsynyedigaeth paöb yd archyssant y consent  
 Dyfric archescob Kaer Lion ar Wysc vrdaö Arthur y vab 5 to ordain  
 ynteu<sup>2</sup> yn vrenhin. Ac eu hagen ae kymhellei y hynny.  
 Kany's pan gicleu y Saeson maröolyaeth<sup>3</sup> Vthur Pen-  
 dragon,<sup>4</sup> yd ellygyssynt öynteu genadeu hyt yn Germania  
 y geissaö porth. Ac neur dathoed<sup>5</sup> llyghes vaör attunt, Phil. of dyw. 6/141  
 a Cholgrim yn työyssaöc<sup>6</sup> arnadunt. Ac neur daröed 10 v. p. 60  
 udunt goreskyn<sup>7</sup> o Humyr hyt y mor a Chatyneis<sup>8</sup> yn y  
 gogled. Sef oed hynny y dryded rann y ynys Prydein.  
 A gúedy gúelet o Dyfric archescob drueni y bobyl ae trueni wretchedness,  
hymdiuedi, ef a gymerth escyb y gyt ac ef, ac a dodes misery  
 coron y teyrnas am ben Arthur. A phymthegmlöyd oed  
 15  
 Arthur yna, ac ny chlyösit ar neb arall eiryoet<sup>9</sup> y deuodeu 15  
 o deöred a haelder a oed arnaö ef. Idaö ef hefyt yd  
enillyssei y dayoni anyanaöl a oed arnaö y veint rat  
 honno, hyt pan oed garedic ef gan baöb or a glyöei<sup>10</sup>  
 dyöetut amdanaö.<sup>11</sup> Ac örth hynny gúedy y arderchockau 20  
 ef or vrenhinaöl enryded hönnö, gan gadö ohonaö y  
gnotaedic<sup>12</sup> defaöt a<sup>13</sup> ymrodes y haelder. Ac odyna  
kymeint o amylder marchogyon a lithrei attaö, a megys  
 y dyffygys ei idaö da y rodi<sup>14</sup> udunt yn vynyach. Aceissoes  
 15 because of that, therefore  
 cadw keep, preserve  
 thence from that time  
 to flock to  
 so that

### VARIANTS FROM BRITISH MUSEUM, ADDITIONAL 19,709

(Ch. 1). 1 barpyeit, 2 arthur ap vthyr, 3 marwolaeth, 4 bendragon,  
 5 dothoed, 6 dywyllsaw, 7 gverescyn, 8 mor kateneis, 9 eiroet, 10 glyöei,  
 11 ymdanav anwaethach or ae gúelei, 12 nottaedic, 13 ef a, 14 rodei,

talym m. a while, period; ar dalym for a time  
ar-gyweddu (y) to injure, hurt  
cydyndeithocian to accompany, associate with

146

# THE STORY OF ARTHUR

to whom §80 m. 4 py diu bynhac y bo haelder anyanaol y gyt a phrofedic<sup>15</sup>  
 molyant praise, volyant, kyt bo eisseu arnaol ar dalym,<sup>16</sup> yr hynny ny at  
 Duol wastat aghenocit y argybedu idaol.

god 3sg  
 Pres. of  
 gadu have  
 allow permit  
 to arrange,  
 dispose, array

2. Ac 6rth hynny Arthur, kanys molyant a getym-  
 5 deithockaei<sup>1</sup> haelder a dayoni, llunyaethu ryfel a oruc ar y  
 Saeson, hyt pan vei oc eu golut h6y<sup>2</sup> y kyfoethogei ynteu  
 y teulu ae varchogyon. Kanys iaunder a dyskei hynny  
 idaol; kanys ef a dyliei o drefataol dilyet holl lywodraeth  
 ynys Prydein. A chynnullaol a oruc ef yr holl ieuenctit

collect, call  
 together

right  
 tref-tadawl  
 inherited

10 a oed darystygedic idaol ef, a chyrchu parth a Chaer  
 Effraoc.<sup>3</sup> A g6edy g6ybot o Golgrim hynny, kynullaol a  
 oruc ynteu y Saeson ar Yscotteit ar Ffichteit, ac y gyt  
 ac<sup>4</sup> aneiryf luossogr6yd nifer gantaol dyuot yn erbyn  
 Arthur hyt yg glan Dulas. A g6edy ymgyfaruot yna  
 15 o bop<sup>5</sup> parth y dyg6ydassant llaer or deu lu. Ac or  
 diwed Arthur a gafas y vudugolyaeth. A ffo a oruc  
 Colgrim<sup>6</sup> y dinas Kaer Efraoc. Arthur ae lu a gych-  
 wyn6ys<sup>7</sup> ac a werchetwis<sup>8</sup> arnaol. Igwarchae & berseg

(= I. Dub-  
 glas,  
 a ruler nam

innumerable,  
 countless; a  
 countless number

v. gwar-chadw  
 bless; g. ar to  
 besiege

or gwar-chadw  
 to guard

3. A g6edy clybot o Bald6f<sup>1</sup> y vraot ynteu<sup>2</sup> hynny,<sup>3</sup> ef  
 20 a gyrchaol tu ar lle yd oed y vraot yg g6archae,<sup>4</sup> a ch6e  
 mil o wyr gantaol y geissaol y rydhau odyo. Kanys yr  
 amser yd ymladyssai<sup>5</sup> Arthur ae vraot ef, yd oed Bald6f<sup>6</sup>  
 yna ar lan y mor yn aros<sup>7</sup> dyuot Chledric<sup>8</sup> o Germania, a  
 oed yn dyuot a phorth gantaol udunt. Ac 6rth hynny  
 25 g6edy y dyuot ar<sup>9</sup> dec milltir y 6rth y gaer, darparu a  
 oruc d6yn kyrch nos am ben Arthur ae lu. Ac eisoes  
 nyt ymgelaol<sup>10</sup> hynny rac Arthur. Yna<sup>11</sup> yd erchis  
 ynteu y Gad6r<sup>12</sup> ty6yssaol<sup>13</sup> Kern6y kymryt whe chant  
 marchaol a their mil o bedyt<sup>14</sup> y gyt ac ef a mynet yn

a siege

from  
 against

prepare, intend

pedyd infantry

(Ch. 1). 15 phronygedic, 16 talym

(Ch. 2). 1 gytymdeithocaei, 2 6y, 3 efraoc, 4 om., 5 pop, 6 golgrim,  
 7 gylchyn6ys y dinas, 8 ae g6archetwis

(Ch. 3). 1 baldvlf, 2 om., 3 y warchae, 4 yg gwarchae om., 5 ymladyssai,  
 6 valdvlf, 7 arhos, 8 cheldric, 9 hyt ar, 10 ymgelvys, 11 om., 12 kadvr,  
 13 iarll, 14 pedyd

dar-estwng to subdue, subjugate, yield; past part.  
darestyngedig subjected, subject  
ymgyffarfod to encounter  
ymgelu (rag) to hide (from)

# THE STORY OF ARTHUR

147

eu herbyn, ac eu ragot y nos honno y fford y doynt. A gúedy kaffel o Gadúr gúybot y fford y doynt y gelynyon, eu kyrchu a oruc Kadúr yn deissyfyt. A gúedy briŵaŵ eu bydinoed ac eu hyssigaŵ a llad llaŵer onadunt, kymell y Saeson a oruc ar ffo.

to waylay; an ambush

sudden, unexpected

break in pieces, shatter, destroy to shatter

5

4. Ac ŵrth hynny diruaŵr dristyt a gofal a gymerth Baldŵf<sup>1</sup> yndaŵ,<sup>2</sup> ŵrth na allŵys ellŵg<sup>3</sup> y vraŵt or gŵarchae yd oed yndaŵ. A medylŵaŵ a oruc py wed y gallei gaffel<sup>4</sup> kyffur<sup>5</sup> y<sup>6</sup> ymdidan ae vraŵt; kanyŵ ef a dybygei y kaffei bop<sup>7</sup> un onadunt<sup>8</sup> ell deu rydit a gŵaret yn hollaŵ, pei<sup>9</sup> keffynt ymdidan y gyt. A gúedy na chaffei ffordarall yn y byt, eillaŵ y wallt<sup>10</sup> ae varyf a oruc, a chymryt telyn yn y laŵ, ac yn rith erestyn a gŵaryyd dyuot ym plith y llu ar llesteu. Ar clymeu<sup>11</sup> a ganei ef a dangossynt y vot yn telynyaŵr.<sup>12</sup> Ac or diwed gúedy na thybygei neb

occasion, opportunity

10 completely, altogether

to chase, cut (hair), juggler, camp

gŵary-yŵ juggler, module; pl. of clern a tune

running

to run, to pull, draw

y uot ef yn tywyssaŵc falst mal yd oed, nessau a oruc parth a muroed y gaer dan ganu y telyn. A gúedy y adnabot or gŵyr o vyŵn, y dynu<sup>13</sup> a orugant ŵrth raffeu y myŵn. A gúedy gŵelet ohonaŵ y vraŵt, ymgaru a orugant megys na ry ymwelynt<sup>14</sup> drŵy laŵer o yspeit kyn no hynny. Ac val yd oedynt uelly yn medylŵaŵ ac yn keissaŵ ystryŵ py wed y gellynt ymrydhau odyŵo, ac yn annobeithaŵ oe rydit, nachaf eu kenadeu yn dyuot o Germania, a whe chan llŵg yn llaŵn o varchogyon aruaŵc gantunt, a Cheldric yn dywyssaŵc arnadunt, ac yn disgynu yn yr Alban.

ropes

to caress one another

to free oneself from

air, stratagem, despair

to land

5. A gúedy clybot hynny o Arthur, ymadaŵ a oruc ynteu ar dinas rac petruster ymlad ar veint nifer honno,<sup>1</sup> a mynet odyŵo hyt yn Lundein. Ac yno galŵ attaf a oruc holl wyrda y deyrnas yscolheigon a lleygyon, ac

to leave

m.

excitation, doubt

(Ch. 4). 1 baldŵf, 2 ac ynda, 3 gellŵg, 4 kaffel, 5 kyfrŵch 6 om., 7 kanyŵ ef a thybygei pop, 8 ohonunt, 9 bei, 10 ben? 11 ar crychŵadeu add., 12 telynyaŵr 13 tynnu, 14 nar ymwelynt

(Ch. 5). 1 hynny

shake (in music)

gornes 8. oppression, tyranny

eisted with y gaer to besiege the city  
gwa-sgawd shelter, protection

148

## THE STORY OF ARTHUR

to consult

ymgyghor ac cynt beth a wnelynt<sup>2</sup> am hynny. Sef a  
gaßsant o gyghor y kónsli húnno; anuon kenadeu a  
orugant hyt ar Hoel<sup>3</sup> vab Emyr Lydaó, brenhin Brytaen *Brittany*  
Vechan, y uenegi idaó yr ormes a dathoed gan y Paganyeit  
5 ar<sup>4</sup> ynys Prydein. Kanys nei (uab y<sup>5</sup> chóaer) oed Howel<sup>3</sup>  
y Arthur. A gúedy clybot o Howel<sup>3</sup> y ryfel ar aflonyd<sup>6</sup>ch *disturbanc*  
a oed ar y ewythyr, erchi parattoi llyges a oruc,<sup>6</sup> a  
chynullaó pymtheg mil o uarchogyon aruaó. Ac ar y  
gúynt kyntaf a gafas yn y ol, y deuth y borth Hamónt  
10 yr tir y<sup>7</sup> ynys Prydein. Ac Arthur ae haruolles ynteu  
or enryded y gúedei aruoñ gúr kyfurd a húnno; ac yn  
vynych ymgaru<sup>8</sup> bop eilwers. *alternately*

to entertain,  
receive

6. Ac odyna gúedy llihraó ychydic o dieuoed,<sup>1</sup> cynt a  
grychassant parth a Chaer Lúytoet, yr hon [a elwir]<sup>2</sup>

h.u.v. wte 2, p. 249

15 Lincol yr aór honn, ac yssyd ossodedic yn y wlat a elwir  
Lindysei ar benn mynyd róg dóy auon. Ac órth y gaer  
honno yd oed y Paganyeit yn eisted. A gúedy eu dyuot  
yno y gyt ac eu hoñ niferoed, ymlad a orugant ar  
Saeson. Ac aglywedic aerua a ónaethant o honunt.<sup>3</sup>

anghlywedig

unheard of, unusual

20 Kanys chwe mil onadunt a dygúydassant yn yr un dyd  
húnno. Rei oc eu llad, ereill oc eu bodi<sup>4</sup> a gollassant eu  
heneideu. Ac órth hynny rei<sup>5</sup> ereill yn gyflaón o ofyn  
adaó y dinas a orugant, a chymryt eu ffo<sup>6</sup> yn lle diogelch  
udunt. Ac ny orffoóysóys Arthur oc eu hymlit hyt<sup>7</sup> yn

safety,  
security

gar-ffowys to cease,

rest

wood, grove, bush

25 llóyn Kelydon. Ac yno ymgynull o bop lle a orugant  
oc eu fo,<sup>8</sup> a medyl<sup>9</sup> aó górthóynebu y Arthur. Ac odyna  
gúedy dechreu ymlad, aerua a ónaethant or Brytanyeit  
gan eu hamdiffyn ehunein yn wraó; kanys o wascaút y  
gúyd yn eu kanhorthóy yd oedynt yn aruer o daflu

to oppose,  
resist

to defend

wood

stroke, blow,

cast

30 ergytyeu,<sup>10</sup> ac y gochelynt cynteu<sup>11</sup> ergytyeu y Brytanyeit.

(Ch. 5). 2 wnelhynt, 3 lvel, 4 y, 5 om., 6 a oruc om., 7 om., 8 yd  
amblygu y ymgaru

(Ch. 6). 1 dydyeu, 2 a elwir, 3 ohonu, 4 yn yr afonoed add., 5 y rei,  
6 fo yn y lle, 7 hyt pan deuthant hyt, 8 oc eu fo a orugant, 9 odyno add.,  
10 kanys o wasgavt y gúyd yn eu kanhorthvy yd aruerynt, 11 om.

go-chel to avoid, ward off, shun, escape.

tir - diwollawdr, pl. - odron a husbandman  
cy-war-sangu to trample upon, oppress, crush

## THE STORY OF ARTHUR

149

A phan welas Arthur hynny, yd erchis ynteu trychu y coet or parth hōnnō yr Ilōyn, a chymryt y kyffyon hynny ar traŵsprenneu<sup>12</sup> ac eu gossot yn eu kylch, ac eu gŵarchae yno megys na cheffynt vynet odynd, yny ymrodynt idaō, neu yny vydynt veirō o newyn. A gŵedy daruot gŵneuthur y kae, y dodes Arthur y varchogyon yn vydinoed yg kylch y Ilōyn. Ac yno y buant uelly tri dieu a their nos. A phan welas y Saeson nat oed dim bŵyt gantunt, rac eu marō oīl o newyn ōynt a ōdologyssant<sup>13</sup> y Arthur y<sup>14</sup> gellōg yn ryd y eu Ilōgeu y uynet y eu gŵlat; ac adaō idaō ynteu eu heur ac eu haryant ac eu hoīl sŵllt, a theyrnet idaō bop<sup>15</sup> blōydynd o Germania; a chadarnhau hynny gan rodi gŵystlon. Ac Arthur a gauas yn y gyghor kymryt hynny y gantunt, ac eu gellōg<sup>16</sup> y eu Ilōgeu.

7. Ac ual<sup>1</sup> yd oedynt<sup>2</sup> yn rōygaō moroed yn mynet tu ae gŵlat, y bu ediuar gantunt gŵneuthur<sup>3</sup> yr amot hōnnō ac Arthur; a throssi eu hōyleu drachefyn parth ac ynys Prydein, a dyuot y draeth Totneis<sup>4</sup> yr tir, a dechreu anreithaō y gŵladoed hyt yn Hafren, a llad y tir diwollodron a orugant. Ac odynd y kymerassant eu hynt hyt yg Kaer Vadon, ac eisted ōrth y gaer, ac ymlada hi. A gŵedy menegi hynny<sup>5</sup> y Arthur, ryfedu a oruc meint eu tŵyll ac eu hyskymundaōt,<sup>6</sup> ac yn diannot crogi eu gŵystlon. Ac ymadaō a oruc ar Yscoteit ac ar Ffichteit yd oed yn y<sup>7</sup> kywarsagu. A bryssyaō a oruc y distryō y Saeson. Gŵalul oed am adaō Howel ap<sup>8</sup> Emyr Lydaō yn glaf yg Kaer Alclut o ōrthrōm heint. Ac or diōed gŵedy dyuot hyt y lle y gŵelei y Saeson, y dywaōt ef ual hyn: "Kany<sup>9</sup> bo teilōg gan yr ysgymunedigyon Saeson<sup>10</sup> cadō ffyd ōrthyf i,<sup>11</sup> miui

(Ch. 6). 12 traws, 13 adologyssant, 14 eu, 15 heuýt pop, 16 gollvg

(Ch. 7). 1 mal, 2 oedyn, 3 wneuthur, 4 traeth tutneis, 5 hyn, 6 hyseum-yndaōt, 7 yny eu, 8 hvel mab, 9 kyny, 10 tŵyllwyr anudonavl add., 11 vrthym ni?

to cut down  
stock, trunk, stem

lateral branches  
of a tree

we themselves  
& surrender

5 hunger  
cae enclosure, fence

10 3 pl. Pres. of  
adologyssant beseech

tribute

gŵystyl hostage

15  
"ploughing the  
seas"  
covenant, compact  
said

rend  
break  
shant  
sawing  
turn, move  
east shore  
coast  
plunder  
raage

Bath

reception  
teachery

destroy  
annihil  
very heavy  
+ last

counsel

to wonder  
villainy

25  
hasten  
anxious  
sickness, disease

30

perjured  
treacherous, wicked



gwaradwyd m. disgrace, shame, reproach  
gwin - alen a true sacrifice

150

## THE STORY OF ARTHUR

likewise

a gadâf ffyd ŵrth Duô; ac y gyt a hynny oe nerth<sup>12</sup>  
ynteu a dialaf hediô waet vyg kiôtaûtwyr arnadunt.<sup>13</sup>  
Gôisgûch aûch arueu, wyr, gôisgûch, ac yn ŵraûl kyrchôn  
y bratwyr hynn. Heb petruster<sup>14</sup> gan ganhorthôy Crist  
5 ni a orfydôn.' 1 Pl. Fur. of gorsod overcome, conquer

doubt

exalted, noble,  
illustrious

8. A gûedy dywedut o Arthur hynny, Dyfric archescob  
Kaer Lion ar Wysc a safauð ar ben bryn goruchel, a  
dywedut ual hynn a oruc: "Ha wyrda," heb ef, "y rei  
yssyd arderchaûc o gristonogaûl ffyd ohonaûch,  
10 kyuodûch; koffeûch waet aûch kiôtawtûyr, yr hûnn yssyd  
ellygedic drôy urat y Paganyeit racco; kanys tragyûydaûl  
waratwyd yû yûch, onyt ymrodûch y amdiffyn aûch  
gûlat ach rydit. Ac ŵrth hynny ymledûch dros aûch  
gûlat, ac or byd reit ywch, diodefûch ageu drosti.

eternal  
if you do  
not devote  
yourself

life  
salvation

35f. Pres. Ind. of  
ym - rodi

penyd penance

15 Kanys yr agheu honno a vyd budugolyaeth a buched  
yr eneit. Pûy bynhac hediô a el y agheu, ef ehunan  
a ymryd yn wiraberth y Duô, y gûr a vu teilûg gantaû  
rodi y eneit dros y vrodyr. Ac ŵrth hynny pûy bynhac  
ohanaûch a lader yn yr ymlad hûnn, bit yr agheu honno  
20 yn benyt idaû ac yn vadeueint oe bechodeu, y dan amot  
nas gochelo, or damûeina y dyuot."

35f. Smp.  
forgiveness  
remission

coat of mail  
chased engraved  
shoulder

9. A gûedy kymryt bendyth y gûr hûnnû, bryssyaû  
a oruc paûb y wisgaû eu harueu ymdanunt, ac ufudhau  
y gymenediweu yr archescob. Ac yna Arthur a wiscaûd  
25 ymdanaû lluruc a oed teilûg y vrenhin. Penffestin eureit  
yskythredic ac arûyd dreic a adassûyt oe benn. Taryan a  
gymerth ar y ysgûyd, yr honn a elûit Gûenn, yn yr hon  
yd oed delû yr arglûydes Veir yn yskythredic; kanys ym  
pop yg a reit y galûei ef arnei ac y coffei. Ac a rûymûyt  
30 a Chaletuûlch y gledyf goreu, yr hûnn a wnathoedit yn  
ynys Avallach. Gleif a deck[a]aûd y deheu ef, yr hûnn  
a elûit Ron; vchel oed hûnnû a llydan ac adas y aerau.

to obey

helmet

young a strait,  
difficulty, distress

a lance, spear  
tall

need, necessity  
trouble

adas fir,  
very suitable

(Ch. 7). 12 ae y gynt ac nerth, 13 arnadunt vy, 14 a heb petrus

Cymynediû, -eu; a command, injunction

adassu to fit, adjust

purymau to bind, gird

teccân to adorn, decorate

glaw brave, stout; a brave man, hero.  
cedernid strength, force, security, violence  
ym-gynhal to resist

# THE STORY OF ARTHUR

151

Ac odynd gŵedy llunyaethu y bydinoed o bop parth, *to arrange, dispose, array*  
y Saeson yn herŷyd eu deuaŷt kyrchu yn leŷ a ŷnaethant, *to oppose, resist*  
ac ar hyt y dyd yn ŷraŷl gŵrthŷynebu yr Brytanyeit. Ac *to turn, move*  
or diwed gŵedy trossi yr heul ar y dygŷydedigaeth, *setting (of the sun)*  
achub mynyd maŷr, a oed yn agos udunt, 5  
a ŷnaeth y Saeson, a chynal hŷnnŷ yn lle castell udunt;  
a chan ymdiret yn amylder eu nifer tybygu bot yn digawndunt o gedernit y mynyd. A gŵedy dŷyn or heul y  
dyd arall rac ŷyneb, Arthur ae lu a eskynnaŷd pen y  
mynynd. Ac eissoes llawer o wyr a golles ef; kanys haŷs 10  
oed yr Saeson o penn y mynynd argywedu yr Brytanyeit  
[noc yr Brytanyeit] yŷ gŵrthŷyneb y mynynd argywed  
u yr Saeson. Ac or diwed gan vŷyhau grym a llafur,  
gŵedy caffel or Brytanyeit penn y mynynd, yn y lle ŷynt *immediately*  
a dangossassant eu dcheuoed yr Saeson. Ac yn erbyn 15  
hynny y Saeson yn ŷraŷl a ossodassant eu bronod yn  
eu gŵrthŷyneb ŷynteu, ac oc eu holl angerd ymgynhal  
yn eu herbyn. A gŵedy treulaŷ llawer or dyd uelly,  
llidiaŷ a oruc Arthur rac hŷyret y gŵelei y vudugolyaeth  
yn dyuot idaŷ. Ac ar hynny noethi Caletuŷlch a oruc, *to bare, unsheath*  
a galŷ enŷ yr arglŷydes Ueir; ac o vuan ruthur kyrchu y *with a swift rush / onset*  
lle teŷaf y gŵelei. vydinoed y Saeson. A phŷy bynhac  
a gyfarffei ac ef, gan alŷ enŷ Duŷa o vn dyrnaŷt y lladei.  
Ac ny orffŷyssaŷd ar vn ruthur honno, hyt pan ladaŷd  
a Chaletfŷlch ehun trugein wyr a phetŷar can ŷr. 20  
gŵedy gŵelet or Brytanyeit hynny, teŷhau eu toruod a  
wnaethant ŷynteu ae ymlit ynteu, ac o bop parth udunt  
gŷneuthur aerua. Ac yn y lle y dygŷydassant Golgrim  
a Baldŷlf y vraŷt a llawer o vilyoed y gyt ac ŷynt. A  
phan welas Cheldric perigyl y gedymdeithon, yn y lle 25  
heb annot ymchoelut a oruc y gyt ar rei ereill ar ffo.

10. A gŵedy caffel o Arthur y uudugolyaeth honno,

a enŷ duŷ: MS. duŷ duŷ.

Calad-fŷlch (Fr. calad-bolg) hard in making  
watches. (the name of Arthur's sword)  
teŷhau to thicken, close up the ranks

menegi to make known, declare  
ym-hyrru to follow, pursue

152

## THE STORY OF ARTHUR

ef a erchis y Gadŵr iarll Kernyb erlit y Saeson, hyt tra  
vryssyei ynteu yr Alban. Kanys menegi ar daroed  
idaŵ ry dyuot yr Yscotteit ar Ffichteit y ymlad a Chaer  
Alclut, y lle yd adaŵssei ef Howel y nei yn glaf. Ac  
5 ōrth hynny y bryssyei ynteu yno rac caffel y gaer arnaŵ.  
Ac odynd Kadŵr tyŵyssaŵc Kernyb a deg mil y gyt ac  
ef a ymlynaŵd y Saeson. Ac nyt yn eu hol yd aeth,  
namyn achubeit eu llogeu yn gyntaf a oruc, rac caffel  
onadunt diogelŵch nac amdiffyn or llogeu. A gŵedy  
10 caffel eu llogeu ohonaŵ, doddi a oruc y marchogyon  
aruawc goreu a oed ar y helŵ yndunt, rac caffel or Saeson  
ford udunt, os yno y kyrchynt. A gŵedy daruot  
cadarnhau y llogeu arnunt uelly, ar vrys ymchoelut a  
oruc ar y elnyon ac eu llad heb drugared, gan gilenŵi  
15 gorchymynneu Arthur amdanunt. Rei o deudyblic  
boen a gyŵarsegit, a rei onadunt o oergrynedic callonneu  
a ffoyt yr coedyd ac yr llŵyneu, ereill yr mynyded ar  
gogofeu y geissaŵ yspeit y achŵanegu eu hoedel. Ac  
ordiwed gŵedy nat oed udunt neb ryb diogelŵch, yr hyn  
20 a dihegis onadunt yn vriŵedic, ŵynt a ymgynullassant  
hyt yn ynys Danet. A hyt yno tyŵyssaŵc Kernyb ae  
hymlynaŵd gan eu llad. Ac ny orffŵyssaŵd hyt pan  
las Cheldric; ac eu kymell ŵynteu oll y laŵ gan rodi  
gŵystlon.

to pursue  
695 nte

bryssyan to  
hasten

to seize  
safety, security

respite

= dienyf 3 ss.  
prov. of di-ange,  
escape

to fulfil,  
accomplish  
double, two-fold  
fearfully  
treacherous  
loss  
lifetime

flock together

to force to  
surrender

confirm, ratify

25 11. Ac yna gŵedy kadarnhau tagnefed ar Saeson, yn  
y lle mynet a oruc yn ol Arthur hyt yg Kaer Alclut, yr  
hon ry daroed y Arthur y rydhau y gan yr Yscotteit ar  
Fichteit. Acodynd y kyrchaŵd Arthur ae lu hyt y Mureif,  
y wlat a elŵir o enŵ arall Reget. Ac yno y gŵarchaeawd  
30 ef yr Yscotteit ar Fichteit, y rei kyn no hynny a  
ymladysynt yn erbyn Arthur. A gŵedy eu dyuot ar  
ffo hyt y wlat honno, ŵynt a aethant hyt yn Lyn

besieged

\* MS. ymgynullassant.

cyfarsangu, cyfarsengi, cywarsangu to trample, oppress; crush,  
subdue; oppress.

achwanecäu to augment, increase.

brinwedig past part. of brinaw to break in pieces, shatter, destroy



x cenynt imperf. ind. 3 pl. of cannu to sing, celebrate in song, recite, play  
damwein accident, chance, fortune, event  
anghyf - yeith alien in speech, foreign, pl. - ydyon

## THE STORY OF ARTHUR

153

Lumonŷ, a chymryt yr ynysed a oedynt yn y llyn yn gedernit udunt. Kany's tri ugein ynys a oedynt yn y llyn, a thri ugein karrec, a nyth eryr ym pop karrec. A rei hynny pop Kalan Mei a doynt y gyt. Ac ar y lleis a genynt yna dynyon y wlat honno a adnebydei y damŷeinue a delei yn y vlŷdyn rac ŷyneb. Ac y gyt a hynny tri ugein auon a redei yr llyn. Ac ny redei or llyn namyn vn avon yr mor. Ac yr ynysed hynny y foyssynt y gelynyon y geissaŷ amdifffyn o gedernit y llyn. Ac ny dygrynoes udunt namyn ychedic. Kany's kynullaŷ llogeu a wnaeth Arthur, a chylchynu yr avonoed ar llyn, hyt na chaffei neb vynet odyno. A phymtheg ni[w]arnaŷt y bu yn eu gŷarchae uelly, hyt pan vuant veirŷ hyt ar vilyoed.

voice

5 = coll. men  
 following, next

strength, security  
 10 some, a little, a few  
 surround, encompass,  
 besiege

x

12. Ac mal yd oed Arthur yn eu gŷarchae uelly, 15 nachaf vrenhin Iŷerdon yn dyuot a llyghes gantaŷ ac amylder o bobloed achyfyethydyon yn borth yr Yscotteit ar Freinc. Ac ŷrth hynny ymadaŷ a oruc Arthur ar llyn, ac ymchoelut y arueu yn y Gŷydyl, ar rei hynny gan eu llad heb drugared a gymhellŷs ar ffo 20 y eu gŷlat. A gŷedy y uudugolyaeth honno ymchoylut draegefyn elchŷyl y vynnu dileu kenedyl yr Yscotteit ar Fichteit hyt ar dim. A gŷedy nat arbedei neb megys y keffit, ymgynnullaŷ y gyt a ŷnaethant escyb y druan wlat honno y gyt ae hyscolheigon or a oed darystygedic udunt, y gyt ac escyrn y seint ac eu creireu. Ac yn troet noethon y deuthant hyt rac bron Arthur, ac erchi y drugared dros atlibin y bobyl honno, ac ar eu glinyeu y wediaŷ hyt pan drugarhaei ŷrthunt. Kany's digaŷn o berigyl a drŷc ry ŷnadoed udunt; kanyt oed reit idaŷ 30 dilit hyt ar dim yr hyn a dihayyssei onadunt. A gŷedy erchi trugared onadunt ar y wed honno, wylaŷ o warder a oruc Arthur, a rodi yr gŷyrda seint hynny eu harch.

part, help, assistance,  
 support

to annihilate  
 to spare, save

25 subject  
 pl. of creir m. a relic  
 before in front of  
ad-libin a wretched  
 remnant  
 commiserate

holy man

tuam miserable, wretched; a wretch  
trugared f. mercy

bygynyŷ;  
 asid, profit

behind him

pl. of  
creir m. a relic

predicant  
 pray

to pursue  
 extinction  
 wander  
 humanity,  
 pity

ansawd f. condition, nature, quality, state, station  
sawl a many, multitude; y s., those  
cu dyaw to cover, hide

to wonder, marvel

kedr-ongyd spore  
 pl. of kyssg fish

a maelstrom whirlpool  
 [in mor sea + clerwyn a  
candle stream]  
 to throw, cast

spray  
 3 sp. imp. ind. of  
sugnew to suck

to make peace, pacify  
 to celebrate the  
 festival

to expel, banish

plunderers

sgaze, look

troet feet  
 a foot (meas)

various, diverse

3rd sp. in  
 of kyssg to  
 swallow

injure, hurt

13. A gúedy daruot<sup>a</sup> hynny, syl<sup>u</sup> a oruc Hoél uab  
 Emyr Lydaó ac enryfedu ansaó<sup>d</sup> y llyn, y saól avonoed ar  
 saól ynnyssed ar saól gerric ar saól nythot eryrot a oed yn y  
 llyn. Ac ual yd oed yn ryfedu hynny, Arthur a dyóab<sup>t</sup>  
 5 órthaó bot llyn arall yn<sup>y</sup> ólat honno oed ryfedach no  
 honno. Ac nyt oed bell odyo, ac ugeint troetued yn  
 y hyt, a vgeint yn y llet, a hynny yn bedrogyl<sup>1</sup>; a  
 phedeir kenedyl o byscaót amryó<sup>2</sup> yndi; ac ny cheffit  
 byth un or rei hynny yn ran y gilyd. "Ac y mae llyn  
 10 arall," heb ef, "yg Kymry ar lan Hafren, a dynyon y  
 wlat honno ae geiló Lyn Liaón. Ar llyn honno, pan vo  
 y mor yn llaón, y kymer y dófór yndaó ac y llónc megys  
 morgeró<sup>3</sup>yn, hyt na chudyo y glanneu. Ac y gyt ac yd  
 ymchoelo y mor draegefyn y dreiaó, y gó<sup>r</sup>thyt y llyn y  
 15 dófór a gymerei yndi, ac y bór<sup>4</sup> ohonei megys mynyd,  
 hyt pan el dros y glanneu. Ac o damweinei yna vot  
 neb yn sefyll ae wyneb att y llyn, o chyuarffei dim o  
 asgellwrych hónnó ae díllat,<sup>b</sup> anaó<sup>d</sup> vydei idaó ymdianc,  
 hyt nas sucknei y llyn ef yndaó. Ac o bydei ynteu ae  
 20 gefyn attaó, yr nesses vei idi yn sefyll, nyt argyó<sup>d</sup>edei  
 idaó dim."

14. A gúedy hedy<sup>5</sup>chu ar Yscotteit y brenhin a aeth  
 hyt yg Kaer Efraó<sup>c</sup>, y anrydedu gúylua y Nadolic a oed  
 yn agos. A phan welas ef yr eglóysseu gúedy eu distryó  
 25 hyt y llaó<sup>r</sup>, doluryaó yn uaó<sup>r</sup> a oruc. Kanys gúedy  
 dehol Samsón<sup>c</sup> archescob ar gúyrda maó<sup>r</sup> enrydedus ereill  
 y gyt ac ef, llosci yr eglóysseu ar temleu a ónathoed y  
 Saeson, a distryó gúassanaeth Duó ym pop lle. Kanys  
 pan deuthant yr anreithwyr hynny, y foes Samsón  
 archescob a seith escyb y gyt ac ef hyt yn Lydaó. Ac  
 30 yno yn enrydedus yd erbynyóyt hyt y dyd díóethaf oe

<sup>a</sup> MS. daruót.

<sup>b</sup> MS. díllan.

<sup>c</sup> leg. Samsón.

treias to ebb

gwrthyd 3 sp. pr. ind. of gwrthod to give back, reject, renounce.

a durnaw to adorn, decorate

crazy du s devout, a religious person; pl. - son

## THE STORY OF ARTHUR

155

bruced <sup>se, salvation</sup>. vuched. Ac yno gŵedy galŵ paŵb y gyt or yscolheigon ac or bobyl o gyt gyghor paŵb yg kyt ef a ossodes Priaf y gaplan ehunan yn archescob yg Kaer Efraŵc. Ar eglŵysseu diŵreidedic hyt y llawr ef ae hatnewydŵys, ac ae hadurnaŵd<sup>a</sup> o grevydusson genveinoed o wyr a <sup>renewed</sup> 5 pl. of cenfeint, a <sup>high-born, noble</sup> convent <sup>3 Pl. Pluperf. of dywn take, carry, bring</sup> gŵraged. Ar gŵyrda bonhedigyon dylvedaŵc a ry deholassei y Saeson ac a ducsynt tref eu tat, ef a rodes y baŵp eu dylwet ac eu hanryded. <sup>honour, dignity</sup> <sup>capture</sup>

15. Ac ym plith y rei hynny yd oedynt tri broder, a hanhoedynt vrenhinaŵl dylwet, nyt amgen, Leu uab <sup>10</sup> namely Kynuarch ac Vryen uab Kynuarch ac Araŵn uab Kyniarch. A chyn dyuot gormes y Saeson, y rei hynny <sup>oppression, tyranny</sup> <sup>pl. of gwlad</sup> a dylwynt tyŵyssogaeth y gŵledi hynny. Ac yr gŵyr hynny, megys y baŵp or dyledogyon ereill, ef a vynnaŵd talu eu dylwet. Ac ŵrth hynny ef a rodes y 15 Araŵn vab Kynuarch Yscotlont. Ac y Vryen y rodes Reget dan y tervyneu. Ac y Leu uab Kynuarch (y gŵr yd oed y chwaer gantaŵ yr yn oes Emrys Wledic, ac yd oed idaŵ deu vab ohonei, Gwalchmei a Medraŵt), y hŵnnŵ y rodes tyw[y]ssogaeth Lodoneis a gŵledi ereill a 20 berthynei attei. Ac or diŵed gŵedy dŵyn yr ynys ar y theruynau yn hollaŵl ar y<sup>b</sup> hen teilygdaŵt ae hedychu, ef a gymerth gŵreic. Sef oed y henŵ Gŵenhŵyfar, yr honn a oed o uonhedickaf genedyl gŵyr Rufein, ac a uagyssit yn llys Kadŵr iarll Kernyŵ. Pryt honno ae 25 <sup>pryd aspect, beauty</sup> thegŵch a orchyfygei ynys Prydein. <sup>gorchyfygeu to overcome, conquer</sup>

<sup>spring</sup> 16. A phan deuth y gŵanŵyn araf<sup>x</sup> rac ŵyneb, ef a <sup>following, next</sup> barattoes llyges ac a [a]eth hyt yn Iŵerdon. Kanys honno a vynei y goreskyn idaŵ ehun. Ac ual y deuth yr tir, nachaf Gillamŵri vrenhin Iŵerdon ac amylder [o] 30 bobyl gantaŵ yn dyuot yn erbyn Arthur wrth ymlad ac ef.

<sup>a</sup> MS. hardurnaŵd.

<sup>b</sup> ar y: ae MS.

<sup>x</sup> araf slow, gentle, mild

noeth naked, bare, unprotected, unarmed  
anghreiff example

A gŵedy dechreu ymlad, yn y lle y bobyl noeth diarueu *unarmed*  
a ymchoelyssant drachefyn ar ffo yr lle y keffynt wascaŵt  
ac amdiffyn. Ac ny bu vn gohir yn dala Gillamŵri ae  
*because of that, therefore* gymell ōrth ewyllys Arthur. Ac ōrth hynny holl  
*of their own free will* 5 tywysogyon Iŵrdon rac ofyn a doethant, ac o agreiff  
a ymrodassant oc eu bod yn wyr y Arthur.

17. A gŵedy daruot idaŵ oresgyn holl Iŵrdon ae hedychu,  
Arthur a aeth hyt yn Islont yn y lyges. A gŵedy ymlad ar  
bobyl honno, ef ae goresgynnŵys. Ac odyndros yr  
10 ynyssed ereill yd aeth y glot ef, ac na allei vn teyrnas  
gŵrthŵynebu idaŵ. Doldan brenhin Godlont a Gŵinwas *Gotthland*  
vrenhin Orch oc eu bod a deuthant y ōrhau idaŵ gan *the Orkney*  
dalud teyrnget idaŵ bop blŵydynd. Ac odyndros gŵedy  
15 llithraŵ y gayaf hŵnnŵ heibaŵ, Arthur a ymchoelaŵd  
drachefyn hyt yn ynys Prydein, y atneŵydu ansaŵd y  
deyrnas ac y gadarnhau tagnefed yndi. Ac yno y bu  
deudeg mlyned ar vntu. *at a stretch*

18. Ac yna [y] gŵahaŵd attaŵ marchogyon deŵr  
clotuaŵr o arall wladoed a phell teyrnassoed ac amylhau  
*lowly, makes* 20 y deulu, megys yd oed kyghoruynt gan teyrnassoed pell  
*magnificence, pomp* y wrthaŵ meint clot y lys, a ryodres<sup>a</sup> y teulu ae molyant. *praise, fame*  
*to compare, imitate* A cheissaŵ a wnaei baŵp kyffelybu a discyblu y wrth lys *to study, imitate*  
Arthŵr, ac y ōrth y varchogyon ae deulu. Kanyt oed  
dim gan vn dylyedaŵc yn y teyrnassoed pell y ōrthunt,  
*to compare oneself, vie (with)* 25 ony ellynt ymgeffelybu a marchogyon Arthur oc eu  
gŵiscoed ac oc eu harueu ac oc eu marchogaeth. A  
*fly* gŵedy ehedec y glot ae volyant ae haelder dros eithafoed  
y byt, ofyn a gymerassant brenhined tramor teyrnassoed *ends, extremes*  
racdaŵ, rac y dyuot y oresgyn eu kyfoetheu ac eu  
30 gŵladoed. Ac ōrth hynny rac gofeilon a phrydereu, sef a  
*pl. of gofal, m. anxiety* ŵnaei paŵb ohonunt atnewydu y keyryd ar dinassoed ar  
*pl. of two m. tower* tyreu ar kestyl, ac adeilat ereill o neŵyd yn lleoed cryno. *pl. of pryden care, anxiety* *Suitable*

<sup>a</sup> MS. rootdres.

y daw gan y chwaer brother-in-law??

## THE STORY OF ARTHUR

157

Sef achaws oed hynny, o delei Arthur am eu penn, megys y keffynt y lleod kadarn hynny yn amdiffyn, or bei reit.

if § 224(c)

*Excer  
myself*  
19. A gŵedy gŵybot o Arthur bot y ofyn velly ar baŵp, ymardyrchael a oruc ynteu a medyliaŵ goresgyn yr holl Euoppa. Sef oed hynny, trayan y byt. Ac odyna 5

*til so  
at § 226  
1st part only  
Gwyneth*  
a oruc, hyt pan vei Leu uab Kynuarch y daŵ gan y chwaer

| ?

a ŵnelei yn vrenhin yno. Kanys nei [v]ab whaer oed Leu uab Kynuarch y vrenhin Lychlyn a uuassei uarŵ

yna. Ac ef a gymynassei y urenhinyaeth y Leu y nei; 10 *cymyn & entrust*

*acceptable*  
ac ny buassei teilŵg gan y Lychlynwyr hynny, namyn

gŵneuthur Ricŵlf yn vrenhin arnadunt a chadarnhau eu kestyll ac eu dinassoed, gan dybygu gallu gŵrthŵynebu y Arthur. Ac yn yr amser hŵnnŵ yd oed Walchmei uab

Leu yn deudegmŵlyd, gŵedy y rodi oe ewythyr ef yg 15

*ext. Pass. ff  
wedat son  
§ 134 (f)*  
gwassanaeth Suplius bab Rufein. Ac y gan Suplius y

kymmerth ef arueu yn gyntaf. A gŵedy dyfot Arthur, megys y dyŵespŵyt uhot, y traeth Lychlyn, Ricŵlff a

shore, coast

holl uarchogyon y wlat y gyt ac ef a deuth yn erbyn

Arthur, a dechreu ymlad ac ef. A gŵedy gellŵg llaber 20

*new gore,  
blood*  
o greu a gwaet o bop part[h], or diwed y Brytanyeit a oruuant gan lad Ricŵlf a llaber oe wyr y gyt ac ef. A

*disperse,  
scatter*  
gŵedy caffel or Brytanyeit y uudugolyaeth, kyrchu y dinassoed a orugant ac eu llosci, a gŵascaru eu pobloed.

Ac ny orfoyssasant hyt pan daruu udunt goreskyn holl 25

Lychlyn a Denmarc. A gŵedy daruot hynny, ef a

urdaŵd Leu uab Kynuarch yn vrenhin yn Lychlyn.

*sailed*  
20. Ac odyna yd hŵylaŵd ynteu ae lyges hyt yn Freinc. A gŵedy kyweiraŵ y toruoed, dechreu anreithaŵ

to plunder, ravage

y wlat o bop parth a orugant. Ac yn yr amser hŵnnŵ 30

yd oed Frollo yn tywyssaŵc yn Freinc y dan Les

Lucius.  
to rule, direct

amheraŵdŵr Rufein yn [y] llwyŵaŵ. A gŵedy clybot o

*ruining,  
ruined*  
Frollo dyuotedigaeth Arthur, ef a gynullaŵd holl uarchogyon Freinc, ac a deuth y ymlad ac Arthur; ac

ny allŷys gŵrthŷynebu idaŵ. Kanys gyt ac Arthur  
yd oed holl ieuencitit yr ynyssed a oresgynassei. Ac  
ŵrth hynny kymeint o lu a dywedit y uot gantaŵ ac yd  
oed anaŵd y vn tywyssaŵc neu y neb y erbynyaŵ na  
5 goruot arnaŵ. Ac y gyt ac ef hefyt yd oed y ran oreu  
o Freinc, yr honn a ry ŵnathoed y haelder yn rŷymedic  
oe garyat ynteu. A gŵedy gŵelet o Frollo y dygŷydaŵ  
ef yn y ran waethaf or ymlad, yn y lle adaŵ y maes  
a oruc y gyt ac ychydic o nifer, a ffo hyt ym Paris; ac  
10 yno kynullaŵ y wasgaredic bobyl attaŵ a chadarnhau y  
gaer, a mynu elchŷyl ymlad yn erbyn Arthur o  
ganhorthŷ[y] y gymodogyon. Yn dirybud y deuth  
Arthur ae lu y warchae ynteu yn y dinas. A gŵedy  
llithraŵ mis heibaŵ, doluryaŵ a oruc Frollo o welet y  
15 bobyl yn aballu rac newyn. A gofyn a oruc y Arthur  
a vynnei eu dyuot ell teu y ymlad; ar hŷn a orfei  
onadunt, kymerei gyfoeth y llall heb lad neb or deu lu.  
Sef achaŷs y kynnigyei ef hynny. Gŵr maŵr hydŷf oed  
Frollo, ac anueitraŵl y leŷder ae gedernyt. Ac o achaŷs  
20 ymdiret yn y nerthoed yd archei ef y Arthur dyuot yn  
neilltuedic y ymlad ac ef, o tybygu kaffel ford y iechyt  
o hynny. A llaŷen uu Arthur wrth y genadŷri honno.  
Ac yn y lle anuon at Frollo y dywedut y vot yn dyuot,  
ac yn baraŵt y wneuthur yr amot hŷnnŷ ac ef ae gadŷ.  
25 21. A gŵedy kadarnhau yr amot hŷnnŷ o bop parth,  
ŷynt a deuthant ell teu hyt y myŷn ynys oŷieithŷr y  
dinas; ar pobloed o bop parth yn aros y sylŷu py  
damwein a darffei y rydunt. Ac yno y deuthant yn hard  
wedus gyweir ar deu uarch enryfed y meint ae buanet,  
30 hyt nat oed paraŷt y neb adnabot y hŷy y delei y  
uudugolyaeth onadunt. A gŵedy sefyll onadunt a  
drychafel y harŷydon o bop parth, dangos<sup>a</sup> yr

to receive;  
withstand

bound,  
attached  
to fall, chance

dispersed, scattered

neighbours

without  
warning

to perish  
667

to propose, proffer,  
suggest. unmanse

you - I'ved to  
trust apart, aside

his - death =  
well - pray, tal  
strength

means of  
salvation

covenant, compact

catches hear,  
presence, wait

outside

equipped  
= easy

party who

<sup>a</sup> MS. A dangos.



cywrein skilful, cunning  
ar-weſu to bear, wield  
gleif a lance, spear

go-chel to avoid, shun, ward off, escape.  
gwyrchys stout, resolute, bold

## THE STORY OF ARTHUR

159

ysparduneu yr meirych a orugant, a gossot o bop vn ar  
y gilyd y dyrnedeu môyhaf a ellynt. Ac eissoes  
kywreinach yd arwedôys Arthur y leif gan ochel dyrnaût  
Frollo. Arthur ae gûant ym pen y vron, ac yn herôyd  
y nerth ef ae byrvaûd hyt y daear. Ac yn y lle noethi y  
gledyf a oruc, a mynu llad y ben. A Frollo a gyfodes  
yn gyflym, ac a gleif gossot ar varch Arthur yn y  
dôyvron dyrnaût agheuaûl, hyt pan dygôydassant  
Arthur ae varch yr llaôr. A phan welsant y brenhin  
yn syrthaw, abreid vu eu hattal heb torri eu hamot,  
ac o un vryt kyrchu y Freinc. Ac mal yd oedynt yn  
torri eu kygreir, nachaf Arthur yn kyuodi yn gyflym  
wychyr, ac yn drychafel y taryan ac yn kyrchu Frollo.  
A sefyll yn gyfagos a wnaethant, a neûdyaû dyrnedeu,  
a llafuryaû pob un ageu<sup>a</sup> y gilyd. Ac or diûed Frollo  
a gauas kyfle; a tharaû Arthur yn y tal a ûnaeth. A  
phei na ry bylei y cledyf ar vodrôyeu y benffestin, ef a  
vuassei agheuaûl or dyrnaût hûnnû.<sup>b</sup> A gûedy gûelet o  
Arthur y waet yn cochi y taryan ae arueu, ennynu o  
flamychedic lit ac o ôychyr irlloned a oruc. A  
drycha[fel] Caletfûlch ac oe hoûl nerthoed gossot a oruc,  
ar helym ar penffestin a phen Frollo a holîtes yn  
deu hanner hyt y dôy yscôyd. Ac or dyrnaût hûnnû  
dygôydaû a wnaeth Frollo, ac ae sodleu maedu y daear,<sup>c</sup>  
a gellûg y eneit gan yr ôybyr. A gûedy honni hynny  
dros y lluoed, bryssyaû a oruc y kiûtaûtwyr, ac agori  
porth y dinas ae rodi y Arthur.

22. A gûedy caffel y uudugolyaeth honno o Arthur,  
ranu y lu a oruc yn deu hanner. Y neill ran oe lu a  
rodes y Hoûel uab Emyr Lydaû, ôrth vynet y darestûg  
Gûitart tyûysaûc Peitaû. Ac ynteu ehun a[r] ran arall  
gantaû y oresgyn y gûlatoed ereill yn eu kylch. Ac yn y

<sup>a</sup> MS. ogeu

<sup>b</sup> MS. honnû.

<sup>c</sup> MS. daeayar.

wybyr shy, heaven

gellung y eneit gan yr wybyr,  
spiritum in auras emisit (v. can. 1.)

355. prot. of barre  
5 throes east strike,  
hit, overthrow

to restrain, withhold,  
10 hinder

covenant, truce

15 forehead  
moderately a ring

to kindle, fire; be  
inflamed  
20 wrath

holli to split, cleave

maedu to beat, strike,  
pound  
25 to proclaim

30 to subdue, subjugate

*gofalus anxious*  
 lle y deuth Howel vab Emyr Lydaŵ yr wlat. Ef a gyrchŵys y keyryd ar dinassoed; a Góittart gŵedy llaŵer o ymladeu yn ofalus a gymhellŵys y ŵrhau y Arthur; ac odyndy Gŵasgŵin o flam a hayarn a anreithŵys; ae 5 tyŵyssogyon a darestygyŵys y Arthur.

*mediant possession, power, authority*  
 23. A gŵedy llihraŵ naŵ mlyned heibaŵ, a daruot y Arthur oresgyn holl wladoed Freinc ŵrth y vedyant ehun, ef a deuth elchŵyl y Baris. Ac yno y dellis lys. *held (u dal)*  
 Ac yno gŵedy galŵ paŵb or yscolheigon ar lleygyon, 10 kadarnhau a ŵnaeth ansaŵd y teyrnas, a gossot kyfreitheu, a chadarnhau hedŵch dros yr holl teyrnas. Ac yna y rodes ef y Vedwyr y bentrullyat Normandi a Fflandrys. *chief brother*  
 Ac y Gei y bensŵydŵr y rodes ef yr Angiŵ a Pheittaŵ, a llaŵer o wladoed ereill yr dyledogyon ereill 15 a oedynt yn y wassanaethu. Ac odyndy gŵedy hedychu a thagnefedu pob lle or dinassoed ar pobloed uelly, pan yttoed y gŵanŵyn yn dyuot, Arthur a ymhoeles y ynys Prydein. *spring*

24. Ac ual yd oed gŵylua y Sulgŵyn yn dyuot, gŵedy 20 y veint uudugolyaetheu hynny o bop lle, y gyt a diruaŵr leŵenyd ef a vedylyŵys dala llys yn ynys Prydein, a gŵisgaŵ y goron am y ben, a gŵahaŵd attaŵ y brenhined artyŵyssogyon a oedynt wyr idaŵ o bop lle a orescynnyssei, ŵrth enrydedu gŵylua y Sulgŵyn yn vrenhinaŵl 25 enrydedus, ac y atneŵydu kadarnaf tagnefed y rydunt. A gŵedy menegi ohonaŵ y vedŵl y gyghorwyr ae anŵylyt, *friends*  
 ef a gauas yn y gyghor dala y lys yg Kaer Lion ar Wysc. Kanys or dinassoed kyvoethockaf oed ac adassaf yr ueint wylua honno. Sef achaŵs oed. Or neill 30 parth yr dinas y redei yr auon uonhedic honno Wysc. *noble*  
 Ac ar hyt honno y doynt y brenhined, a delhynt dros y *3rd Imp. Sub*  
 moroed, yn y llogeu hyt y dinas. Ac or parth araill *pl. of flower-glass & meadow*  
 gŵeirglodyeu a foresti yn y theckau. Ac y gyt a hynny adeiladeu a llyssoed brenhinaŵl a oedynt yndi oe myŵn,

teccau & adom, decorate



cynhebyddu & compare

crofeint (crofent) f. covenant, assembly; pl. crofenoed  
amryfael, pl. -on : various, different

## THE STORY OF ARTHUR

161

a thei eureit, megys nat oed yn y teyrnassoed tref a  
gynhebyktyt y Rufein o ryodres namyn hi. Ac y gyt  
a hynny arderchauc oed o ddy eglwys arbenhic; vn o  
honunt yn ardyrchafedic yn enryded y Vyl verthyr, a  
chufeint o werydon yn talu molyant y Duó yndi yn  
wastat dyd a nos yn enrydedus urdasseid; arall a oed  
yn enryded y Aaron kedyndeith y merthyr húnno, a  
chufent yn honno a ganonwyr reolaúdyr. Ac y gyt a  
hynny y dryded archescobaút a phenaf yn ynys Prydein  
oed. Ac y gyt a hynny arderchauc oed o deu cant yscol  
o athraon a doethon, a ed[ne]bydynt kerdetyat y syr ac  
amryfaelon gelfydodeu ereill. Kanys yn yr amser húnno  
y keffit yndi y seith gelfydyt; a[r] rei hynny drúy  
gerdetyat y syr a venegynt y Arthur lláer or damweineu  
a delhynt rac lláú. Or achúysson [hynny] oll y mynnúys  
Arthur yno dala llys. Ac odyndy gellúg kenadeu drúy  
amryfaelon teyrnassoed a gúahaúd paúb a orucpúyt o  
deyrnassoed Ffreinc ac o amryfaelon ynyssed yr eigaon,  
o[r] a dylyynt dyuot yr llys.

25. Ac úrth y wys honno y deuthant yno : Araón uab 20  
Kynuarch brenhin Yscotlont, Vryen y vraút brenhin  
Reget, Katúallaún lláú[h]ir brenhin Gúyned, Kadúr  
llemenic tywyssaúc Kernyú. Tri archescob ynys  
Prydein : archescob Lundein, ac archescob Kaer Efrauc,  
a Dyfric archescop Kaer Lion ar Wysc; a phenaf 25  
onadunt oed dan bab Rufein, ac y gyt a hynny eglwur  
oed oe wassanaeth ae uuched; kanys pob kyfryú glefyt  
or a uei ar dyn, ef ae gúaretei drúy y wedi. Ac y gyt  
a hynny úynt a deuthant y tyúyssogyon or dinassoed  
bonhedic, nyt amgen, Morud iarll Kaer Loyú, Meuruc  
o Gaer Wyrágon, Anaraút o Amúythic, Kynuarch iarll 30  
Kaer Geint, Arthal o Warwic, Owein o Gaer Leon,  
Ionathal o Gaer Idor, Cursalem o Gaer Lyr, Gúallaúc  
ap Leenaúc o Salsbri, Boso o Ryt Ychen. Ac odieithyr

L

Caer Weir

glafur clear, bright, brilliant, renowned, famous

magnificence, pomp  
chief, principal

5 pl. of gwer y d  
virgin  
disguised

regular

course, motion  
pl. of celfydyd an art

threat,  
imminent

grows  
immense,  
overhand

trading,  
rounding

every kind of  
sickness / disease  
gwedi f. a prayer

Salisbury  
Aberbury  
Dorchester

30 Gloucester  
Shrewsbury  
Chester  
Leicester

cywired to come together, assemble; bring together; a concourse  
dad-gann to recapitulate, rehearse, recite  
trigraw to dwell, remain.

besides

hynny <sup>8</sup>llaŕ o wyrda, nyt oed lei eu boned nac eu <sup>lineage, noble birth</sup>  
teilygdaŭt nor rei hynny, nyt amgen, Dunaŭt Vŕr uab  
Pabo post Prydein, Keneu uab Coel, Peredur uab  
Elidyr, Grufud uab Vogoet, Rein uab Elaŭt, Edelin  
5 vab Keledaŭc, Kyngar uab Bangaŭ, Kynnar Gorbanyon,  
Miscoet Cloffaŭc, Run uab Nŕython, Kynuelyn [uab]  
Trunyaŭ, Kadelŭ uab Vryen, Kyndelic uab Nŕython.  
Ac y gyt a hynny llaŕ o wyrda a oed ryhir eu henŕi.  
Ac y gyt a hynny or ynyssed yn eu kylch: Gillamŕi  
10 brenhin Iwerdon, Melwas brenhin Islont, Doldan brenhin  
Gotlont, Gŕynw[~~ta~~]brenhin Orc, Leu uab Kynuarch  
brenhin Lychlyn, Echel brenhin Denmarc. Ac o  
Ffreinc y deuthant: Hodlyn tywyssaŭc Ruthyn,  
Leodgar iarŭ Bŕlŕyn, Bedŕr pentrullyat duc Normandi,  
15 Borel o Cenomaŭs, Kei pensŕydr duc yr Angiŕ, Gŕittart  
o Beittaŭ, ar deudec gogyfarch o Freinc, a Gerein[<sup>c</sup>]  
Garannŕys oc eu blaen yn dywyssaŭc arnadunt, Howel  
uab Emyr Lydaŭ brenhin Brytaen Vechan, a llaŕ o  
ŕyrda a oed darestygedic idaŭ y gyt ar ueint darmerth a  
20 hynniret mulyoed a meiryech, megys yd oed dyrys eu  
datkanu a ryhir eu hyscriuenu. Ac odieithyr hynny  
ny thrigywys un tywyssaŭc y tu hŕn yr Yspaen ny delei  
ŕrth y wys honno. Py ryfed oed hynny? Haelder  
Arthur ae glot ae volyant yn ehedec dros y byt a <sup>to fly</sup>  
25 dynassei baŕp yn rŕ[y]medic oe garyat.  
26. Ac or diŕed gŕedy ymgynullaŭ paŭb yr gaer ar  
ŕylua yn dyuot, yr archescyb a elwit yr llys ŕrth wiscaŭ  
y goron am ben y brenhin. Ac odyndy Dyfric archescob  
a gant yr offeren. Kanys yn y archescobty yd oedit  
30 yn dala llys. Ac or diwed gŕedy gŕisgaŭ y vrenhinaŭl  
wisc am y brenhin a theckau y ben o goron y teyrnas ae  
deheu or deyrnwialen, ef a ducpŕyt yr eglŕys benaf, ac  
or tu deheu ac or tu asseu idaŭ y deu archescob yny <sup>asseu, last</sup>  
gynhal. Ac y gyt a hynny petŕar brenhin, nyt amgen,

prominent,  
conspicuous (cf.  
gogyfarch & peers  
v. gloss.)

provision,  
preparation  
difficult,  
intricate

tyngnu to pull,  
drag, draw  
plur.

archbishop's palace

sceptre

## THE STORY OF ARTHUR

163

brenhin yr Alban, a brenhin Dyuet, a brenhin Góyned,  
 a brenhin Kernyó, yn heróyd eu breint ac eu dyltet, yn *privilege*  
aróein petóar cledyf eureit noethon yn y vlaen. *prerogative*  
 Ac y *my, bear*  
 gyt a hynny lláber o gúfenoed amryfaelon vrðassoed *orders*  
 yn eu processio o pop parth yn ol ac ym blaen yn kanu 5  
 amryfaelon gyúydolaetheu ac organ. Ac or parth arall  
 yd oed y vrenhines yn y brenhinwisc, ac escyb o hop  
 parth<sup>1</sup> yn y dóyn hitheu y eglóys y mynachesseu,<sup>2</sup> *nuns*  
 phedeir góraged y petwar brenhin, a dywedassam ni  
 uchot, yn aróein pedeir clomen<sup>3</sup> purwen<sup>4</sup> yn y blaen yn 10  
 heróyd eu breint óynteu, ar góraged yn enrydedus gan  
 diruaór leóenyd yn kerdet yn y hol.<sup>5</sup> Ac or dióed  
 góedy daruot y processio<sup>6</sup> ym pob vn or dóy eglóys,  
 kyndecket a chyndigrifet y kenit y kywydolaetheu<sup>7</sup> ar  
 organ ac na ódynt y marchogyon py le gyntaf y 15  
 kyrchynt;<sup>8</sup> namyn yn torfoed pob eilwers y kerdynt y *alternately*  
 honn yr aúr hon ac yr llall góedy hynny. A pheí  
 treulit y dyd yn gúból yn dóywaól wassanaeth, ny magei *produce, engender*  
 dim blinder y neb. Ac or dióed góedy daruot yr  
 offereneu ym pob vn or dóy eglóys, y brenhin ar 20  
 vrenhines a diodassant eu brenhinwisgoed y amdanunt.<sup>9</sup>

27. Ac odynd y brenhin a aeth yr neuad ar góyr oll y  
 gyt ac ef. Ar vrenhines ar góraged oll y gyt a hi<sup>1</sup> y  
 neuad y vrenhines, gan gadó hen gynefaót Tro, pan *Troy*  
 enrydedynt y góyluaeau maúr, y góyr y gyt ar góyr yn 25  
 bóyta, ar góraged y gyt ar góraged yn wahanedic. A  
 góedy kyflehau<sup>2</sup> paúb y<sup>3</sup> eisted yn heróyd y deissyfei y *deissyfei to demand, request, seek, merit*  
 deilygtaót, Kei bennsóyður yn wiskedic o ermynwisc, a  
 mil<sup>4</sup> y gyt ac ef o vn ryó adurn a hynny<sup>5</sup> o veibon  
 dylyedogyon, a gychwynassant y wassanaethu or gegin 30  
anregyon. Ac or parth arall Bedwyr a mil o veibon

(Ch. 26). 1 idi *add.*, 2 machesseu, 3 colomen, 4 gvynyon, 5 yn ol, 6 proressivn, 7 kywydolaetheu, 8 a gerdynt, 9 y amdanadunt

<sup>7</sup>Ch. 27). 1 hitheu, 2 kyfyavnheu (?) 3 yn, 4 mil o wyr, 5 ac ynteu

með-gell f. a mead-cellar, cellar

pl. of gwirand a  
beverage, drink

Careful, unceasing  
excess

excel

pl. of alaf wealth  
(herd, host. v.  
Peder Kemic, 242,  
248)

manner, fashion

prowess

?

embrasures; pl.  
of hwlech gap

tables, bench, gammon

indentation, device

cyffro excitement

~~off~~

to effect mutually

gúyrda y gyt ac ynteu yn wisgedic o amryuaelon wiscoed  
yn gúassanaethu gúirodeu or vedgell. Ac or parth arall  
yn llys y vrenhines aneirf o amylder gúassanaethwyr  
yn wisgedic o amryfaelon wisgoed yn herúyd eu defaút  
5 yn talu eu gúassanaeth yn diwall. Ar petheu hynny ae  
ryotres pei ascrifenón, gormod o hyt a blinder a ónaón  
yr ystorya. Kanyr ar y veint teilygdaút honno yd oed<sup>6</sup>  
ynys Prydein megys y racvlaenei yr holl ynyssed o  
amylder eur ac aryant ac alafoed dayraól.<sup>7</sup> A phy  
10 varchaóc bynhac a vynnei<sup>8</sup> vot yn glotuaór yn llys  
Arthur, o vn ryó wisc yd aruerynt,<sup>9</sup> ac o vn ryó arueu, ac o  
un ryó dyógyat<sup>10</sup> marchogaeth. Y gorderchwraged o <sup>concubines</sup>  
vn llió wisgoed ac o un dyógyat<sup>10</sup> yd aruerynt. Ac ny  
bydei teilóg gan un wreic garu<sup>11</sup> vn gúr, ony bei y uot  
15 yn brofedic teirgúeith y milúryaeth. Ac uelly dióceirach <sup>chaste</sup>  
y gúneynt<sup>12</sup> y gúraged a gúell, ar gúyr yn glotuorussach  
oc eu karyat.

28. Ac or díged gúedy daruot bóyta a chy[ch]wynnu  
y ar y byrdeu, allan odieithyr y dinas yd aethant y  
20 chúare<sup>1</sup> amryfaylon chwaryeu.<sup>2</sup> Ac yn y lle marchogyon  
yn dangos arúydon, megys kyt bydynt<sup>3</sup> yn ymlad yn  
iaón ar y maes. Ar gúraged y ar y muroed ar hylcheu  
yn edrych ar chware.<sup>4</sup> Ereill yn búró mein, ereill yn  
saethu, ereill yn rydec,<sup>5</sup> ereill yn gúare gúydbó[y]ll, ereill  
25 yn gúare taplas. Ac uelly<sup>6</sup> dróy bop<sup>7</sup> kyfryó amryuaelon  
dychymygeu<sup>8</sup> gúaryeu<sup>9</sup> treulaó yr hyn a oed yn ol or dyd <sup>what remain</sup>  
gan diruaór leóenyd, heb lit a heb gyffro<sup>10</sup> a heb gynhen. <sup>of the day</sup>  
A phóy bynhac a vei vudugaól yn y gúare, Arthur dróy  
amlaf rodyon ae henrydedei.<sup>11</sup> A gúedy treulaó y tri  
30 dieu kyntaf uelly,<sup>12</sup> y petwryd dyd galó paóp a wnaeth-

(Ch. 27.) 6 yr dothoed, 7 analoed daeravl, 8 vynhei, 9 aruerhynt, 10  
diwygyat, 11 karu, 12 ymwneynt

(Ch. 28.) 1 wareu, 2 waryeu, 3 beynt, 4 ar y gvareu, 5 redec, 6 y velly,  
7 pop, 8 dychymygyon, 9 a gvaryeu, 10 a heb gyffro om., 11 henrydedhei,  
12 y velly

ereill ... ereill some ... others

cynhen contention, strife, contest; pl. cynhenneu

\* dysg m. teaching, instruction, examples, behaviour  
clodfori to make illustrious, render famous

## THE STORY OF ARTHUR

165

pŷt or a oedynt yg gŵassanaeth, a thalu<sup>13</sup> y baŵp y  
wassanaeth ae lafur herŷyd ual<sup>14</sup> y dylyynt. Ac yna y  
rodent<sup>15</sup> y dinassoed, ar kestyl, ar tir, ar dayar, ar  
escobaethu,<sup>16</sup> ar archescobaethu,<sup>17</sup> ar manachlogoed,  
ar amryaelon urdasseu, megys y gŵedei y baŵp or ae 5  
dylyei.<sup>18</sup>

29. Ac yna y gŵrthodes Dyfric archescob y archescobaŵt  
ae teilygdaŵt. Kanys gŵell oed gantaŵ bot yn didrifŵr  
a buchedu yn y didryf no bot yn archescob. Ac yn y le  
ynteu y gossodet Dewi<sup>1</sup> eŷythyry y[r]<sup>2</sup> brenhin yn 10  
archescob yg Kaer Lion ar Wysc.<sup>3</sup> Buched hŷnnŵ oed  
agreiff<sup>4</sup> dayoni<sup>5</sup> y baŵp or a gymerasai y dysc<sup>6</sup> ynteu.  
Ac yn<sup>6</sup> lle Samsŷn<sup>7</sup> archescob Lydaŵ drŷy anoc Howel<sup>8</sup>  
uab Emyr Lydaŵ y gossodet Teilaŵ escob<sup>9</sup> Lan Daf, yr  
hŷn a glotuorei y uuched, ae deuodeu da a dangossynt 15  
y uot yn ŷrda. Ac odyne escobaŵt Gaer<sup>10</sup> Vuŷdei y  
Veugant, ac escobaŵt Gaer<sup>10</sup> Wynt y Dywan,<sup>11</sup> ac  
escobaŵt Lincol y Aldelmi.

30. Ac val yd oedynt velly yn llunyaethu pob peth,  
nachaf deudegwyr aeduet eu hoet, enrydedus y gŵed, 20  
a cheig [o] olyfwyd<sup>1</sup> yn llaŵ bop vn onadunt yn arŷyd eu  
bot yn genadeu, ac yn kerdet yn araf, ac yn kyfarch  
gŵell y Arthur, ac yn y annerch y gan Les amheraŵdyr  
Rufein, ac yn rodi llythyry yn y laŵ, ar ymadraŵd hŷnn<sup>2</sup>  
yndaŵ. 25

31. "Les amheraŵdyr Rufein yn anuon y Arthuryr  
hynn a haedŷys. Gan enryfedu<sup>1</sup> yn uaŵr enryfed yŵ  
genyf i dy greulonder di athrudannaeth.<sup>2</sup> Enryfedu<sup>3</sup>

(Ch. 28). 13 thallu, 14 om., 15 rodet recte, 16 escobyathu, 17 ar  
archescobaethu om., 18 y paŵb ac y dylyei

(Ch. 29). 1 in marg., 2 yr, 3 arvyse om., 4 agriff, 5 a dayoni,  
6 yny, 7 sampsŷn, 8 hywel, 9 yn escob yn, 10 kaer, 11, dŷywan?

(Ch. 30). 1 o oliwyd, 2 ymadrodyon hynny

(Ch. 31). 1 anryfedu, 2 athrudanyaeth, 3 hefyd add.

haedŷu to deserve, claim, merit

greulonder cruelty, tyranny, oppression

drudannaeth f. arrogance.

give back, reject,  
renounce  
hermit.  
solitary place, hermitage

goodness, virtue  
anog to urge,  
encourage, recommend

Silchester  
Winchester

to arrange, dispose,  
array  
of venerable aspect  
olive-wood

to greet, address

?

X

can - ry ffigu 5 act arrogantly  
barnu to judge, decide, fix, pass judgment, deem

ydöyf gan goffau y sarhaedeu<sup>4</sup> a wnaethost di<sup>5</sup> y Rufein.  
Ac anheilóg y<sup>6</sup> genyf nat atwaenost<sup>6</sup> dy vynet oth  
dieithyr<sup>7</sup> dy hun, ac na wydut ac nat yttöyt<sup>8</sup> yn medylia<sup>6</sup>  
py veint trymder y<sup>6</sup> góneuthur kodyant y sened Rufein,  
5 yr honn a ódost di<sup>9</sup> bot yr holl vyt yn talu góassanaeth  
idi. Kanys y deyrnget a orchymynóyt y dalu idi, yr  
hón<sup>10</sup> a gafas Ulkassar a lla<sup>6</sup>er o amherodron ereill  
góedy ef a chyn no minheu<sup>11</sup> dróy la<sup>6</sup>er o amseroed—a  
hónnó gan dremygu<sup>12</sup> gorchymyneu kymeint ac vn  
10 sened Rufein—a gamryvygeist di<sup>13</sup> y attal. Ac y gyt a  
hynny ti a dugost Bórgóyn ac ynyssed yr eigaón yn  
holllaól, brenhined y rei hynny, hyt tra yttoed Rufeinaól  
uedy<sup>6</sup>ant yn eu medu, a dallasant teyrnget yr amherodron  
a vuant kyn no minheu. A chanys or veint sarhaedeu<sup>14</sup>  
15 hynny y barnóys sened Rufein y minheu iaón y genhyt  
ti, órth hynny minheu a ossodaf teruyn ytti yr Aóst  
kyntaf yssyd yn dyuot, dyuot ohonat titheu hyt yn  
Rufein y wneuthur iaón or saól sarhaedeu<sup>14</sup> hynny, ac  
y díod<sup>6</sup>ef y vraót a uarnho sened Rúfein arnat. Ac ony  
20 deuy uelly,<sup>15</sup> miui a gyrchaf dy teruyn<sup>16</sup>. A megys y  
ranho y clefydeu,<sup>17</sup> mi ae ranaf<sup>18</sup> ac a lafuryaf y dóyn  
drachefyn órth sened Rufein."

32. A góedy datkanu y llythyr hónnó rac bron Arthur  
ar brenhined ar tywyssogion a oedynt y gyt ac ef, ef  
25 ac óynt a aethant y gyt hyt yn tór y keóri y gymryt  
kyghor py beth a ónelhynt yn erbyn y kymynedióeu<sup>1</sup>  
hynny. Ac ual yd oedynt yn esgynnu<sup>2</sup> grádeu y tór, steps  
K kadór iarll Kernyó megys góir lla<sup>6</sup>en y uedól<sup>3</sup> a dywaót  
yr ymadraód hónn : " Kyn no hynn ofyn a ry fu arnaf i  
30 rac goruot o lesged y Brytanyeit o hir hedóch, a cholli

(Ch. 31). 4 sarahedu, 5 wnaethosti, 6 atwaenosti, 7 odieithyr,  
8 ydóyt, 9 ódosti, 10 hón, 11 thitheu, 12 tremygu, 13 gamryfygeisti,  
14 sarahedu, 15 dohy y velly, 16 terfynheu, 17 clefyfeu, 18 kymhellaf

(Ch. 32). 1 kymenediveu, 2 yskynnu, 3 y vedól om.

?? by despising so great commands as that of the senate of Rome

provocation, offence

gem

?

to tremygu to despise

possession, power,  
authority

to suffer, undergo,  
withstand

metathesis of  
clefyfeu

to recite

Caps.?

command, injunction

blesged f.  
fickleness, sloth,  
cowardice

✓ x

f. senate

Julius  
Caesar

a f. senate

to withhold

to possess

a recompense  
satisfaction



segurydd ease

x mydd easy, free, prosperous, favourable

## THE STORY OF ARTHUR

167

clot eu milŵryaeth, or honn y buant hŵy eglurach no neb o genedloed y byt yn hollaŵl. Sef achaŵs yŵ. Yn y lle y peit<sup>4</sup>ter ac<sup>4</sup> arueru o arueu, ac aruer or ŵydbŵyll ar daplas a serch gŵraged, nyt oes petrus yna llygru o lesged py beth bynhac a ry fei<sup>5</sup> o nerth yno a chedernit ac enryded a chlot. Kynys<sup>6</sup> pump mlyned hayach ar<sup>7</sup> ethynt yr pan yttym ni yn arueru or ryŵ seguryt hŵnnŵ ar digrifŵch, a heb arueru o diŵyll ymlad. Ac ŵrth hynny Duŵ yr mynu<sup>8</sup> an rydhau ni or llesged honno a gyffroes gŵyr Rufein yn an herbyn, hyt pan alwem<sup>10</sup> ni an clot ac an milŵryaeth ar y hen gynefaŵt.

to corrupt, mar,  
spoil, violate

5

well, high, almost  
to enjoy, be  
accustomed  
cultivation

10 until, so that § 226  
gals call, summon,  
name

33. A gŵedy dyŵedut o Gadŵr yr ymadrodyon hynny a llaŵer o rei ereill, or diwed ŵynt a deuthant yr eisteduau. A gŵedy eisted o baŵp yn y le, Arthur a dyŵaŵt ual hynn ŵrthunt: "Vyg kedymdeithon ar rŵyd<sup>15</sup> ac ar dyrys, molyant yr rei hyt hynny<sup>1</sup> ac yn rodi eu<sup>2</sup> kyghoreu ac eu<sup>3</sup> milŵryaeth, ac yr<sup>4</sup> aŵr honn o vn vryt rodŵch aŵch kyghor, ac yn doeth racvedylyŵch py beth a uo iaŵn y ateb yn erbyn yr attebyon hynn. Kanys py beth bynhac<sup>5</sup> a racvedylyer<sup>6</sup> yn da yn y blaen y gan doethon, pan del ar ŵeithret, haŵs vyd y diodef. Ac ŵrth hynny haŵs y gallŵn ninheu diodef ryfel gŵyr Rufein, os o gyffredin gyfundeb a chytgyghor yn doeth y racuedylyŵn py wed y gallom ni gŵahanu ac eu ryfel ŵynt. Ar ryfel hŵnnŵ, herŵyd y tebygaf i, nyt maŵr reit yn y ofynhau. Kanys andylyvedus y maent hŵy<sup>7</sup> yn erchi teyrnget o ynys Prydein. Kanys ef a

15 in prosperity  
both -- and

consider, provide

X

25 illegal, wrong

because § 231  
trouble, conflict,  
uproar  
30 ancestors

(Ch. 32). 4 o, 5 ryffei, 6 kanys, 7<sup>1</sup>a, 8 mynnu

(Ch. 33). 1 yr rei a profeis hyt hyn, 2 om., 3 y, 4 ar, 5 bynac, 6 racweler, 7 ŵy, 8 dalu, 9 ulkessar, 10 annundab, 11 hendadeu, 12 ducasant

aided to  
care from  
2 doubt

3 pl. Perf.  
1-695 M. 10

4 ry (v.  
91 M. 39)  
93 M. 4)  
ustan,  
usage

ats, thrones

adversity

un ad  
tim accidit

§ 128 (c) note

his cord  
summa, conflict

foresee,  
provide

wyr Rufein yr ynys honn, ac o dreis<sup>12</sup> y gónaethant yn *treis? violence*  
trethaó.<sup>13</sup> Ac órth hynny py beth bynhac a gaffer dróy *maintain*  
 na thúy na chedernit,<sup>14</sup> nyt o dylyet y kynhellir húnno. *similar, like*  
 Póy bynhac a dycko treis, peth andylyedus a geis y  
 5 gynhal. A chanys andylyedus y maent óy yn keissaó  
 teyrnget y genhym ni, yn gynhebic y hynny  
 ninheu a deissyfón teyrnget y gantunt húy<sup>15</sup> o Rufein,  
 ar kadarnaf ohonom ni kymeret y gan y llall.<sup>16</sup> Kanys  
 or goresgynóys<sup>17</sup> Ulkassar<sup>18</sup> ac amherodron ereill góedy *claim, ask, demand*  
 10 ef ynys Prydein, ac o achaós hynny yr aór honn holi  
 teyrnget ohanei,<sup>19</sup> yn gynhebic y hynny minheu a  
varnaf dilyu o<sup>20</sup> Rufein talu teyrnget y minheu. Kanys  
 vy rieni ynheu gynt a oresgynnassant<sup>21</sup> Rufein ac ae  
 kynhalassant, nyt amgen, Beli uab Dyfynwal gan  
 15 ganhorthóy Bran y vraót duc Bórgóyn, góedy crogi  
 petwar gústyl ar hugeint<sup>22</sup> o dilyedogyon<sup>23</sup> Ruuein rac  
 bron y gaer, ac ae dalyassant dróy laéer o amseroed.  
 A góedy hynny Custenin mab Elen a Maxen mab  
 Llywelyn—pob vn or rei hynny yn gar agos y mi o  
 20 gerenhyd,<sup>24</sup> ac yn vrenhined arderchaó o goron ynys  
 Prydein—yr vn góedy y gilyd a gaóssant amherodraeth  
 Rufein. Ac órth hynny pony bernóch chói bot yn iaón *= Let. noun 624*  
 y minheu deissyfeit teyrnget o Rufein? O Ffreinc ac  
 or ynyssed ereill ny órthebón ni udunt óy, kany doethant  
 25 y hamdiffyn, pan y goresgynassam,<sup>25</sup> nac oe gúarafun.  
 Ac órth hynny ny órthebón ni udunt húy<sup>26</sup> or rei hynny.” *to forbid, refuse*  
 34. A góedy teruynu o Arthur yr ymadraóð, Howel<sup>1</sup>  
 uab Emyr Llydaó a órthebaóð ym blaen<sup>2</sup> paúb y ymadraóð  
 Arthur ual hyn: “Pei<sup>3</sup> traethei bop un<sup>4</sup> ohonom ni<sup>5</sup> a  
 30 medylyaó pob peth yn y uedóð, ny thebygaf i<sup>6</sup> gallu

(Ch. 33). 12 treis, 13 treulaó, 14 gaffer a thvyll a chedernit, 15 vy, 16 teyrnget *add.*, 17 o gverysgynnvy, 18 vlkassar, 19 oheni, 20 wyr *add.*, 21 weryskynassant, 22 hugein, 23 dilyodogyon, 24 gerenyd, 25 gveryscynassam 26 *om.*

(Ch. 34). 1 hywel, 2 ymlaen, 3 bei, 4 bavb, 5 oll *add.*, 6 thybygaf

*tributary*  
*deception, treachery*  
*3 cf. Pa. subj. of dwyrn*

*demand, request, seek*  
*"*

*I judge, deem*  
*ancestors*

*relationship*

*traethu to utter,*  
*declare*



damunedig part. of damunaw & desire, wish, seek for

# THE STORY OF ARTHUR

169

o neb ohonam ni rodi kyghor gŵerthuaŵrogach<sup>7</sup> nac atteb <sup>was. For mutation</sup> grynoach na doethach nor hŵn a rodes doethineb<sup>8</sup> yr <sup>v. 616 Note 1.</sup> arglŵyd Arthur ehun. Ac ŵrth hynny yr hyn a racuedylyaŵd<sup>9</sup> medŵl doeth anyanaŵl gŵastat,<sup>10</sup> ninheu yn hollaŵl moli hŵnnŵ a dylyŵn ae ganmaŵl yn wastat. <sup>5 praise, commend</sup> Kyns yn herŵyd y dylyet a dyŵedy di, or<sup>11</sup> mynny di kyrchu Rufein, ny phetrussaf<sup>12</sup> i yd aruerŵn ni or <sup>enjoy</sup> uudugolyaeth, hyt tra vom ni yn amdiffyn an rydit, <sup>born 1 Pl. Pres. Sully.</sup> hyt tra geissom ni an iaŵn y gan an gelynyon, y peth y maent hŵy<sup>13</sup> yn gam yn y geissaŵ y gennym ninheu. <sup>10</sup> Kyns pŵy bynhac a geisso dŵyn y ureint ae dylyet gan gam y gan arall, teilŵg yŵ idaŵ ynteu kolli y vreint ae dylyet. Ac ŵrth hynny kyns gŵyr Rufein yssyd yn keissaŵ dŵyn yr eynym ni, heb amheu ninheu a dygŵn y racdunt<sup>14</sup> yr eidunt, o ryd<sup>x</sup> Duŵ gyfle y ymgyuaruot ac <sup>15</sup> <sup>their 655-</sup> ŵynt. A llyna ymgyfaruot damunedic yr holl rytanyeit. Lyma daroganneu<sup>15</sup> Sibli yn wir,<sup>16</sup> a<sup>17</sup> dyŵaŵt dyuot o <sup>pl. of darogan</sup> genedyl y Brytanyeit tri brenhin a oresgynynt<sup>18</sup> <sup>prophecy, prognostication</sup> Rufeinaŵl amherodraeth. Ar deu a ryfu, ac yr<sup>19</sup> aŵr hon yd ym yth gaffael titheu yn drydyd,<sup>20</sup> yr hŵn y <sup>20</sup> tyfŵys<sup>21</sup> blaenŵed Rufeinaŵl enryded.<sup>22</sup> Or deu neur <sup>highest state, summit</sup> deryŵ eilenŵi yn amlŵc, megys y dyŵedeist ti,<sup>23</sup> yr eglur tyŵyssogyon<sup>24</sup> Beli a Chustenin;<sup>25</sup> pob un onadunt a uuant amherodron yn Rufein. Ac ŵrth hynny bryssya titheu<sup>26</sup> y gymryt y pe[t]h<sup>27</sup> y mae Duŵ yn y rodi itt. <sup>25</sup> Bryssya y oreskyn<sup>28</sup> y peth oe uod yssyd<sup>29</sup> yn mynu<sup>30</sup> y oresgyn.<sup>28</sup> Bryssya y an hardrychafel<sup>31</sup> ni oll, hyt an-Syrchafel <sup>& raise, exalt</sup> pan yth ardrychauer titheu. Ac<sup>32</sup> ny ochelŵn ninheu kymryt gŵelieu ac agheu, or byd reit.<sup>33</sup> A hyt pan

?  
to fulfil  
to complete

to fulfil  
to complete  
to fulfil  
to complete

(Ch. 34). 7 gverthuorogach, 8 nor hŵn a racuedylyaŵd raeweledic doethineb, 9 racwelas, 10 gvastadavr, 11 o, 12 phedrussaf, 13 vy, 14 dygyn racdunt vy, 15 darogan, 16 yn dyfot yn wir, 17 hi a, 18 werescynynt, 19 ar, 20 ydym yn kafel y trydyd, 21 yr hyn yd yttys yn adav, 22 anryded, 23 dywedeisti, 24 yn eglur y tywyssogyon, 25 chustenhin, 26 ditheu, 27 peth, 28 werescyn, 29 om., 30 oe vod add., 31 ardrychafel, 32 om., 33 in add.

\* ryd 3 ss. pres. ind. of rod-af I give 6128 (a)

2 sp. Pr. Subj. of  
caffel

parabyll m. a  
speech

& utter, declare

& diane escape

preparation, provision,  
project  
wish for  
thirst

f. fountain, spring

3 sp. past subj. of  
aros to await, expect,  
wait  
quando dexteras  
conferemus

cowards

besides

as a &  
promise

Xv

geffych ti hynny, minheu ath gedymdeithockaf ti<sup>34</sup> a deg mil o varchogyon aruaŵc y gyt a mi y achŵanegu<sup>① 5</sup> dy lu." increase

35. A gŵedy teruynu o Howell<sup>1</sup> y barabyll, Araŵn uab  
5 Kynuarch brenhin Prydein a dywaŵt ual hynn: "Yr  
pan dechreuauŵd vy arglŵyd i dywedut y ymadrauŵd, ny  
allaf i<sup>2</sup> traethu am tauauŵt y veint lewenyd yssyd ym  
medŵl i. Kanys nyt dim gennyf i a ry wnaetham<sup>3</sup> o ymladeu  
ar yr holl urenhined a oresgynnassam<sup>4</sup> ni hyt hynn, os  
10 gŵyr Rufein a gŵyr Germania di<sup>h</sup>agant<sup>5</sup> yn diarueu<sup>6</sup> y  
genhym ni, a heb dial arnadunt yr aeruaeu a ŵnaethant  
ŵynteu oc an rieni ni gynt. A chanys<sup>7</sup> yr aŵr honn y  
mae darpar ymgyfaruot ac ŵynt, llaŵen yŵ genyf; a  
damunaŵ yd ŵyf y dyd yd ymgyfarffom ni ac ŵynt.  
15 Kanys sychet eu gŵaet ŵynt yssyd arnaf i yn gymeint  
a phei gŵelŵn fynhaŵn oer<sup>8</sup> ger vy mron y yfet diaŵt  
ohonaei, pan vei arnaf diruaŵr sychet.<sup>9</sup> Oia Duŵ!  
gŵyn y uyt a arhoei y dyd hŵnnŵ!  
Melys a welieu genyf i<sup>10</sup> y rei a gymerŵn i neu y rei a rodŵn inheu, tra  
neŵityŵn an deheuoed y gyt an gelynyon. Ar agheu  
20 honno yssyd uelys, yr honn a diodefŵn yn dial<sup>11</sup> uy  
rieni am kenedyl, ac yn amdiffyn vy rydit, ac yn  
ardyrchauel<sup>12</sup> an brenhin. Ac ŵrth hynny kyrchŵn yr  
hanher gŵyr<sup>13</sup> hynny; na safŵn yn eu kyrchu, hyt pan  
25 orfom ni arnadunt ŵy gan dŵyn eu henryded,<sup>14</sup> yd  
aruerom<sup>15</sup> ni<sup>16</sup> o laŵen uudugolyaeth. Ac y achŵaneckau  
dy lu ditheu minheu a rodaf dŵy vil o varchogyon aruaŵc  
heb eu pedyt."<sup>17</sup> pedyd infanty

leg. di-aer!  
without slaughter

gandao

to stand, stay

Augment,  
increase

support,  
help

(Ch. 34). 34 gytymdeithockavn ditheu

(Ch. 35). 1 hvel, 2 allaffi, 3 genhym ar wnaetham, 4 werysgynassam,  
5 diagbant, 6 diarua, 7 achavs, 8 loyv eglur, 9 ohonaei—sychet om.,  
10 genhyfi, 11 gvaet add., 12 ardrychafel, 13 yr avr hon yr haner gvyr,  
14 hanryded, 15 aruerhom, 16 ni oll, 17 pedyd

allu ae defnyd yn y wassanaeth. Ac yna y kahat o  
 ynys Prydein ehun<sup>1</sup> trugein mil o varchogyon aruaŵc,  
 heb deg<sup>2</sup> mil a adaŵssei urenhin Lydaŵ. Ac ody na  
 brenhined yr ynyssed ereill (kany buassei aruer o  
 varchogyon<sup>3</sup>) paŵb onadunt a edeŵis pedydgant y saŵl 5 *a troop of infantry*  
 a eŵlynt eu kaffel. Sef a gahat or chwech ynys, nyt  
 amgen, Iwerdon ac Islont a Gotlont ac o<sup>4</sup> Orc a Lychlyn  
 a Denmarc, chŵe<sup>5</sup> ugein mil o pedyt;<sup>6</sup> ac y gan  
 tyŵyssogyon Freinc, nyt amgen, Ruthyn a Phortu a  
 Normandi a Cenoman ar Angiŵ a Pheitaŵ, petwar ugein 10  
 mil o uarchogyon. Ac y gan y deudec gogyfarch<sup>7</sup> y *v. p. 162*  
 deuthant<sup>8</sup> y gyt a Gereint deucant<sup>9</sup> marchaŵc a mil o  
 varchogyon aruaŵc. A sef oed eiryf hynny oŵl y gyt,  
 deu cant marchaŵc a their mil a phetŵar vgein mil a  
 chanmil, heb eu pedyt,<sup>6</sup> yr hyn nyt oed haŵd eu gossot 15  
 yn rif.

37. A gŵedy gŵelet o Arthur paŵb yn baraŵt yn y reit  
 ae wassanaeth, erchi a oruc y baŵp bryssyaŵ y wlat  
 ac ymbaratoi, ac yn erbyn Kalan Aŵst bot eu kynadyl  
 oŵl y gyt ym porth Bar<sup>ber</sup>floi ar tir Lydaŵ, ŵrth gyrchu 20  
 Bŵrgŵyn ody no yn erbyn gŵyr Freinc. Ac y gyt a *to meet*  
 hynny menegi a oruc Arthur ŵrth genadeu gŵyr Rufein  
 na thalei ef tyrnget udunt hŵy<sup>1</sup> o ynys Prydein. Ac nyt  
 yr gŵneuthur iaŵn vdunt or a holynt yd oed ef yn  
 kyrchu Rufein, namyn yr kymell teyrnget idaŵ ef o 25  
 Rufein, megys y barnassei ehun y dylu. Ac ar hynny  
 yd aethant y brenhined ar gŵyrda paŵb y ymbaratoi heb  
 vn annot, erbyn yr amser teruynedic a ossodyssit udunt.

38. A gŵedy adnabot o Les amheraŵdyr yr ateb a 30  
 gaŵssei y gan Arthur, drŵy gyghor sened Rufein ef a *to recognise, know*

(Ch. 36). 1 *om.*, 2 y deg, 3 varchogaeth, 4 *om. recte*, 5 whe, 6 pedyd  
 7 gogyfurd, 8 doethant, 9 deudeckant

(Ch. 37). 1 vy

ellogŷs kenadeu y wyssyaŷ brenhined y dŷfrein,<sup>1</sup> ac  
 erchi<sup>2</sup> dyuot ac eu lloed gantunt y gyt ac ef ŷrth  
 oresgyn<sup>3</sup> ynys Prydein. Ac yn gyflym yd ymgynull-  
 assant yno Epistrophus<sup>4</sup> vrenhin Groec,<sup>5</sup> Mustensar  
 5 brenhin<sup>6</sup> yr Affric, Aliphantina urenhin yr Yspaen,  
 Hirtacus vrenhin Parth, Boctus brenhin Iudiff, Sertor<sup>7</sup>  
 vrenhin<sup>6</sup> Libia, Serx vrenhin Nuri, Pandrasius brenhin<sup>6</sup>  
 yr Eifft, Missipia<sup>8</sup> brenhin<sup>6</sup> Babilon, Teucer duc Frigia,  
 Euander duc<sup>6</sup> Siria, Echion o Boeti, Ypolit o Creta,<sup>9</sup> y  
 10 gyt ar tywyssogyon a oedynt darestygedigyon udunt ar  
 gŷyrda. Ac y gyt a hynny o vrdas y senedwyr Les,  
 Kadell, Meuruc, Lepidus, Gaius, Metellus,<sup>10</sup> Octa,  
 Quintus, Miluius, Taculus, Metellus, Quintinus,  
 Gerucius.<sup>11</sup> A sef<sup>12</sup> oed eiryf hynny oll y gyt,  
 15 canŷr a thrugein mil a phetŷar can mil.

*to equip themselves with* 39. A gŷedy ymgyweiraŷ onadunt o bop peth or a vei  
 reit udunt, Kalan Aŷst hŷynt<sup>1</sup> a gymerassant eu hynt  
 parth ac ynys Prydein. A phan ŷybu Arthur hynny,  
 ynteu a orchymynŷs llywodraeth ynys Prydein y  
 20 Vedraŷt y nei uab y chŷaer, ac y Wenhŷyvar vrenhines.  
 Ac ynteu ae lu a gychŷynŷs parth a phorthua<sup>2</sup> Hamtŷn.  
 A phan gafas y gŷynt gyntaf<sup>3</sup> yn y ol, ef a aeth yn y  
 logeu ar y mor.<sup>4</sup> Ac val yd oed uelly o aneiryf amylder  
 llogeu yn y gylch, ar gŷynt yn rŷyd yn y ol, gan  
 25 leŷenyd yn rŷygaŷ y<sup>5</sup> mor, mal am aŷr haner nos,  
 gŷrthrŷm hun a disgynŷs<sup>6</sup> ar Arthur. Sef y gŷelei  
 drŷy y hun, arth yn ehedec yn yr aŷyr; murmur hŷnnŷ  
 ae odŷrd a lanwei y traetheu o ofyn ac aruthred. Ac y  
 ŷrth y gorlleŷin y gŷelei aruthyr<sup>7</sup> dreic yn ehedec, ac o  
 1 from

(Ch. 38). 1 dvyrein recte, 2 ac y erchi vdunt, 3 wereskyn, 4 epitrophus  
 5 goroece, 6 vrenhin, 7 settor, 8 mesipia, 9 greta, 10 metelus, 11 For  
 Quintus Jerucius A has Quintus milnius katulus metelus Quintus  
 cerutius (?), 12 Ac ysef

(Ch. 39). 1 vynt, 2 phorth, 3 kyntaf, 4 ar y mor om., 5 om.,  
 6 dygvdyvys, 7 arthur

= favourable

growling  
 terror, fear  
 terrible,  
 fearful

to rend, break  
 (= to plough the sea)  
 very heavy  
 a bear  
 go down a  
 rumbling noise

the east

\* gwiad lamentable, pitious, terrible  
creu-lawn bloodthirsty, cruel  
dehongyl to interpret, interpretation

## THE STORY OF ARTHUR

173

eglwurder y llygeit yn goleuhau yr holl wlat. A phob  
 vn or rei hynny a welei yn ymgvyrchu, ac yn ymlad yn  
 irat ac yn greulaon. Ac or diwed y gŵelei y racyŵededic  
 dreic yn kyrchu yr arth, ac ae thanaŵl anadyl yn y  
 losgi, ac yn y vŵrŵ yn llosgedic yn y dayar. A  
 gŵedy duhunaŵ o Arthur, ef a datkanaŵd y weledigaeth<sup>8</sup>  
 yr gŵyrda a o[e]dynt<sup>9</sup> yn y gylch. Ac ŵynt gan y  
 dehogyl a dyŵedassant mae<sup>10</sup> Arthur a arŵydockaei y  
 dreic, ar arth a arŵydockaei y kaŵr a ymladei ac ef, ar  
 ymlad a welei y rydunt a arŵydockaei yr ymlad a vydei<sup>11</sup>  
 y rydaŵ ef ar kaŵr, ar uudugolyaeth a damweinhei<sup>12</sup> y  
 Arthur or kaŵr. Ac amgen no hynny y tebygei<sup>13</sup>  
 Arthur ehun uot y dehogyl. Kanys ef a dybygei y mae  
 oe achaŵs ef ar amheraŵtyr<sup>14</sup> y gŵelei ef y vreidŵyt. A  
 gŵedy rydec y nos, or diŵed pan yttod gŵaŵr dyd yn  
 cochi tranoeth,<sup>15</sup> ŵynt a disgynnassant ym porthua<sup>16</sup>  
 Barberflŵy yn Lydaŵ. Ac yn y lle tynu<sup>17</sup> pebylleu a  
 wnaethant, ac yno aros brenhined yr ynyssed<sup>18</sup> ar  
 gŵladoed ac eu llw atunt.

40. A gŵedy ymgynullaŵ paŵb y gyt or yd oedynt yn  
 aros, Arthur a gychŵynŵys odyndy hyt yn Aŵgustudŵm,  
 y lle y tybygei bot yr amheraŵdyr ae lu yn dyuot. A  
 gŵedy y dyuot hyt ar lann yr Avon Wenn ym Bŵrgŵyn,  
 ef a venegit idaŵ bot yr amheraŵdyr gŵedy pebyllaŵ nyt  
 oed bell odyndy, a chymeint o luoed gantaŵ ac y dywedit  
 nat oed neb a allei gŵrthŵynebu idaŵ. Ac yr hynny  
 eissoes ny chynhyruaŵd Arthur dim, namyn gossot y  
 bebylleu ae luesteu ar lann yr auon, megys y gallei yn  
 rŵyd ac yn ehang llunyaethu y lu, or bei reit idaŵ, yn y  
 lle hŵnnŵ. Ac odyndy anuones Arthur Boso o Ryt  
 Ychen a Gŵal[ch]mei uab Gŵyar a Gereint Garanŵys hyt

to attack  
 aforesaid  
 fiery

signifies, imply  
 giant, mighty man

happen to, befall  
 different from that  
 other than that

because of  
 himself  
 = redug to  
 him, pass by

next day  
 to pitch tents

Camps  
 restricted,  
 free

cyhyrffu to  
 excite, move  
 to arrange, dispose,  
 array

(Ch. 39). 8 vreidvyt, 9 oed, 10 y mae, 11 vei, 12 damweinei,  
 13 tybygei, 14 amheravdyr, 15 dranoeth, 16 ymhorthua, 17 tannu  
 18 ynyssed

annog to urge, encourage, recommend  
blyngbain to become angry, to frown  
ym - a dassu (ac) to adapt oneself

ar amheraódyr Rufein, y erchi idaó mynet o teruynau Freinc, neu tranoeth rodi kat ar uaes y Arthur, y wybot póy oreu onadunt a dyliei Ffreinc. Ac annoc a ónaeth jeuentit Ilys Arthur y Walchmei góneuthur górthgassed <sup>rebellion, dissension</sup>  
5 yn Ilys yr amheraódyr, megys y gellynt gaffel gosgymonn y ymgyuaruot a góyr Rufein.

41. Ac odynd y trywyr hynny a gerdassant at yr amheraódyr, ac a archassant idaó mynet ymeith o Ffreinc, neu ynteu trannoeth rodi kat ar uaes y Arthur. Ac ual  
10 yd oed yr amheraódyr yn dyóedut nat mynet ohonei a dyliei, namyn dyuot oe hamdiffyn ac y Ilyóyaó, nachaf Quintinus nei yr amheraódyr yn dywedut bot yn húy gorhoffed a bocsach y Brytanyeit noc eu gallu ac eu <sup>boasting, vaunting, malathesis</sup> gleóder, a bot yn húy eu tauodeu noc eu clefydeu.

15 Ac órth hynny Ilytaó a oruc Góalchmei, a thynnu cledyf a llad y benn ger bronn y ewythyr. Ac yn y lle ar hynt <sup>immediate</sup> kaffel eu meirych ac ymtynnu or Ilys ef ae gedym[d]eithon, ar Rufeinwyr ar veirych ac ar traet yn eu hymlit y geissaó dial y górnarnadunt oc eu holl ynni. <sup>rigour</sup>

20 Ac ual yd oed vn or Rufeinwyr yn ymordiwes a Gereint Garanóys, ef a troes arnaó, ac a gleif ae gúant tróy y holl <sup>perished</sup> arueu a thróydaó ehun, yny vyd yr llaóy ar y varch yn varó. Ac yna blyghau a oruc Boso o Ryt Ychen, a throiy varch a oruc, ar kyntaf a gyvaruu ac ef, ef a ossodes

25 arnaó yn y vogel, ac a rodes dyrnaót agheuaól idaó, a chymell arnaó ymadaó ae varch ac ymadassu ar dayar. <sup>to make use of his length on the ground</sup> Ac ar hynny nachaf Marell Mut senedór oe holl ynni yn keissaó dial Qóintilian ac yn ymordiwes a Góalchmei yn y ol ac yn mynnu y dala, pan ymchoelaó Góalchmei

30 arnaó yn gyflym, ac a chledyf llad y benn yn gyfuch ae dóy yscóyd; ac y gyt a hynny gorchymun idaó, pan elhei y uffern, menegi y Góintinal, yr hónn a ladassei ef yn y pebyll, bot yn amyl gan y Brytanyeit y ryó or hoffter hónnó. Ac odynd ymóascu ae gedymdeithon <sup>on a level with</sup> to rejoin

occasion (lit. fuel, food)

boasting, affectation

retreat from

until 6233

bogel f. navel to park with

to command

boasting



THE STORY OF ARTHUR

175

l. of  
war, w,  
w aew,  
spear

spur  
shouting,  
cry

a oruc Góalchmei ac eu hannoc, a llad o bop un ór; ar Rufeinwyr ar góeóyr ac ar clefydeu yn eu fustaó, ac ny ellynt nac eu dala nac eu bóró. Ac ual yd oedynt geir llaó coet a oed yn agos udunt, ar Rufeinwyr yn eu herlit yn lut, nachaf chwe mil or Brytanyeit yn dyuot or coet yn borth yr tywyssogyon a oedynt ar ffo, ac ar hynt yn dangos yr ysparduneu yr meirych, ac yn llanó yr aóyr o lefein a dodi eu taryaneu ar eu bronnoed ac yn deissyfyt kyrchu y Rufeinwyr ac yn y lle eu kymell ar ffo, ac o vn vryt eu herlit, a bóró rei onadunt yr llaó, a dala ereill, a llad ereill.

to strike, beat

glad tenacious,  
5 fast, diligent  
immediately

sudden, unexpected

10 erled to pursue

sp, speaking  
difficult,  
tricate

42. A gúedy menegi hynny y Petrius senedór, ef a gymerth degmil y gyt ac ef, a bryssyaó yn ganhorthóy y gedymdeithon,<sup>1</sup> ac yn y lle kymell y Brytanyeit ar fo yr coet y dathoedynt ohonaó. Ac eissoes nyt heb wneuthur diruaó gollet yr Rufeinwyr. Kanys y Brytanyeit, kyt foynt, pan geffynt adóyeu kyfig a lleoed dyrys, aerua uaó a óneynt or Rufeinwyr. Ac ual yd yttoedynt hóy yn ymladar y wed honno, nachaf Hydeir uab Mut a phump mil y gyt ac ef yn dyuot yn ganhorthóy 20 yr Brytanyeit. Ac yn y lle ymchoelut a wnaethant; ar rei a oedynt yn dangos eu kefnau ar ffo yr aó, honno, yn y lle yd oedynt yn dangos eu bronnoed ac yn rodi gúrolyon dyrnodeu bop eilwers yr Rufeinwyr, ar Brytanyeit oc eu holl dihewyt yn damunaó milóryaeth. Ac ny didorynt py damóein y dygúdynt yndaó, hyt tra gynhelynt eu clot ym milóryaeth, megys y dechreuysynt. Ar Rufeinóyr kymhennach y góneynt óy; kanys Petrius megys tyóysaó da ae dysgei óynt yn doeth góers y gyrchu góers arall y ffo, megys y góelei yn dygrynoi udunt. Ac uelly y góneynt golladeu maó yr Brytanyeit.

15 colled loss  
cyf - ing narrow; strait

25 affection inclination,  
desire

compar. of Cymru,  
wise

30 to avail, profit

43. A phan welas Boso o Ryt Ychen hynny, galó a oruc attaó laóer or Brytanyeit gleáaf a óydat ar neilltu,

on one side

a dyŵedut ōrthunt ual hyn: "Dioer," heb ef, "kany's heb wybot y an brenhin y dechreuassam ni yr ymlad hōnn, reit oed yn ninheu ymoglyt rac an dygŵydaŵ yn y<sup>1</sup> ran waethaf or ymlad. Ac os uelly y dygŵydaŵn,

to guard against  
X

5 kollet maŵr oc an marchogyon a gollōn, ac y gyt a hynny an brenhin a dygŵn ar gyffro ac irlloned ōrthym. Ac ōrth hynny gelōch aŵch gleōder attāŵch, a chanlynōch vinheu drŵy vydinoed y Rufeinwyr. Ac o kanhorthōya an tyghetuennu ni, an llad Petrius ae dala ni a orvydōn."

gyffro excitement

fates, fortunes

wrath

1st Pl. Fut  
of Gen - 3rd  
overcome

10 44. Ac ar hynny dangos yr ysparduneu yr meirych a orugant, a thrŵy vydinoed y marchogyon o ebrŵyd ruthur mynet drostunt hyt y lle yd oed Petrius yn dysgu y gedymdeithon. Ac yn gyflym Boso a gyrchaŵd Petrius a meglyt yndaŵ herŵyd y vynōgyl a, megys y

swift, quick

15 racydŵedassei, dygŵydaŵ y gyt ac ef yr lladŵr. Ac ōrth hynny ymgynullaŵ a ōneynt y Rufeinwyr y geissaŵ y ellōg y gan y elynyon. Ac or parth arall yd ympentyrrynt y Brytanyeit yn borth y Voso o Ryt Ychen. Ac yna y clyōit y lleuein ar gorderi; yna yd oed yr aerua diruaŵr o bop parth, hyt tra ytoedynt y Rufeinwyr yn keissaŵ

= to break through

to grip, grasp, cling to

ym ben llyn (ryfau)  
to rush together  
a shriek, noise,  
disturbance

20 o bop parth, hyt tra ytoedynt y Rufeinwyr yn keissaŵ rydhau eu tyōyssaŵc, ar Brytanyeit yn y attal. Ac yna y gellit gŵybot pŵy oreu a digonei a gŵayŵ, pŵy oreu a saetheu, pŵy oreu a chledyf. Ac or diwed y Brytanyeit gan teŵhau eu bydinoed a dugant eu ruthur ar

digawr to be able  
effect, do, accomplish  
to thicken, close up  
the ranks

25 karcharoryon gantunt drŵy vydinoed y Rufeinŵyr, hyt pan vdynt ym perued kedernit eu hymlad ehunein a Phetrius gantunt. Ac yn y lle ymchoelut ar yr Rufeinwyr ymdiueit oc eu tywyssaŵc ac or ran vŵyaf yn ōanach ac yn ōasgaredigach dangos eu kefneu a orugant ōrth ffo.

30 Ac ōrth hynny estōg<sup>x</sup> gantunt a ōnaeth y Brytanyeit, ac eu llad ac eu hyspeilaŵ, ac erlit y rei a ffoynt, a dala lladŵr or rei a damunynt y eu dangos yr brenhin. Ac or

attached

pl. of ym Sifad (ol)  
hereft (of)

damunaw to  
desire, wish, seek for

1. MS. yr

x estōg = gestōg to let down e. gantunt in cumbentes



diwed gŵedy gŵneuthur llaber o berigleu a drŵc onadunt, y Brytanyeit ŷynt[eu] a ymchoelassant y eu pebylleu ar karcharoryon ac ar yspeileu gantunt. A chan leŷenyd ŷynt a dangossant Petrius ar karcharoryon ereill y gyt ac ef y Arthur. Ac ynteu a diolches udunt gan diruaŵr leŷenyd eu llafur ac eu gŵassanaeth yn y aŵssen ef, gan adaŵ achŵaneckau eu henryded ac eu kyuoeth am eu milŵryaeth ac eu molyant. Ac yna yd erchis Arthur mynet ar carcharoryon hyt ym Paris y eu kadŵ, tra gymerit kyghor amdanunt. Ac yd erchis Arthur y 10 Gadŵr iarll Kernyŵ a Bedwyr a Rickart a Bosel ac eu teuluoed y gyt ac ŷynteu eu hebrŵg, hyt pan elhynt yn diogel, rac ofyn tŵyll y Rufeinwyr.

mischievous, harm

absence

until, so that  
deception, treachery

45. Ar Rufeinwyr y nos hono, gŵedy caffel onadunt gŵybot y darpar hŵnnŵ, a etholassant pymtheg mil o wyr aruaŵc ac ae gellygassant hyt nos y ragot y fford y tebygynt eu mynet trannoeth, y geissaŵ rydhau eu karcharoryon. Ac yn tyŵyssogyon ar yr rei hynny y gossodet Ultei a Chadell a Chwintus senedŵr ac Evander vrenhin Siria a Sertor vrenhin Libia. Ar rei hynny oll a gymerasant eu hynt, hyt pan gaŵssant y lle a vei adas gantunt y lechu, ac yno aros y dyd arnadunt.

lechu to lurk, hide

46. Ar bore drannoeth kymryt eu fford a wnaeth y Brytanyeit ac eu karcharoryon parth a Pharis. Ac val yd oedynt yn dyuot yn agos yr lle yd oed y pyt y gan eu gelynyon arnadunt, ac ŷynteu heb wybot dim or vrat nae thybyaŵ, yn dirybud eu kyrchu a oruc y Rufeinwyr, a dechreu eu gŵaskaru a mynet drostunt. Ac eissoes, kyt kyrchit y Brytanyeit yn dirybud, ny chahat yn diaruot, namyn yn ŵraŵl gŵrthŵynebu y eu gelynyon. 30 A rei a dodassant y gadŵ y karcharoryon, ac ereill yn vydinoed y ymlad. Ar vydin a ossodassant y gadŵ y carcharoryon a orchmynnassant y Rickert a Bedwyr. A thywysogaeth y rei ereill a orchmynnŵyt y Gadŵr

25 pyd pitfall, snare  
bad treachery, plot

to break through

command, commend,  
commit to

iarll Kernyó, a Borel yn gyttywyssaó idaó. Ar  
 Rufeinwyr kyrchu a wneynt heb geissaó na llunyeithaó *to arrange put in order*  
 eu góyr nae bydinaó, namyn oc eu hoñ lafur keissaó  
 góneuthur aerua or Brytanyeit, hyt tra yttoedynt óynteu  
 5 yn bydinaó eu góyr ac yn eu hamdiffyn ehunein. Ac  
 órth hynny gan eu góanhau yn ormod óynt yn dybryt a *ugh, foul base*  
 gollassynt eu karcharoryon, pei na danuonei eu tyghetuen *fake fortune*  
 vdunt damunedic ganhorthóy ar vrys. Kanys Góittart  
 iarll Peittaó, góedy góybot y tóyñ hónnó, a deuth a their  
 10 mil gantaó. Ac or diwed gan nerth Duó ar kanhorthóy  
 hónnó y Brytanyeit a oruuant, ac a talyssant eu haerua  
 yr tóyñwyr. Ac eisoes yn y gyfranc kyntaf y collasant  
*traitors*  
 lawer. Kanys yna y collasant yr arderchaó tywyssaó  
 Borel o Cenoman ; yn kyuaruot ac Euander vrenhin Siria  
 15 yn vrathedic gan y waeó y dygóydóys. Yna y kollasant  
 hefyt petóar góyr bonhedigyon, nyt amgen, Hirlas o  
 Pirón a Meuruc o Gaer Geint ac Alidóe o Dindagól a  
 Hir uab Hydeir. Nyt oed haóð kaffel góyr leóach nor  
 rei hynny. Ac yr hynny ny chollasant y Brytanyeit  
 20 eu glewder,<sup>1</sup> namyn oc eu llaur kadó eu karcharoryon.  
 Ac or diwed ny allyssant y Rufeinwyr diodef eu ruthur,  
 namyn yn gyflym adaó y maes a ffo parth ac eu pebylleu,  
 ar Brytanyeit yn eu herlit ac yn góneuthur aerua  
 onadunt. Ac ny pheidassant yn eu dala ac yn eu llad,  
 25 hyt pan ladassant Vltei a Chadeñ senedór ac Evander  
 vrenhin Siria. A góedy caffel or Brytanyeit y vudu-  
 golyaeth honno, óynt a anuonassant y karcharoryon hyt  
 ym Paris. Ar rei a dalyassant o newyd, óynt ae  
 hym[ch]oelassant ar Arthur eu brenhin oe dangos, gan  
 30 adaó gobeith hoñ uudugolyaeth idaó ; kanys nifer mor  
 vychan a hónnó a geóssynt uudugolyaeth ar y saóñ  
 elynyon hynny.

? 3 Plur. Plur. perf. of  
 caffel

# THE STORY OF ARTHUR

179

47. A gŵedy gŵelet o Les amheraŵtyr Rufein meint y gollet ar dechreu y ryfel, trŵm a thrist uu gantaŵ. A medylŵaŵ a oruc peidaŵ ae darpar am ymlad ac Arthur a mynet y dinas Aŵuarn y aros porth o newyd attaŵ y gan Leo amheraŵdyr. A gwedy caffel o honaŵ hynny yn y gyghor, y nos honno ef a aeth hyt yn Legris. A gŵedy menegi hynny y Arthur, ynteu a raculaenŵys y fford ef. Ar nos honno, gan adaŵ y dinas ar y llaŵ asseu idaŵ, ef a aeth hyt y myŵn dyffryn y fford y kerdei Les amheraŵdyr ae lu. Ac yno y mynŵys ef bydinaŵ y wyr. Ac ef a erchis y Vorud iarll Kaer Loyŵ kymryt attaŵ Ileg o wyr a mynet ar neilltu yg gŵersyll, a phan welei uot yn reit ŵrthunt, dyfot yn gānhorthŵy. Ac odynd y nifer oll y am hynny a ranŵys yn naŵ bydin, ac ym pob bydin or naŵ chwe gŵyr a chwe ugeint a chwe chant a chwe mil, ar rei hynny yn gyweir o bop arueu, ar rann o bop bydin yn uarchogyon ar rann araŵ yn bedyt, a thywyssogyon y dyscu pob bydin yn y blaen. Ac yr vydingyntaf y rodet Araŵn uab Kynuarch a Chadŵr iarll Kernyŵ, vn yn yr anher deheu ar llaŵ yn yr anher asseu. Ac yr vydin araŵ y rodet Gereint Garanŵys a Boso o Ryt Ychen. Ac yr dryded y rodet Echel vrenhin Denmarc a Leu uab Kynuarch brenhin Lychlyn. Ac yr bedwared y rodet Howel uab Emyr Lydaŵ a Gŵalchmei uab Gŵyar, deu nei y Arthur. Ac yn ol y pedeir hynny y gossodet pedeir bydin ereill drae kefyn ŵynteu. Ac yr gyntaf or rei hynny y rodet Kei bensŵydwr a Bedwyr bentrullyat. Ac yr nessaf idi y rodet Hodlyn iarll Ruthyn a Gŵittart iarll Peittaŵ; ac yr tryded Owein o Gaer Leon a Ionathal o Gaer Weir; ac yr petwared Vryen Vadon a Chursalem o Gaer Geint. Ac Arthur ehun a etholes<sup>1</sup> Ileg idaŵ o varchogyon aruaŵc o

left

lleng,  
legion

new, again

5

Langryd, Langryd

then praecedere

10

Gloucester

a camp

15

6726

25

behind them (p. 187 Note)

30

Warwick

in front, before  
 & carry  
 angthen need,  
 necessity

chwe gŷyr a chwe ugeint a chwe chant a chŷe mil. A rac  
bron Arthur sefyll y dreic eureit, yr honn a oed yn lle arŷyd <sup>instead of</sup>  
 idaŷ, megys y gellynt y gŷyr blin ar rei brathedic, pan  
 gymhellei eu hagen<sup>1</sup> udunt, ffo dan yr arŷyd honno  
 5 megys y gastell diogel.

suffering with  
 to fail  
 boch 2 Pl. Pr. Subj.  
 ease

48. A gŷedy llunyaethu paŷb yn y ansaŷd, Arthur a <sup>station</sup>  
 dywaŷt val hynn ŷrth y varchogyon: "Vyg kytuar-  
 chogyon kytdiodeuedic ymi,<sup>2</sup> chŷi a ŷnaethaŷch ynys  
 Prydein yn arglŷydes ar dec teyrnas ar hugeint; y aŷch  
 10 deŷred chŷi ac y aŷch molyant y kytdiolchaf ynheu  
 hynny, y molyant nyt yttyŷ yn paŷlu nac yn dyffygvaŷ, & fail, lack  
 namyn yn kynnydu. Kyt ry foch chŷi ys pump mlyned  
 yn arueru o seguryt heb arueru o arueu a milŷryaeth, yr  
 hynny eissoes ny chollyssaŷch aŷch anyanaŷl dayoni,<sup>goodness, virtue, valor</sup>  
 15 namyn yn wastat parhau yn ach bonhedic dayoni.  
 Kanys y Rufeinwyr a gymellassaŷch ar ffo, y rei a oed  
 oc eu syberŷyt yn keissaŷ dŷyn aŷch rydit y gennŷch,  
 ac yn vŷy eu nifer nor einym ni. Ac ny allasant sefyll  
 yn aŷch erbyn, namyn yn dybryt ffo gan achub y dinas  
 20 hŷnn. Ac yr aŷr honn y doant o hŷnnŷ dŷŷy y dyffryn  
 hŷnn y gyrchu Aŷuarn. Ac y am hynn yma y gellŷch  
 chŷitheu eu kaffel ŷynt yn dirybud ac eu llad megys  
 deueit. Kanys gŷyr y dŷyrein a debygant<sup>3</sup> bot llesked  
 ynaŷch chŷi, pan geissynt gŷneuthur aŷch gŷlat yn  
 25 trethaŷl udunt a chwitheu yn geith udunt. Pony<sup>g. Caeth</sup>  
 wybuant ŷy py ryŷ ymladeu a dyborthassaŷch chŷi y wyr  
 Lychlyn a Denmarc ac y tywyssogyon Freinc, y rei  
 a oreskynassaŷch chŷi, ac a rydhayssaŷch y ŷrth eu  
 harglŷydiaeth waratŷyduŷ ŷy? Ac ŷrth hynny, kan  
 30 gorfuam ni yn yr ymladeu kadarnaf hynny, heb amheu  
 ni a orfydŷn yn yr ymladeu yscaŷn hynn, os o vn  
dihewyt ac o vn vryt y llafuryŷn y gyŷarsagu yr hanner

dy-borthi to  
 carry, inflict  
 disgraceful  
 light, slight, easy  
 affection, inclination,  
 desire

3 Pl. Pres.

X

1. MS. hagen    2 MS. yni    3 leg. debyggynt

X

Cy-wan-sangu to trample upon, oppress, crush.

tor belly; ar eu tor against them  
annof to urge, encourage, recommend

## THE STORY OF ARTHUR

181

*cadards* gŷyr hynn. Py veint o enryded a medyant a chyfoeth  
a geiff paŷb ohonaŷch chŷi, os megys kytvarchogyon  
ffydlaŷn yd ufudheŷch chŷi ym gorchymynn ynheu? *obey*  
Kanyŷ gŷedy gorffom ni arnadunt, ni a gyrchŷn Rufein,  
*to possess* a ni a gaffŷn y medu hi. Ac velly keffŷch yr eur ar aryant 5  
ar llysoed ar tired ar keŷtyll ar dinassoed; ac eu hoŷl  
gyuoeth a geffŷch." Ac val yd oed yn dyŷedut hynny  
ŷrthunt, paŷb o vn eir a gadarnassant bot yn gynt y  
diodefynt ageu noc yd ymedeŷynt ac ef, tra vei ef vyŷ  
or blaen.

*3 Pl. Past Subj. of  
y medu (ac), part  
10 with, leave, desert.*

49. A gŷedy gŷybot or amheraŷdyr y vrat yd oedit  
yn y darparu idaŷ, nyt ffo a oruc ef megys y darparŷssei, *to prepare, intend*  
namyn galŷ y leŷder attaŷ a chyrchu y dyffryn hŷnnŷ  
ar eu tor. A galŷ y tyŷyssogyon attaŷ a dywedut ŷrthunt  
val hyn: "Tadeu enrydedus o arglŷydiaeth, or rei y 15  
dylyir kynal teyrnassoed y dŷyrein<sup>1</sup> ar gorlleŷin yn  
darestygedic vdunt, kŷffeŷch ych hendadeu, y rei yr  
gorescyn eu gelynyon ny ochelynt ellŷg eu prŷaŷt waet  
*made  
over him  
but (often  
ref. § 214)* ehunein, namyn adaŷ agreiff molyant yr rei a delei *our  
= anghreiff example*  
gŷedy ŷynt. Ac velly yn vynyŷh y goruydynt. A chan 20  
oruot y gochelynt agheu, kanyŷ ny daŷ y neb namyn  
yr neb y gŷelho Duŷ, ar ansaŷd y mynho Duŷ, ar amser  
y mynho. Ac ŷrth hynny yd achŷaneckeynt hŷy gyfoeth *augmented, increased*  
Rufein ac eu molyant hŷy ac eu clot ac eu hadŷynder ac *gentleness, nobility, honour*  
eu haelder. Ac o hynny y dyrcheynt ŷynt ac eu 25 *both -- and*  
harglŷydiaeth ac eu hetuedyon ar yr hoŷl vyt. Ac ŷrth  
hynny gan damunaŷ kyffroi ynaŷch chwitheu y kyfryŷ *the same kind*  
hŷnnŷ yd anogaf i hyt pan alŷoch chŷi attaŷch aŷch *until, so that*  
anyanaŷl dayoni, a hyt pan safoch yndi gan gyrchu  
aŷch gelynyon yssyd yn aŷch aros yn y dyffryn hŷnn  
gan deissyfyt y gennŷch aŷch dylyet. Ac na thebygŷch  
*to demand, request,  
seek, merit* y mae rac eu hofyn ŷy y kyrcheis i y dinas hŷnn, namyn

o tebygu an herlit ni ohonunt hŷy, ac yn deissyfyt kaffel *to seek*  
 ohonam aerua diruaŷr eu meint ohonunt. A chanyys yn  
 amgen y gŷnaethant hŷy noc y tebygassŷn i, gŷnaŷn  
 ninheu yn amgen noc y tebygant ŷynteu. Deisyfŷn  
 ? | 5 ŷynt, ac yn leŷ kyrchŷn ŷynt. A chyt gorffont, diodefŷn  
 ni yn da y rythur gyntaf y gantunt; a velly heb amheu  
 ni a oruydŷn. Kanys y neb a safo yn da yn y rythur  
 gyntaf, mynych yŷ y vynet gan uudugolyaeth yn llaŷer o  
 ymladeu."

*to come to pass, happen  
 affection, inclination  
 desire (adj here?)  
 eager)*

IO 50. A gŷedy daruot idaŷ teruynu yr ymadraŷd hŷnnŷ  
 a llaŷer o rei ereill, paŷb o vn dihewyt a rodassant eu  
 dŷylaŷ gan tygu nat ymedewynt ac ef; ac ar vrys  
 gwisgaŷ amdanunt eu harueu ac adaŷ Legrys a chyrchu  
 y dyffryn, y lle yd oed Arthur gŷedy llunyaethu y  
 15 vydinoed. Ac yna gossot a ŷnaethant hŷynteu drŷy  
 deudec bydin o varchogyon a phedyt yn herŷyd  
 Rufeinaŷl deuaŷt o chwe gŷyr a thrugeint a chwe chant  
 a chŷe mil ym pop bydin; ac ym pop vn ohonunt  
*6,666*  
llyŷodyr, hyt pan vei o dysc hŷnnŷ y kyrchynt ac y  
*a leader, commander  
 due, prospect*  
 20 kilynt, pan vei dylvedus udunt, ac y gŷrthŷynebynt y eu  
 gelynyon. Ac y vn or bydinoed y rodes<sup>1</sup> Les/  
 Kadell senedŷr o Rufein ac Aliphantina brenhin yr  
 Yspaen, ac yr eil Hirtacus brenhin Parth a Meuruc  
 senedŷr, ac yr tryded Bocus brenhin Nidif a Ganis  
 25 senedŷr, yr bedwared Qŷintus a Myrr senedŷr. Ar  
 pedeir hynny a rodet yn y blaen. Ac yn ol y pedeir  
 hynny y dodet pedeir ereill. Ac y vn or rei hynny y  
 rodet Serx brenhin Ituri, ac yr eil Polites duc Ffrigia,  
 yr tryded Pandrasius brenhin yr Eift, yr pedŷared duc  
*v. p. 172*  
 30 Bitinia. Ac yn ol y rei hynny pedeir bydin ereill. Ac  
 y vn ohonunt y rodet Qŷintus Carucius, ac yr eil iarll  
 Lelli Hosti, yr tryded Sulpius, yr pedŷared Marius

*v. p. 181*

*v. p. 172*

*cf. 172*



senedŵr. Ac ynteu yr amheraŵtyr hŵnt ac yma, yn = *here & there (hnt = yonder)*  
 annoc y wyr ac yn eu dysgu py wed yd ymledynt. Ac  
 ym perued y llŵ yd erchis ef sefyll yn gadarn eryr  
 eureit, yr hŵnn a oed yn lle arŵyd idaŵ, ac erchi y baŵp  
 or a ŵehenit y ŵrth y vydin, gyrchu yno. *gwehenit* *Pass of*

51. Ac or diŵed gŵedy sefyll paŵb yn erbyn y gilyd  
 onadunt y Brytanyeit or ne[i]ll parth ar Rufeinwyr or  
 parth arall, pan glyŵssant sein yr arŵydon, y vydin, yd  
 oed brenhin yr Yspæn aegedymdeith yny llywyaŵ, ymgy-  
 uarfot a orugant a bydin Araŵn uab Kynuarch a Chadŵr  
 iarll Kernyŵ, a hynny yn wychyr ac yn leŵ. Ac eissoes  
 ny allyssant nae thorri nae gŵasgaru. Ac ual yd oedynt  
 uelly yn ymlad yn dywal ac yn wychyr, nachaf Gereint  
 Garanŵys a Boso o Ryt Ychen ac eu bydin yn eu kyrchu  
 yn deissyfyt o rydec eu meirych, ac yn tyllu eu gelynyon

ac yn mynet drostunt, hyt pan gyfarfuant a bydin  
 brenhin Parth, yr honn a yttoed yn kyrchu yn erbyn  
 bydin Echel brenhin Denmarc a Leu vab Kynuarch  
 brenhin Lychlyn. Ac yna heb vn gohir o bop parth  
ymgymysgu a ŵnaethant y bydinoed, a mynet paŵb dros

20 y gilyd onadunt; ac aerua diruaŵr y meint o bop parth,  
 ar lleuein ar gorderi yn llanŵ yr aŵyr o son; ar rei  
 brathedic yn maedu y dayar ac ae penneu ac eu sodleu,  
 a thrŵy eu gŵaet yn terfynu eu buched. Ac eissoes y  
 kollet kyntaf a deuth yr Brytanyeit. Kanys Bedwyr a

25 las, a Chei a vrathŵyt yn agheuaŵl. Kanys pan  
 ymgyfarvu Vedwyr a brenhin Nidif, y brathŵyt a gleif  
 yny dygŵydŵys. A hyt tra yttoed Gei yn keissaŵ dial  
 Bedwyr, ym perued kat brenhin Nidif y brathŵyt ynteu.  
 Ac eissoes o defawt <sup>1</sup> marchaŵc da, ar ystondard a oed  
 30 yn y laŵ gan lad a gŵasgaru y elynyon, agori fford idaŵ  
 a oruc; ac ae vydin gantaŵ yn gyfan ef a doeth hyt ym

di-darbot to consider, care helt δ. parum cogitans  
x gar-aw to cry or call aloud

plith y wyr ehunan, pei nar gyfarffei ac ef vydin brenhin Libia. Honno a gasgarŷys y vydin ef yn hollaŷl, ac ynteu a ffoes a chorff Bedŷyr gantaŷ hyt y dan y dragon eureit.

p.p. of brinsau to  
break in pieces,  
shatter, destroy

5 Ac yna py veint o gŷynuan a oed gan wyr Normandi, pan welsant gorff eu tyŷyssaŷc yn vrŷoedic or saŷl welŷoed hynny? Py veint gŷynuan a ŷneynt wyr yr

p.p. of swelch  
ŷ. wound  
"

enkyt space of time  
in the midst of

Angiŷ ŷrth welet gŷelieu Kei eu tyŷyssaŷc, pei kaffeŷ neb enkyt y gŷynaŷ y gilyd gan y amdiffyn ehunan yg kyfrŷg y bydinoed gŷaetlyt? bloody

10 52. Ac ŷrth hynny Hirŷas nei Bedwyr yn gyffroedic o aroused

a wild boar  
gelynwyl hostile

agheu Bedwyr a gymerth a gyt ac ef trychant marchaŷc, a megys baed koet trŷy blith llaŷer o gŷn kyrchu drŷy blith y elynaŷl vydinoed yr lle y gŷelei arŷyd brenhin Nidif, heb didarbot py beth a damŷeinei idaŷ gan gaffel

through the  
midst of

15 dial y eŷythr ohonaŷ. Ac or diŷed ef a gafas dyuot hyt y lle yd oed vrenhin Nidif, ac ae kymertth o blith y

from among

to break in pieces,  
shatter

vydin, ac ae duc gantaŷ hyt y lle yd oed gorff Bedwyr, ac yno y dryllŷaŷ yn drylleu man. Ac o dyna goraŷ ar y gedymdeithon, a chan eu hannoc kyrchu eu

fine, small

20 gelynyon yn vynyth, megys gan atnewydu eu nerth, hyt pan yttoedynt eu gelynyon yn ofnaŷc ac eu callonoed yn crynu. Ac y gyt a hynny kyŷreinach y kyrchynt y

shrewd,  
cunning

to tremble, quake  
comp. of crenlawn  
bloodthirsty, cruel  
force, strength, effort

Brytanyeit oe dysc ynteu, a chreulonach y gŷneynt aerua. Ac ŷrth hynny grym ac angerd oe annoc ef a

vehemence,  
force  
to attach

25 gymerassant y Brytanyeit, a dŷyn ruthur y eu gelynyon; ac o bop parth udunt diruaŷr aerua a orucpŷyt. Y

Rufeŷnwyr yna y gyt ac aneiryf o vilyoed y syrthassant. Yna y llas Aliphant vrenhi[n] yr Yspaeŷ, a Misipia vrenhin Babilon, a Chŷintus Miluius, a Marius Lepidus

30 senedŷr. Ac o parth y Brytanyeit y syrthŷys Hodlyn iarll Ruthun, a Leodogar iarll Bolŷyn, a thri thyŷyssaŷc ereill o ynys Prydein, nyt amgen, Cursaleŷ o Gaer Geint, a Gŷallaŷc vab Lywynaŷc o Salsbri, a <sup>ate</sup> Vryen o Gaer Vadon. Ac ŷrth hynny gŷahanu a ŷnaethant y bydinoed



yd oedynt yn y llywyaŵ, ac enkil drachefyn hyt ar y *to retreat*  
 vydin yd oed Howel uab Emyr Lydaŵ a Gŵalchmei uab  
 Gŵyar yn y llywyaŵ. A phan welas y gŵyr hynny eu *to kindle fire, be*  
 kedymdeithon yn ffo, enynu o lit megys fflam yn enynu *inflamed*  
*a hearth*  
*bonfire*  
 godeith, gan alŵ y rei a oedynt ar ffo a chyrchu eu  
 gelynyon. A chymell ar ffo y rei a oedynt yn eu herlit  
 ŷynteu kyn no hynny gan eu bŵrŵ ac eu llad, a gŵneuthur  
 aerua heb orfoŷys onadunt, hyt pan deuthant hyt ar  
 vydin yr amheraŵdyr.

53. A phan welas yr amheraŵdyr yr aerua oe wyr, *10*  
 bryssyaŵ a oruc yn borth udunt. Ac yna y gŵnaethpŵyt  
 y Brytanyeit yn veirŵ; kanys Kynuarth tyŷysaŵc  
 Trigeri a dŵy vil y gyt ac ef a las yna. Ac yna y llas or  
 parth araŵ trywyr, nyt amgen, Rigyfarch a Bolconi a  
 Laŵin o Votlan. A pheibdynt tywyssogyon teyrnassoed, *15*  
 yr oessoed a delhynt gof hyt vraŵt ac a enrydedynt  
 eu molyant ac eu clot. Ac eissoes pŵy bynhac  
 a gyfarffei a Hoŵel neu a Gŵalchmei oc eu gelynyon,  
 ny diagei ae eneit gantaŵ. A gŵedy eu dyuot, megys  
 y dywespŵyt uchot, hyt ym plith bydin yr amheraŵdyr, *20*  
 yn damgylchedic oc eu gelynyon y syrthassant y tryŵyr  
 hynny. Ac ŵrth hynny Howel a Gŵalchmei, y rei ny  
 magyssit yn yr oessoed kyn noc ŷynt neb well noc ŷynt,  
 pan welsant yr aerua oc eu kedymdeithon, yn ŷychyr y  
 kyrchassant hŵnt ac yman, vn o bop parth yn gyffredin *25*  
 yn dyŵalhau ac yn blinaŵ bydin yr amheraŵdyr, ac  
 megys lluchait yn llad a gyfarffei ac ŷynt, ac yn annoc  
 eu kedymdeithon; a Gŵal[ch]mei yn damunaŵ oe holl  
 dihewyt ymgaffel a Les amheraŵdyr y gymell arnaŵ  
peth a digonei ym milŵryaeth. Ac nyt oed haŵd barnu *30*  
 pŵy oreu, ae Hoŵel ae Gŵalchmei.

54. Ac odyna Gŵalchmei a gafas y damunedic hynt.  
 Ac yn ŷychyr kyrchu yr amheraŵdyr a oruc, a gossot  
 arnaŵ. Ac eissoes Les, megys yd oed yn dechreu

a hearth  
bonfire

3 Pl. Past  
subj. of dala

surrounded

5 harass  
h. 3 bluched  
lightning  
inclination,  
desire

X

to weary, molest, harass

to get hold of,  
engage in battle

5 flourish, prosper blodeuab dewred y ieuentit ac yn vaŕr y ynni, nyt oed *vigour*  
 well dim gantaŕ ynteu noc ymgaffel ar ryŕ uarchaŕc  
 clotuaŕ hŕnnŕ, yr hŕnn a gymellei y wybot beth vei y  
 angerd ae deŕred. Ac ŕrth hynny diruaŕ leŕenyd a  
 5 gymerth yndaŕ ŕrth ymgaffel ohonaŕ a gŕr kynglotuo- *so renowned*  
 russet a Gŕalchmei. Ac *x to encounter, combat* ymerbynyeit yn galet a ŕnaeth *called lord, served*  
 pob vn ae gilid, megys na ŕelat rŕg deu vilŕr ymlad a  
 gyffelypit y hŕnnŕ. A phan yttoedynt ŕy yn neŕidyaŕ  
 kaledyon dyrnodeu, a phob vn yn llafuryaŕ agheu y  
 10 gilyd, nachaf y Rufeinwyr ynn ym<sup>b</sup>pentyryaŕ yn eukylch, *about/around them*  
 hyt pan vu reit y Walchmei a Howel ac eu bydinoed  
 enkilyaŕ hyt ar vydin Arthur, gan eu llad or Rufeinwyr  
 yn drut. *drud bold, arrogant, wicked*

55. A phan welas Arthur yr aerua yd oedit yn y  
 15 wneuthur oe wyr ef, tynu Caletvŕlch y gledyf goreu  
 a ŕnaeth, ac yn vchel dyŕedut val hynn: "Py achaŕs  
 y gedŕch chŕi y gŕreicolyon wyr hynn y genŕch? Nac  
 aet vn yn vyŕ onadunt, nac aet. Koffeŕch aŕch  
 deheuoed, y rei yn gyfrŕys yn y saŕl ymladeu kyn no  
 20 hynn a darestygassant dec teyrnas ar hugeint ŕrth vym  
 medyant. Koffeŕch aŕch hendadeu, y rei, pan oedynt  
 gadarnach gŕyr Rufein no hediŕ, ae gŕnaethant yn  
 drethaŕl udunt. Koffeŕch aŕch rydit, yr honn y mae yr  
 hanher gŕyr hynn yn keissaŕ y dŕyn y genŕch. Ac ŕrth  
 25 hynny nac aet vn yn vyŕ onadunt, nac aet." A chan  
 dywedut yr ymadrodyon hynny, kyrchu y elynyon ac eu  
 bŕrŕ dan y draet ac eu llad. A phŕy bynnac a gyfarffei  
 ac ef, o vn dyrnaŕt y lladei ac ef ae varch. Ac ŕrth  
 hynny paŕb a foynt racdaŕ, megys y foynt anieueileit rac  
 lleŕ creulaŕn, pan vei neŕyn maŕr arnaŕ ac ynteu yn *hunger*  
 keissaŕ bŕyt. A phŕy bynhac o damŕein a gyfarffei ac ef,  
 nys differei y arueu ef rac Caletvŕlch, hyt pan vei reit  
 idaŕ talu y eneit y gyt ae ŕaet. Deu urenhin oc eu *pay, give, farfeit*  
 drycdamŕein a gyfaruuant ac ef, Sertor brenhin Libia  
 mis fortune, ill-luck

*pl. of swarigawl*  
*womanish, cowardly*  
*cyfrwys* *trained, expert*

*Cowards*

*bloodthirsty, cruel*  
*by chance*  
*3 ss Past Sulej.*  
*diffyrd (rac)*  
*defend, protect (from)*

*both...and*

# THE STORY OF ARTHUR

187

a Pholites brenhin Bitinia. Ar deu hynny gŵedy llad eu penneu a anuones Arthur y Rufein. cut off

56. A gŵedy gŵelet or Brytanyeit eu brenhin yn ymlad uelly,<sup>1</sup> glêder ac ehofynder a gymerassant, a chan teŵhau eu bydinoed o vn vryt kyrchu y Rufeinwyr gan darparu mynet drostunt. Ac eissoes gŵrthŷnebu yn wychyr a oruc fearless ness, confidence, courage

y Rufeinwyr udunt, ac o dysc Les amheraŵdyr llafuryaŵ y talua aerua yr Brytanyeit. A chymeint uu yr ymlad yna o bop parth a chyt pei<sup>2</sup> yr aŵr honno y dechreuynt yr ymlad. Or neill parth yd oed yr arderchaŵc vrenhin Arthur yn llad y elynyon, ac yn annoc y wyr y sefyll yn ŵraŵl. Ac or parth arall yd oed Les amheraŵdyr yn annoc y Rufeinwyr ac yn eu dysgu ac yn eu moli. Ac ny orfoŷyssei ynteu yn llad ac yn bŵrŵ y elynyon ac yn kylchynu y vydinoed ehun. A phy elyn bynac a 15 gyfarffei ac ef, a gŵayŵ neu a chledyf y lladei. Ac uelly o bop parth y bydei Arthur yn gŵneuthur aerua.

Kanys gŵeithu y bydynt trechaf<sup>3</sup> y Brytanyeit, gŵeithu ereill y bydynt<sup>4</sup> trechaf<sup>3</sup> y Rufeinwyr. A phan yttoedynt hŷy<sup>5</sup> yn yr ymfust hŷnnŵ, heb wybod py diŵ y damŵeinei now -- again (give them sometimes) to whom 680 N. 2

y vudugolyaeth, nachaf Morud iarll Caer Loyŵ yn dyuot ar llæg a dyŵedassam ni y hadaŵ uchot yg gŵersyll, ac yn deissyfyt<sup>6</sup> yn kyrchu eu gelynyon yn dirybud or tu yn eu<sup>7</sup> hol ac yn mynet drostunt, gan eu gŵasgaru a gŵneuthur aerua diruaŵr y meint. Ac yna y syrthassant<sup>8</sup> 25 llaber o vilyoed or Rufeinwyr. Ac yna y dygŷydŵys Les amheraŵdyr yn vrathedic gan leif neb vn, ac y bu varŵ. Ac yna, kyt bei drŷy diruaŵr lafur, y Brytanyeit a gaŵssant y maes.<sup>9</sup> = won the day (maes = open field, battle-field)

57. Ac yna y gŵasgarassant<sup>1</sup> y Rufeinwyr<sup>2</sup> yr diffeithŵch ac yr coedyd, ac ofyn yn eu kymell. Ereill yr dinassoed a waste, wilderness pl. of dinas city, citadel

(Ch. 56). 1 y velly? the initial letters are illegible, 2 chyn bei, 3 drechaf, 4 bydei, 5 ŷy, 6 deissyfydic, 7 y, 8 syrthysant, 9 ar goruot add.  
(Ch. 57). 1 gvassaryssant, 2 rei add.

intending to break through them

x

you must afflict, struggle long legion sudden unexpected

trans. & intrins. dispersed, scattered

ar kestyl ac yr lleod kadarn y ffyont; ar Brytanyeit oc eu hol yn<sup>3</sup> eu hymlit, ac o druanaf aerua<sup>4</sup> yn eu llad ac yn eu dala ac yn eu hyspeila<sup>6</sup>. Ac uelly megys y rodynt

? as it were

5 r<sup>6</sup>yma<sup>6</sup> ac y eu karcharu, y geissa<sup>6</sup> ystyn<sup>u</sup> ychydic y<sup>6</sup> eu hoedel. A hynny<sup>7</sup> o ja<sup>6</sup>n vra<sup>6</sup>t<sup>8</sup> Du<sup>6</sup>. Kanys eu

To extend, prolong

hendadeu cynteu kyn no hynny yn andylydedus a gnathoedynt<sup>9</sup> y Brytanyeit yn dretha<sup>6</sup>l udunt; ar

Brytanyeit yna yn nackau udunt y dreth yd oedynt yn 10 andylydedus yn y cheissa<sup>6</sup> gantunt.<sup>10</sup>

treth f. a tribute

58. A g<sup>6</sup>edy caffel o Arthur y vudugolyaeth, ef a erchis g<sup>6</sup>ahanu ar neilltu<sup>1</sup> kalaned y wyrda ef y <sup>6</sup>rth y elyna<sup>6</sup>l galaned ac eu ky<sup>6</sup>beirya<sup>6</sup> o vrenhina<sup>6</sup>l defa<sup>6</sup>g, ac

15 ac yno eu cladu yn enrydedus. Ac yna y ducp<sup>6</sup>yt corff Bedwyr hyt y dinas ehun yn Normandi gan dirua<sup>6</sup>r g<sup>6</sup>ynuan y<sup>3</sup> gan y Normanyeit. Ac yno y my<sup>6</sup>n myn<sup>6</sup>ent

established, founded

ar de<sup>6</sup>heu y dinas y clad<sup>6</sup>yt yn enrydedus gyr<sup>4</sup> lla<sup>6</sup> y mur.

f. graveyard well, rampart

Kei a ducp<sup>6</sup>yt yn urathedic hyt yg Kam, y kastell<sup>5</sup> a

20 gnathoed<sup>6</sup> ehun. Ac yno ny bu bell g<sup>6</sup>edy hynny yny vu<sup>7</sup> uar<sup>6</sup> Kei<sup>8</sup> or brath h<sup>6</sup>onn<sup>6</sup>. Ac yn y fforest a oed yn

agos yno y my<sup>6</sup>n manachla<sup>6</sup>c ermitwyr or enryded a dyl<sup>6</sup>yei iarll yr Angi<sup>6</sup> y clad<sup>6</sup>yt. Hodlyn ty<sup>6</sup>yssa<sup>6</sup>c a

ducp<sup>6</sup>yt hyt y<sup>9</sup> dinas ehun, yr h<sup>6</sup>n a el<sup>6</sup>bir y Tyruan, ac

25 yno y clad<sup>6</sup>yt. Y g<sup>6</sup>yrda ereill a erchis Arthur eu d<sup>6</sup>yn yr manachlogoed nessaf udunt ar hyt y g<sup>6</sup>latoed.<sup>10</sup> Ac

yna<sup>11</sup> yd erchis ef y <sup>6</sup>yr y wlat honno cladu y elynyon,<sup>12</sup> ac anuon corff Les amhera<sup>6</sup>dyr hyt yn sened Rufein. Ac

erchi menegi udunt na dyllynt h<sup>6</sup>y<sup>13 14</sup> teyrnget o ynys 30 Prydein amgen no h<sup>6</sup>onn<sup>6</sup>. Ac yno y bu Arthur y gayaf

(Ch. 57). 3 oc eu holl ynni yn, 4 aghen, 5 vvyaff, 6 om., 7 ac uelly, 8 varn, 9 wnaethoedynt, 10 yn y cheissav yn andylydedus y ganthunt

(Ch. 58). 1 gvahanu a neilltua, 2 yr, 3 om., 4 ger, 5 hyt—kastell: hyt y castell, 6 wnaethoed, 7 yny vu: y bu, 8 om., 9 yn y, 10 gvladoed, 11 odyna, 12 gelynyon, 13 vy, 14 tremygu y brytanyeit nac erchi add.

to bind, send

to refuse (naccain)

to lay out

south

cf Pedaw. Kana xxvi, xxvii

(regeu en yre furburwaram, violato jure receptationis,  
eidem nefanda Venere, copulatam esse)

## THE STORY OF ARTHUR

189

hónnó yn goresgyn y dinassoed y Mórgóin.<sup>15</sup> A phan  
yttoed yr haf yn dechreu dyuot, ac Arthur yn ysgyn  
mynyd Mynheu<sup>16</sup> órth vynet parth a Rufein, nachaf  
genadeu o ynys Prydein yn menegi y Arthur ry daruot<sup>17</sup>  
y Vedraót y nei, uab y chóaer, goresgyn<sup>18</sup> ynys Prydein a 5  
góisgaó<sup>19</sup> coron y teyrnas am y pen<sup>20</sup> ehun<sup>21</sup> dróy  
greulonder a brat, a thynu<sup>22</sup> Góenhóyfar vrenhines oe  
rieingadeir a ry gysgu<sup>23</sup> genti, gan lygru kyfreith *violate*  
dóywaól y neithoreu.<sup>24</sup> *pl. of neithawr a wedding feast*

queen's  
throne

accused

59. A góedy menegi hynny y Arthur, yn y lle peidyaó<sup>1</sup> 10  
a oruc ae darpar am vynet y Rufein, ac ymchoelut parth  
ac ynys Prydein, a brenhined yr ynyssed y gyt ac ef.  
A gellóg Howel uab<sup>2</sup> Emyr Lydaó a llu gantaó y  
tagnefedu ac y hedychu y góladoed.<sup>3</sup> Kany<sup>4</sup> yr  
yscymunedickaf<sup>4</sup> vradór gan Vedraót a anuonassei 15  
Cheldric<sup>5</sup> tyóysaó y Saeson hyt yn Germania y gynullaó  
y llu móyaf a gallei yn borth idaó. A rodi udunt a oruc o  
Humyr hyt yn Yscotlont, ac yn achóanec kymeint ac a  
uuassei y<sup>6</sup> Hors a Heingyst<sup>7</sup> kyn no hynny yg Kent.<sup>8</sup> Ac  
óρθ hynny y deuth Cheldric ac óyth cant<sup>9</sup> llog yn llaón 20  
o wyr aruaó gantaó<sup>10</sup> o baganyeit,<sup>11</sup> a górhau y Vedraót  
ac ufudhau megys y vrenhin. Ac neur daroed idaó  
gedymdeithockau ataó yr Yscottyeit ar Ffichteit, a phaóó  
or a óypei ef idaó gassau y ewythyr,<sup>12</sup> hyt pan yttoedynt  
oíl petwar<sup>13</sup> ugein mil róg Cristonogyon a phaganyeit. 25

? in addition

to obey  
to accompany  
social with  
past subj.

& pay homage

& land

60. Ac a hynny o nifer gantaó y deuth Medraót<sup>1</sup> hyt yn  
aber Temys, y lle yd oedynt llogeu Arthur yn disgynnu.  
A góedy dechreu ymlad, ef a<sup>2</sup> wnaeth aerua diruaó

(Ch. 58). 15 gverescyn dinassoed bórgóyn, 16 mynheu, 17 darvot?  
18 gverescyn, 19 arwisgaó? 20 ben, 21 om., 22 thynhu, 23 chysgu, ry om.  
24 neithorven

(Ch. 59). 1 peidaó, 2 ac eilvg hvel m., 3 gvledi, 4 yscymunediccaf.  
5 chledric, 6 om., 7 hengist, 8 ygkeint, 9 can, 10 om., 11 paganyeit,  
12 The word before hyt is (a)rthur; between pav(b) and this there is a  
hole in the MS., 13 The initial letters seem to be deu, what follows is  
illegible

(Ch. 60). 1 om.

X { v. Gloss. 1 can : "that most accused  
} traitor of a Medrawd"

cf. 190, 10  
192, 2, 5

onadunt yn dyuot yr tir. Kanys yna y dygŷydassant Araŷn uab Kynuarch, brenhin Yscotlont, a Gŷalchme[i]<sup>3</sup> uab<sup>4</sup> Gŷyar. Ac yn ol Araŷn y deuth Owein vab<sup>4</sup> Vryen yn vrenhin yn Reget, y gŷr gŷedy hynny a vu clotuaŷr

pl. 78 Cynben  
contention, strife,  
contest

5 yn llaŷer o gynhenneu. Ac or diwed, kyt<sup>5</sup> bei drŷy diruaŷr lafur a thrŷy eu llad,<sup>6</sup> Arthur ae lu a gafas y tir. A chan talu yr aerua ŷynt a gymellasant Vedraŷt<sup>7</sup> ae lu ar ffo. A chyn bei mwy eiryf llu Medraŷt no llu Arthur,

skilful, cunning  
necessary

cf. 189, 15;  
192, 2, 5

eisoes kywreinach a doethach yd ymledynt o beunydyabl ymladeu.<sup>8</sup> Ac ŷrth hynny y bu dir yr anudonaŷl<sup>9</sup> gan Vedraŷt gymryt y ffo. Ar nos honno, gŷedy ymgynullaŷ y wascaredic<sup>10</sup> lu y gyt, yd aeth hyt yg Kaer Wynt. A gŷedy clybot o Wenhŷyuar<sup>11</sup> hynny, diobeithaŷ a oruc, a mynet o Gaer Efraŷc hyt yg Kaer<sup>12</sup> Lion ar Wysc.

daily

perjured,  
treacherous,  
wicked  
Winchester

15 Ac<sup>13</sup> y myŷn manachlaŷc gŷraged a<sup>14</sup> oed yno gŷisgaŷ yr abit ymdanei ac adaŷ cadŷ y diŷeirdeb yn eu plith o hynny allan. Ar abit honno a vu ymdanei hyt agheu.

a habit monastic  
dress

chastity

61. Ac odyndy Arthur a gymerth llit maŷr yndaŷ am golli<sup>1</sup> ohonaŷ y saŷl vilioed hynny, a pheri cladu y wyr.

20 Ar trydyd dyd kyrchu Caer Wynt a oruc ac yn diannot y chylchynu. Ac yr hynny ny pheidŷs Medraŷt ar hynn a dechreuassei, namyn, gan annoc y wyr, eu gossot yn vydinoed a mynet allan or dinas y ymlad ac Arthur y ewythyr. A gŷedy dechreu ymlad, aerua vaŷr o pob

25 parth a wnaethant. Ac eisoes mŷyaf vu yr aerua o wyr Medraŷt; ac yn dybryt kymell arnaŷ adaŷ y maes. Ac ny hanbŷyllŷys<sup>2</sup> Medraŷt yna gohir ŷrth gladu y ladedigyon, namyn ffo a oruc parth a Chernyŷ.

& delay, delay  
respites

ugly, foul, base  
han-buryllaw  
to consider, remember

pryderus anxious

62. Ac ŷrth hynny Arthur, yn bryderus ac yn lliidiaŷc

(Ch. 60). 2 aeth ac a add., 3 gŷalchmei, 4 mab, 5 only ky is legible, 6 a thrŷy eu llad om., 7 medraŷt, 8 o beunydyabl ymladeu: wyr arthur, kanys kyfrŷs oedynt o beunydyabl ymlad, 9 kelwydaŷc add., 10 gŷasgaredigyon, 11 vrenhines add., 12 ygkaer, 13 yno add., 14 om.

(Ch. 61). 1 rygolli, 2 handenyŷs



traitor a achawb dianc y tŷyllŵr<sup>1</sup> y gantaŵ, yn y lle<sup>2</sup> ae hymlynŵys  
 hyt y wlat honno hyt ar lan Kamlan, y lle yd oed  
 Vedraŵt yn y aros.<sup>3</sup> Ac ŵrth hynny megys yd oed  
 Vedraŵt gleŵaf a gŷychraf yn cyrchu, yn y lle gossot y  
 varchogyon yn vydinoed a oruc. Kanys gŵell oed 5  
 gantaŵ y lad neu ynteu a orffei, no ffo yn hŷy no hynny.  
 Kanys yd oed ettwa gantaŵ o eiryf trugein mil. Ac o  
 hynny y gŷnaeth ef whech<sup>4</sup> bydin, a whech<sup>5</sup> gŷyr a  
 thrugeint a chwe<sup>6</sup> chant a chwe<sup>6</sup> mil ym pob bydin o wyr  
 aruaŵc. Ac or rei nyt aed<sup>7</sup> yn y chwech<sup>4</sup> bydin ef a 10  
 wnaeth bydin idaŵ ehun, a rodi llywodron y bop vn or  
 rei ereill oll.<sup>8</sup> A dyscu paŵb onadunt ac eu hannoc y  
 ymlad a oruc, gan adaŵ udunt enryded a chyfoeth, os ef  
 a orffei. Ac or parth arall Arthur a ossodes y wyr<sup>9</sup>  
 ynteu drŷy naŵ bydin; a gorchymyn y baŵp onadunt<sup>10</sup> 15  
 ac annoc llad y lladron tŷyllwyr yskymyn,<sup>11</sup> a dathoedynt  
 o wladoed ereill o dysc y bratŵr<sup>12</sup> y geissaŵ y digyfoethi  
 ynteu. "Ar bobyl a ŵelŵch<sup>13</sup> racko," heb Arthur, "a<sup>14</sup>  
 gynullŵyt o wlatoed<sup>15</sup> amryfaelon, ac aghyfyeth, ynt a  
 llec ag aghyfrŷys ar ymlad. Ac ny allant gŵrthŷynebu  
 yŵch, kanys kyfrŷys yŵch chŷi."<sup>16</sup> Ac velly paŵb onadunt  
 yn annoc y wyr or parth arall.<sup>17</sup> Ac yn deissyfyt ym-  
 gyfaruot a ŵnaeth y bydinoed yghyt,<sup>18</sup> a dechreu ymlad a  
 newidyaŵ dynodeu yn vynyeh. A chymeint vu yr  
 aerua yna o bop parth ac megys yd oed gŷynfan<sup>19</sup> y rei 25  
 meirŷ yn kyffroi y rei byŵ ar lit ac ymlad, ac megys yd  
 oed blin a llafuryus<sup>20</sup> y yscriuenu nae datkanu. Kanys  
 o bop parth y brethynt ac y brethit ŷynteu; ŷynt a ledynt  
 ac ŷynteu a ledit.

63. Ac or diwed gŷedy treulaŵ llaber or dyd yn y mod

(Ch. 62). 1 y mynychet hŷonnŵ add., 2 ef add., 3 arhos, 4 whech, 5 ŵhe, 6 whe, 7 aeth, 8 rodi llywodraeth y pop bydin oll, 9 lu, 10 ohonunt, 11 ysgymun, 12 bratŵr, 13 welhŷchi, 14 ar, 15 wladoed, 16 yŵchi, 17 or parth arall: o pop parth, 18 ygyt, 19 kŷynuan, 20 llafurus

5  
3 sf. Past. Subj.  
of son-jod to  
overcome, conquer

10  
pl. of llywoddyr a  
leader, commander

15  
accused  
to dispossess, deprive  
of territory

20  
untrained,  
unskilled  
sudden, unexpected

25  
a lament,  
wailing

Superf. Ind. Pass.

to spend, consume,  
wear.

*gyrchys stant, resolute, bold*  
*girad lamentable, pitious, terrible*  
*creu-lawn bloodthirsty, cruel*

192

# THE STORY OF ARTHUR

*cf 189, 15;*  
*190, 11*  
" 5 yr yscymunedickaf<sup>6</sup> vradŵr hŷnnŵ gan Vedraŵt, a llawer o vilioed y gyt ac ef. Ac eissoes yr hynny ny ffoyssant<sup>7</sup> y rei ereill, namyn ymgynullaŵ y gyt<sup>8</sup> or maes oll, ac yn herŵyd eu gleŵder keissaŵ ymgynhal a gŵrthŵynebu y Arthur. Ac ŵrth hynny gŵychraf a girattaf<sup>9</sup> a  
*to flock together to resist*  
10 chreulonaf aerua a vu y rydunt yna o bop parth, ac eu bydinoed yn syrthaŵ. Ac yna o bop<sup>10</sup> parth y<sup>10</sup> Vedraŵt y syrthassant<sup>11</sup> Cheldric<sup>12</sup> ac Elafyŵs,<sup>13</sup> Egberinc<sup>10</sup> brenhin or Saeson; or Gŵydyl Gilapadric,<sup>14</sup> Gillamŵri, Gillasel, Gillamor.<sup>15</sup> Yr Yscotteit ar Ffichteit ac ŵynt ac eu  
*well-nigh, almost* 15 harglŵydi oll hayach a las. Ac o bleit<sup>16</sup> Arthur y llas Osbrinc brenhin Lychlyn, Echel brenhin Denmarc,<sup>17</sup> Kadŵr Lemenic<sup>18</sup> iarll Kernyŵ, Kasŵallaŵn, a llawer o vililioed<sup>19</sup> y gyt ac ŵnteu,<sup>20</sup> rŵg y Brytanyeit a chenedloed ereill a ducsynt y gyt ac ŵynt. Ac ynteu yr arderchaŵc  
*leg. vilioed.* 20 vrenhin Arthur a vrathŵyt yn agheuaŵl, ac a ducpŵyt o dyna hyt yn ynys Avallach y iachau y welieu. Coron  
*Avallach* y<sup>21</sup> teyrnas o ynys Prydein a gymynnŵys ynteu y Gustenin<sup>22</sup> vab Kadŵr iarll Kernyŵ y gar. Dŵy vlyned a deugeint<sup>23</sup> a phump kant gŵedy dyfot Crist yg knaŵt  
*542 A.D.* 25 dyn oed hynny yna. *flesh*

x

(Ch. 63). 1 gŵydyat, 2 yndiane, 3 cledyfeu, 4 tristaf, 5 om., 6 ysgymunedicaf, 7 foassant, 8 yghyt, 9 girattaf, 10 om., 11 syrthyssant, 12 chledric, 13 elefyŵs, 14 gillapadric, 15 gillamor gillasel gillamŵri, 16 pleit, 17 denmarc, 18 llymenic, 19 vilyoed, 20 ŵynt, 21 om., 22 gustenhin, 23 deu vgeint

*cymyn to entrust*



\* gwyb presence ; yny vyd, hyny vyd, lo! behold!  
thereupon

[From Kulhwach and Olwen ; The Mabinogion, I, p. 210]  
Jones & Jones, p. 121-136 -232.

### III. THE HUNTING OF TWRCH TRWYTH.

= hyd uehen  
till evening

said they  
amcawd said  
he ; § 133 (6)

guest

= o (v § 141)

Pr. Ind.  
acc. of adaw  
leave, allow

why § 229  
why dost thou  
call) why

break a  
rinking horn

1. Kerdet a orugant o y dýd hōnnō educher. Hýnŷ<sup>1</sup> vŷd  
kaer uae<sup>2</sup> gŷmrōt a welasit,<sup>3</sup> uōyha<sup>4</sup> ar keyrŷd y bŷt<sup>4</sup>. Nachaf  
gōr<sup>5</sup> du mōy<sup>6</sup> no thrŷōy<sup>7</sup> y bŷt hōnn a welant<sup>8</sup> ŷn dŷuot or  
gaer. Amkeudant<sup>9</sup> ōrthaō : "Pan doŷ ti,<sup>10</sup> ōr?" "Or gaer a  
welōch chōi ŷna."<sup>11</sup> "Pieu y gaer?"<sup>12</sup> "Meredic a wŷr  
ŷōchi.<sup>13</sup> Nŷt oes ŷn y bŷt nŷ ŷŷppo pieu y gaer honn.  
Wrnach Gaōr pieu."<sup>14</sup> "Pŷ uoes ŷssŷd y ōsp a phellenhic y  
diskŷnnu ŷn y gaer honn?" "Ha vnben, Duō ach notho!<sup>15</sup>  
Nŷ dōdŷō<sup>16</sup> neb gŷestei eiroet oheni<sup>17</sup> ae uŷō<sup>18</sup> ganthaō.<sup>19</sup>  
Nŷ edir neb idi namyn a dŷccōŷ<sup>20</sup> y gerd."<sup>21</sup>

2. Kŷrchu y porth a orugant. Amkaōd<sup>1</sup> Gōrhŷr Gual-  
staōt Ieithoet: "A oes porthaōr?"<sup>2</sup> "Oes. A titheu<sup>3</sup> nŷ bo  
teu dŷ penn,<sup>4</sup> pŷr<sup>5</sup> y kŷuerchŷ dŷ?" "Agor y porth!"  
"Nac agoraf." "Pōŷstŷr<sup>6</sup> nas agorŷ ti?" "Kŷllell a edŷō  
ŷm mōŷt<sup>7</sup> a llŷnn y mual,<sup>8</sup> ac amsathŷr ŷn neuad Vrnach.<sup>9</sup>  
Namŷn y gerdaōr a dŷccōŷ<sup>10</sup> y gerd nŷt agorir."<sup>11</sup> Amkaōd  
Kei:<sup>12</sup> "ŷ porthaōr, y mae kerd genhŷf i." "Pa gerd ŷssŷd  
genhŷt ti?" "ŷslipanōr cledŷueu goreu ŷn y bŷt ŷŷf ui."  
"Mi a af y dŷwedut hŷnnŷ y Vrnach<sup>13</sup> Gaōr, ac a dŷgaf  
atteb ŷt."

cymrud mortar

5 irrational, foolish

stranger = znn

10

may not think  
lead his theme.

offer to report, ask

Prat. & Perf. of  
myriad

15 a treadship, moving  
fleet ("thronging")

burnishes

20

VARIANTS H=RED BOOK OF HERGEST, P=PENIARTH MS. IV.

(Ch. 1). 1 yny H, 2 uaōr H, 3 welynt H, 4 vōyha or byt H, 5 ōr  
H, 6 oed add. H, 7 ŷn add. H, 8 a welant om. H, 9 ac y dŷwedassant  
ŷnteu H, 10 deuŷ di H. 11 racco H, 12 heb ŷynt add. H, 13 ŷōch chōi H,  
14 bien H, 15 nodho H, 16 denth H, 17 eirŷoet ohonei H, 18 vywyt H,  
19 gantaō H, 20 dycko H, 21 gantaō add. H.

(Ch. 2). 1 heb y H, 2 borthaōr H, 3 thithen H, 4 dŷ dauaōt yth benn  
H, 5 py rac H, 6 Pŷ ystyr H, 7 bōyt H, 8 ŷm bual H, 9 ōrnach gaōr H,  
10 dycko H, 11 ŷma heno bellach add. H, 12 Heb y kei ŷna H,  
13 ōrnach H

agalen f. a whetstone      cleis a stripe      maeu cleis marble  
gwynseid having a white haft      gwynseid having a dark-coloured  
 haft

# 194 THE HUNTING OF TWRCH TRWYTH

3. Dýuot a oruc y porthaŵr y mýŵn. Dýwaŵt<sup>1</sup> Wrnach  
 Gaŵr:<sup>2</sup> "Whedleu<sup>3</sup> porth genhýt?"<sup>4</sup> "Yssýdýnt genhýf.  
 Kýweithýd ýssýd yn drŵs y porth, ac<sup>5</sup> a uýnnýnt dýuot y  
 mýŵn." "A ouýnneist ti<sup>6</sup> a oed gerd ganthunt?"<sup>7</sup> "Gouýnneis.<sup>8</sup>

= S (a company)

5 Ac vn onadunt a dýwaŵt gallel<sup>9</sup> ýslipanu cledýueu."<sup>10</sup> "Oed<sup>11</sup>  
 reit y mi<sup>12</sup> ŵrth hŵnnŵ. Ys guers ýd ŵýf yn keissaŵ a olchei  
 výt cledýf; nýs rýgeueis.<sup>13</sup> Gat hŵnnŵ y mýŵn, cans oed<sup>14</sup>  
 gerd ganthaŵ."

golchi to wash, polish

† will. Mab.

4. Dýuot<sup>1</sup> y porthaŵr ac agori y porth. A dýuot Kei y  
 10 mýŵn ehun. A chýuarch guell a oruc ef y Wrnach Gaŵr.  
 Kadeir a dodet y danaŵ.<sup>2</sup> Dýwaŵt<sup>3</sup> Wrnach<sup>4</sup>: "Ha ŵr, ae  
 gŵir a dýwedir arnat gallel<sup>5</sup> ýslipanu cledýueu?" "Mi ae  
 digonaf."<sup>6</sup> Dýdŵyn<sup>7</sup> y cledýf attaŵ<sup>8</sup> a orucpŵýt.<sup>9</sup> Kýmryt  
 agalen gleis a oruc Kei y dan y geffeil. "Pŵy well genhýt  
 15 arnaŵ,<sup>10</sup> ae guýnseit ae grŵmseit?" "Yr hŵnn a uo da  
 genhýt ti, malpei teu uei, gŵna arnaŵ." Glanhau a oruc  
 hanher y lleill gýllell idaŵ, ae rodi yn y laŵ a oruc. "A  
 reinc dý uod di hýnný?" "Oed well genhýf noc ýssýd ým  
 gŵlat, bei oll ýt uei<sup>11</sup> val hýnn. Dýhed a beth bot gŵr kýstal  
 20 a thi heb gedýmdeith." "Oia ŵrda, mae<sup>12</sup> imi gedýmdeith  
 kýny dýgo[n]ho<sup>13</sup> y gerd honn." "Pwý ýŵ hŵnnŵ?" "Aet  
 y porthaŵr allan, a mi a dýwedaf ar arŵydon idaŵ.<sup>14</sup> Penn y  
 wayŵ a daŵ y ar y baladýr. Ac ýssef a dýgýrch y guaet y ar  
 y guýnt ac a diskýn ar y baladýr."<sup>15</sup> Agori y porth a  
 25 wnaethpŵýt, a dýuot Bedwýr y mýŵn. Dýwaŵt<sup>16</sup> Kei:  
 "Budugaŵl ýŵ Bedwýr, kýn ný digonho<sup>17</sup> y gerd hon."

dydwyn to bring

gesseil  
 Mod. cesail

as if

cesseil

"one side  
 of the head"

Archives  
 1, 506.

dygýrch  
 made for  
 upon, dra

rengi bod to  
 satisfy, please; pnes.3  
 Ped. 944, 2. rewe

victorious, gifted

X | "Cei took a striped whetstone from under his arm"

(Ch. 3). 1 ac y dywaŵt H, 2 ŵrthaŵ H, 3 chwedleu H, 4 y gennynt H,  
 in P, y has been added over the line, 5 om. H, 6 ouynneist di H,  
 7 gantunt hŵy H, 8 heb ef add. H, 9 gŵybot H, 10 ohonaŵ yn da add. H,  
 11 as oed H, 12 ynni H, 13 ac nys keueis H, 14 kan oes H

(Ch. 4). 1 a oruc H, 2 geyr bron gŵrnach add. H, 3 ac y dywaŵt H,  
 4 ŵrthaŵ add. H, 5 arnat ti y gŵdost H, 6 Mi a ŵnn hynn yn da heb y kei H,  
 7 Dŵyn H, 8 ŵrnach H, 9 wnaethpŵýt attaŵ H, 10 a gouyn or deu pŵy oed  
 oreu gantaŵ H, 11 pei bei oll ual H, 12 y mae ymi H, 13 dycko H,  
 14 idaŵ y arwydon H, 15 eilweith add. H, 16 ac y dywaŵt H, 17 wyppo H

247 h. 7. gwybed

dyhed discordant, strange? filthy, a pity? dyhed a beth  
 "a chance"  
 digawn to be able, effect, do, accomplish; pr. ind. 1 sp. digonaf

# THE HUNTING OF TWRCH TRWYTH 195

5. A<sup>1</sup> dadleu maŵr a uu ar y gŵyr hynnŷ allan. Dŷuot<sup>2</sup> Kei a Bedwŷr y mŷŷn. A guas ieuanc a doeth gŷt<sup>3</sup> ac ȳnt y mŷŷn, vn mab Custennhin heussaŵr. Sef a ȳnaeth ef ae gedŷmdeithon a glŷn<sup>4</sup> ȳrthaŵ mal nat oed vȳ<sup>5</sup> no dim ganthunt<sup>6</sup>: mŷnet<sup>6</sup> dros y teir catlŷs a wnaethant<sup>7</sup> hŷt pan dŷuuant<sup>8</sup> y mŷŷn y gaer. Amkeudant<sup>9</sup> y gedŷmdeithon ȳrth vab Custennhin: "Goreu dŷn yȳ."<sup>10</sup> O<sup>11</sup> hynnŷ allan y gelwit Goreu mab Custennhin. Guascaru a orugant ȳ y eu lletŷeu, mal y keffŷnt llad eu lletŷŷwŷr heb ȳȳbot ŷr caŵr.

6. Y cledŷf a daruu y ȳrteith. Ae rodi a oruc Kei yn llaȳ 10 Wnach Kaŵr,<sup>1</sup> y malphei y edrŷch a ranghei y uod idaȳ y weith.<sup>2</sup> Dŷŷwaȳt<sup>3</sup> y kaŵr: "Da yȳ y gueith, a ranc bod yȳ genhŷf." Amkaȳd<sup>4</sup> Kei: "Dŷ wein<sup>5</sup> a lŷgrȳŷs dŷ gledŷf. Dŷro di imi y diot y kelleftrenneu<sup>6</sup> oheni,<sup>7</sup> a chaffȳŷf inhȳu gȳneuthur rei newȳd<sup>8</sup> idaȳ." A chŷmrŷt y wein ohonaȳ, ar cledŷf<sup>9</sup> yn y llaȳ arall. Dŷuot<sup>10</sup> ohonaȳ vch pen y kaŵr, malphei<sup>11</sup> y cledŷf a dottei yn y wein. Y ȳssot a oruc ŷm phen<sup>12</sup> y kaŵr, a llad y penn y ergŷt y arnaȳ. Diffeithaȳ y gaer, a dȳŷn a vŷnnassant o tŷŷsseu.<sup>13</sup> Yȳ kŷuenȳ ŷr vn dŷd ŷm phen<sup>14</sup> y vlȳdŷn y deuthant<sup>15</sup> y lys Arthur, a 20 chledŷf Wnach Gaŵr gantunt.

7. Dywedut a ȳnaethant y Arthur y ual y daruu udunt. Arthur a dywaȳt: "Pa beth yssŷd iaȳnaf y geissaȳ gŷntaf or annoetheu hynny?" "Iaȳnaf yȳ," heb ȳynteu, "keissaȳ Mabon uab Modron. Ac nyt kaffel arnaȳ nes kaffel Eidoel 25 uab Aer y gar yn gŷntaf." Kyuodi a oruc Arthur a milwŷr ynŷ Prydein gantaȳ y geissaȳ Eidoel. A dyuot a orugant hyt yn rac Kaer Glini, yn y lle yd oed Eidoel yg

(Ch. 5). 1 om. H, 2 gan y gŵyr a oed allan am dyuot Bedwŷr a Chei H, 3 A dyuot gȳas ieuanc oed H, 4 yg glŷn H, 5 mal—ganthunt om. H, 6 dyuot H, 7 a wnaethant om. H, 8 yttoed H, 9 Y dywedassant H, 10 ti a orugost hynn goreu dŷn ȳt H, 11 Ae o H

(Ch. 6). 1 gaŵr H, 2 gȳeith H, 3 ac y dywaȳt H, 4 Y dywaȳt H, 5 wein di H, 6 kŷlleftbrenneu H, 7 ohonei H, 8 ac y wneuthur ereill o newȳd H, 9 chedŷf P, 10 a dyuot H, 11 mal pei H, 12 ynteu ŷm penn H, 13 or da ar tŷŷsseu H, 14 penn H, 15 P ends

gave to  
dress, mend,  
tidy, a  
dressing

gave to  
scabbard  
died, to take  
of, dress, or  
to act

at a  
blow

a precious  
thing

car hennman

landman  
"as though it were  
nothing out of the way"  
5 cad - lys.  
fortified court,  
"bailey"

3 edg. past. subj.  
of rangi bod  
begin to corrupt, was  
spoil, violate  
"let me  
make" c. 11 a 11

to lay waste  
voc. mut.

"marvels"

tarren a plot of uncultivated land

x | "without thee too seeking to do me harm"

## 196 THE HUNTING OF TWRCH TRWYTH

karchar. Seuyll a oruc Glini ar vann y gaer; ac y dywaot: "Arthur, py holy di y mi, pryt nam gedy yn y tarren honn, nyt da im yndi, ac nyt digrif, nyt gŵenith, nyt keirch im, kyn ny cheissych ditheu wneuthur cam im?"

5 Arthur a dywaot: "Nyt yr drŵc itti y deuthum i yma, namyn y geissaŵ y karcharaŵr yssyd gennyt." "Mi a rodaf

y carcharaŵr itti, ac ny darparysswn y rodi y neb. Ac y gyf a hynny vy nerth am porth a geffy di." Y gŵyr a dywaot ŵrth Arthur: "Arglŷd, dos di adref. Ny elly

10 di uynet ath lu y geissaŵ peth mor uan ar rei hynn." Arthur a dywaot: "Gŵrhyr Gŵalstaot Ieithoed, itti y mae iaŵn

mynet yr neges honn. Yr holl ieithoed yssyd gennyt, a chyfyeith ŷt ar rei or adar ar anniueileit. Eidoel, itti y mae iaŵn mynet y geissaŵ dy geuynderŵ yŵ gyf am gŵyr i. Kei

15 a Bedwyr, gobeith yŵ gennyf y neges yd eloch ymdanei y chaffel. Eŵch im yr neges honn."

8. Kerdet a orugant racdunt hyt att uŵyalch Gilgŵri. Gouyn a oruc Gŵrhyr idi: "Yr Duŵ, a ŵdost ti dim y ŵrth Uabon uab Modron, a ducpŷt yn teirnoŵsic ody rŵng y vam

20 ar paret?" Y uŵyalch a dywaot: "Pan deuthum i yma gyntaf, eington gof a oed yma, a minneu ederyn ieuanc oedŵn. Ny wnaethpŷt gŵeith arnei, namyn tra uu vyg geluin arnei bob ucher. Hediŵ nyt oes kymmeint kneuen

ohonei heb dreulaŵ. Dial Duŵ arnaf, o chigleu i dim y ŵrth 25 y gŵr a ovynnŵch chŵi. Peth yssyd iaŵn hagen a dylyet y mi y wneuthur y gennadeu Arthur, mi ae gŵnaf. Kenedlaeth vileit yssyd gynt rithŵys Duŵ no mi; mi a af yn gyuarwyd ragoch yno."

9. Dyuot a orugant hyt yn lle yd oed karŵ Redynure. 30 "Karŵ Redynure, yma y doetham ni attat kennadeu Arthur, kany ŵdam aniueil hyn no thi. Dywet, a wdost di dim y ŵrth Uabon uab Modron, a ducpŷt yn deirnoŵsic y ŵrth y uam?" Y karŵ a dywaot: "Pan deuthum i yma gyntaf, nyt

"rampart"

pleasant agreeable

help, assist support

man fine small, insignificant

blackbird ruyel

a nut §133 (b)

due, claim right, title

5 La guide

oats

don't have to prepare, intend support, help, strength, power

quest having the same language ? parenthetic

treulan, to spend, consume, wear

Pl. Pres. Perf. of dyfod

syr (coll.) stars

"the roots of my wings are mere stumps"

## THE HUNTING OF TWRCH TRWYTH 197

oed namyn vn reit o bop tu ym penn. Ac nyt oed yma  
goet namyn un o gollen derwen. Ac y tyfwys honno yn dar  
can keing. Ac y dygŷydŷys y dar gŷedy hynny. A hediŷ

reid a shaft,  
antler, "time"

dygŷys saw to fell  
a chance

nyt oes namyn ŷystyn coch ohonei. Yr hynny hyt hediŷ  
yd ŷyf i yma; ny chigleu i dim or neb a ouynnŷch chŷi. 5  
Miui hagen a uydaf gyfarŷyd yŷch, kanyŷ kennadeu Arthur  
yŷch, hyt lle y mae aniuail gynt a rithŷys Duŷ no mi."

10. Dyuot a orugant hyt lle yd oed cuan Cum Kaŷŷyt.  
"Cuan Cŷm Kaŷŷyt, yma y mae kennadeu Arthur. A ŷdost  
di dim y ŷrth Vabon vab Modron a ducŷyt?" *et cetera*. 10  
"Pei as gŷŷpŷn, mi ae dywedŷn. Pan deuthum i yma gyntaf, y  
cŷm maŷr a welŷch glynn coet oed. Ac y deuth kenedlaeth  
o dynyon idaŷ, ac y diuaŷyt. Ac y tyuŷys yr eil coet yndaŷ.  
Ar trydyd coet yŷ hŷnn. A minneu neut ydynt yn gynyŷon

owl

boneu vy esgyl. Yr hynny hyt hediŷ ny chiglef i dim or  
gŷr a ouynnŷch chŷi. Mi hagen a uydaf gyuarwyd y genadeu  
Arthur, yny deloch hyt lle y mae yr anniuail hynaf yssyd yn  
y byt hŷnn, a mŷyaf a dreigyl, eryr Gŷern Abŷy. treigyl 35g. P. 2. d. of treiglaw, to

pl. of cyn stump  
15 pl. of asgell wing  
(133 lb.)

11. Gŷrhyr a dywaŷt: "Eryr Gwern Abŷy, ni a doetham  
gennadeu Arthur attat y ouyn itt a ŷdost dim y ŷrth Vabon 20  
uab Modron a duc" *et cetera*. Yr eryr a dywaŷt: "Mi a  
deuthum yma yr ys pell o amser. A phann deuthum yma  
gyntaf, maen a oed ym, ac y ar y benn ef y pigŷn y syr bob  
ucher; weithon nyt oes dyrnued yn y uchet. Yr hynny hyt  
hediŷ yd ŷyf i yma. Ac ny chiglef i dim y ŷrth y gŷr a 25  
ouynnŷch chŷi, onyt un treigyl yd euthum y geissaŷ uym  
bŷyt hyt yn Lynn Lyŷ. A phann deuthum i yno, y lledeis  
uyg cryuangheu y mŷŷn ehaŷc o debygu bot vym bŷyt yndaŷ  
wers vaŷr. Ac y tynnŷys ynteu ui hyt yr affŷys, hyt pann  
uu abreid im ymdianc y gantaŷ. Sef a ŷneuthum inheu, mi  
am hŷll garant, mynet yg gŷrys ŷrthaŷ y geissaŷ y diuetha.  
Kennadeu a yrrŷys ynteu y gymot a mi. A dyuot a oruc  
ynteu attaf i y diot dec tryuer a deugeint oe geuyn. Onyt

pigo to peck at

abyss, deep, bottom

30 ymdiane to  
agree

strife, hostility  
cymod to  
propitiate, make  
peace

tryfer trident

sak  
sapling

gyrystyn a  
withered stump

stump, root,  
stump

treiglaw  
wing, journey

(a hand-  
breadth)

course,  
journey

scarcely,  
hardly  
prop, pillar



awyn fan a lament, wailing  
grið fan to groan, a groaning  
pressemawl pertaining to this world

## 198 THE HUNTING OF TWRCH TRWYTH

ef a wyr peth or hynn a geissôch chô, ny ônn i neb ae gûypo.  
 Mi hagen a uydaf gyuarôyd yôch hyt lle y mae."

12. Dyuot a orugant hyt lle yr oed. Dywedut a oruc yr  
 eryr: "Ehaôc Lyn Lyô, mi a deuthum attat gan gennadeu

5 Arthur y ouyn a ôdost dim y ôrth Vabon uab Modron, a  
 ducpôyt yn teirnossic y ôrth y uam." "Y gymeint a wypôyf  
 i, mi ae dywedaf. Gan bob llanô yd af i ar hyt yr auon

uchot, hyt pan delôyf hyt y mach mur Kaer Loyô. Ac yno  
 y keueis i ny cheueis eirmoet o druc y gymeint. Ac mal y

10 crettoch, doet un ar uyn dôy ysgôyd i yma ohonaôch." Ac  
 ysef yd aeth ar dôy ysgôyd yr ehaôc, Kei a Gôrhyr Gôalstaôt

leithoed. Ac y kerdassant hyt pan deuthant am y uagôyr  
 ar karcharaôr. Yny uyd kôynuan a griduan a glywynt am

y uagôyr ac ôy. Gôrhyr a dywaôt: "Pa dyn a gôyn yn y  
 15 maendy hônn?" "Oia ôr, yssit le idaô y gôynaô y neb

yssyd yma. Mabon uab Modron yssyd yma yg carchar;  
 y charcharôyt neb kyndostet yn llôrô carchar a mi, na

charchar Lud Laô Ereint neu garchar Greit mab Eri." "Oes  
 obeith gennyti ar gaffel dy eilông ae yr eur ae yr aryant ae

20 yr golut pressennaôl, ae yr catwent ac ymlad?" "Y gymeint  
 ohonof i a gaffer a geffir drôy ymlad." Ymchoelut ohonunt

ôy odyndy, a dyuot hyt lle yd oed Arthur. Dywedut  
 ohonunt y lle yd oed Mabon uab Modron yg karchar.

Gôyssyaô a oruc Arthur milwyr yr ynys honn, a mynet hyt  
 25 yg Kaer Loyô, y lle yd oed Mabon yg karchar. Mynet a

oruc Kei a Bedwyr ar dôy yscôyd y ppsc. Tra yttoed vilwyr  
 Arthur yn ymlad ar gaer, rygaô o Gei y uagôyr a chymryt

y karcharaôr ar y geuyn. Ac ymlad ar gôyr ual kynt far  
gôyr. Atref y doeth Arthur a Mabon gantaô yn ryd.

30 13. Dywedut a oruc Arthur: "Beth iaônhaf weithon y  
 geissaô yn gyntaf or annoethu?" "Iaônhaf yô keissaô deu

geneu gast Rymhi." "A wys," heb yr Arthur, "pa du<sup>x</sup> y  
 mae hi?" "Y mae," heb yr un, "yn Aber Deugledyf."

back a bend,  
angle

"to the far side of  
the wall from the  
prisoner" & N. p. 143  
"on the far side of the  
wall from them"

test hard, severe

wealth

to summon

to rend, break

omit. Ditography

cease in. whelp.

"distress"  
S (should)

+  
magwyr  
a wall

= "cause"

as regards  
(3. Long)

cadwe'r ba  
fych, eantes  
to return, turn

?

gwyys Pa.  
Pres. Smt  
of gwyys  
p. 143

x tu side, region, part;  
pa, du where

? garcon

achub to occupy, seize, precipitate oneself, snatch [“he sprang forward in that direction.”]  
node to mark, notify, specify

## THE HUNTING OF TWRCH TRWYTH 199

Dyuot a oruc Arthur hyt yn ty Tringat yn Aber Cleddyf. A gouyn a oruc 6rtha6: “A glyweist ti y 6rthi hi yma? Py rith y mae hi?” “Yn rith bleidast,” heb ynteu, “ae deu geneu genthi yd ymda. Hi a lada6d vy ysgrybul yn vynyach. Ac y mae hi issot yn Aber Cleddyf y my6n gogof.” Sef a oruc Arthur gyrru ym Prytwenn y long ar uor ac ereill ar y tir y hela yr ast; ae chylchynu uelly hi ae deu geneu. Ac eu datritha6 o Du6 y Arthur yn eu rith ehunein. G6ascaru a oruc Ilu Arthur bob un bob deu. in ones and twos

she-wolf

cattle

5

to surround & pass, be seized

14. Ac ual yd oed G6ythyf mab Greida6l dydg6eith yn kerdet dros vynydd, y clywei leuein a gridua[n] girat; a garscon oed eu clybot. Achub a oruc ynteu parth ac yno. Ac mal y death yno, dispeila6 cledyf a wnaeth, a Ila6 y t6ynpath 6rth y dayar, ac ev diffryt uelly rac y tan. Ac y dywedassant 6ynteu 6rtha6: “D6c uendyth Du6 ar einym gennyf. Ar hynn ny allo dyn vyth y waret, ni a do6n y waret itt.” H6ynt6y wedy hynny a doethant ar na6 hesta6r Ilinat, a nodes Yspadaden Pennka6r ar Culh6ch, yn uessuredic oII heb dim yn eisseu ohonunt eithyr un Ilinhedyn; ar morgrugyn cloff a doeth a h6nn6 kynny y nos.

10

gird lamentable, pitious, terrible

to unsheathe “and so saved them from the fire”

deliver, “recover” a earn measure abt. 2 bushels, “hestia” “had named”

15

15. Pan yttoed Gei a Bedwyr yn eisted ar benn Pumlumon ar Garn G6ylathyr ar wynt m6yaf yn y byt, edrych a 6naethant yn eu kylch. Ac 6ynt a 6elynt v6c ma6r parth ar deheu ym pell y 6rthunt heb drossi dim gan y g6ynt. Ac yna y dywa6t Kei: “Myn Ila6 vyng kyueillt, sylI dy racco tan ryss6r.” Bryssya6 a orugant parth ar m6c, a dynessau parth ac yno dan ymardisg6yl o bell. Yny uyd Dillus Uaru6c yn deiu6 baed coet. Llyna hagen y ryss6r m6yaf a ochela6d Arthur eiryot. Heb y Bedwyr yna 6rth Gei: “Ae hatwaenost di ef?” “Atwen,” heb y Kei; “Ilyna Dillus Uaru6c. Nyt oes yn y byt kynllyuan a dalyo Drutwyn keneu Greit uab Eri, namyn kynllyuan o uaryf y g6r a wely di racko; ac ny m6ynhaa heuyt, onyt yn

myg smoke trossi to turn, move

25 friend

\* to watch \* v. p. 193

30 sic Hs.

eg. Uaru6c (bearded)

“and that too will be of no use”

gochel to avoid, ward off, shun, escape  
“Now he was the mightiest warrior that ever fled from Arthur”

m6ynhaa, to use, employ, enjoy, profit

vyb y tynnir a chyllellprenneu oe uaraf, kanys breu uyd yn *little*  
 uarab." "Mae an kynghor ninneu wrth hynny?" heb y  
 Bedwyr. "Gadon ef," heb y Kei, "y yssu y wala or kic; *guala f. a*  
 a gbedy hynny kyscu a ona." Tra yttoed ef yn hynny, *pill, sufficient*  
 5 y buant bynteu yn gboneuthur kyllellbrenneu. Pan bybu Gei  
 yn diheu y uot ef yn kyscu, gboneuthur poll a oruc dan y *a pit, hole*  
 draet moyhaf yn y byt. A tharaab dyrnaot arnaab anueitraol *immense*  
 y ueint a oruc, ae wascu yn y poll, hyt pan daroed  
 udunt y gnithiaol yn llŷr ar kyllellbrenneu y uaryf; a gbedy  
 10 hynny y lad yn goby. Ac odynd yd aethant eil deu hyt yg  
 Kelli Wic yg Kernyb, a chynlluyann o uaryf Dillus Uaruab  
 gantunt. Ae rodi a oruc Kei yn llab Arthur. Ac yna y  
 kanei Arthur yr eglun hōnn :

15 "Kynlluyann a oruc Kei  
 o uaryf Dillus uab Eurei;  
 pei iach, dy angheu uidei."

*sarri to be angry, frown*  
 Ac am hynny y sorres Kei, hyt pan uu abreid y uilwyr yr  
 ynys honn tangneuedu y rōng Kei ac Arthur. Ac eissoes  
 nac yr anghyfnerth ar Arthur nac yr llad y wyr nyt  
 20 ymyrrōys Kei yn reit gyt ac ef o hynny allan.

16. Ac yna y dywaot Arthur: "Beth iaonaf weithon y  
 geissaol or annoetheu?" "Iaonaf yb keissaol Drutwyn keneu  
 Greit uab Eri." Kyn no hynny ychydic yd aeth Creidylat  
 uerch Lud Lab Ereint gan Wythyr mab Greidaol. A chynn  
 25 kyscu genthi dyuot Gōynn uab Nud ae dōyn y treis. *violence, rape*  
 Kynnullaol llū o Wythyr uab Greidaol a dyuot y ymlad a  
 Gōynn mab Nud. A goruot o Wyn, a dala Greit mab Eri a *capture*  
 Glinneu eil Taran a Gōrgōst Letlōm a Dyfnarth y uab; a  
 dala o Penn uab Nethaol a Nōythōn a Chyledyr Wyllt y  
 30 uab. A llad Nōythōn a oruc, a diot y gallon, a chymhell ar  
 Kyledyr yssu callon y dat; ac am hynny yd aeth Kyledyr  
 yg gōyllt. Clybot o Arthur hynny, a dyuot hyt y Gogled.

"tosh out"



di-fwrn void, idle, unused, untouched (of a virgin)

gwytyr stout, resolute, bold

achub yr cyferth to be first at the charge

## THE HUNTING OF TWRCH TRWYTH 201

A dyuynnv a oruc ef Góynn uab Nud attab, a gellong y  
wyrda y gantaab oe garchar, a góneuthur tangneued y róng  
Góynn mab Nud a Góythyr mab Greidaab. Sef tangneued  
a wnaethpóyt, gadu y uoróyn yn ty y that yn diúbryn or dóy  
barth; ac ymlad bob duab kalan Mei uyth hyt dyd braab or  
dyd hónnó allan y róng Góynn a Góythyr; ar un a orffo  
onadunt dyd braab, kymeret y uoróyn. A góedy kymot y  
góyrda hynny uelly, y kauas Arthur Mygdón march Góedó a  
chynnlluyau Córš Cant Ewin. "Hundred - claws"

17. Góedy hynny yd aeth Arthur hyt yn Lydaab, a 10  
Mabon uab Melit gantaab a Góare Góallt Euryu, y geissaab  
deu gi Glythmyr L[ed]ewic. A góedy eu kaffel yd aeth  
Arthur hyt yg gorllewin Iwerdon y geissaab Górgi Seueri, ac  
Odgar uab Aed brenhin Iwerdon gyt ac ef. Ac odyu yd  
aeth Arthur yr Gogled, ac y delis Kyledyr Wylt. Ac yd 15  
aeth Yskithyrwynn Pennbeid; ac yd aeth Mabon mab Melit,  
a deu gi Glythuyr Ledewic yn y laab a Drutwyn geneu Greit  
mab Eri. Ac yd aeth Arthur ehun yr erhyll, a Chauall ki  
Arthur yn y laab. Ac yd esgynnóys Kaab o Brydein ar  
Lamrei kassek Arthur, ac achub yr kyfuarch. Ac yna 20  
y kymertth Kaab o Brydein nerth búyelllic, ac yn wychyr  
trebelit y doeth ef yr baed, ac y holldes y benn  
yn deu hanner. A chymryt a oruc Kaab yr ysgithyr. Nyt  
y kón a nottayssei Yspaden ar Gólhóch a ladaab y baed,  
namyn Kauall ki Arthur ehun.

18. A góedy llad Ysgithyrwyn Bennbeid, yd aeth Arthurae  
niuer hyt yng Kelli Wic yng Kernýb. Ac odyu y gyrróys  
Menó mab Teirgóaed y edrych a uei y tlysseu y róng  
deu glust Tórch Tróyth, rac salwen oed uynet y ymdaraab  
ac ef, ony<sup>1</sup> bei y tlysseu gantaab. Diheu hagen oed y uot ef  
yno; neur daroed idaab diffeithaab traean Iwerdon. Mynet a  
oruc Menó y ymgeis ac bynt. Sef y góelas bynt yn Esgeir  
Oeruel yn Iwerdon. Ac ymrithaab a oruc Menó yn rith

1. MS. ac ony, corr. Loth.

"so mean a thing would it be to go to fight with him, had he not  
those treasures" [reading salwett v. Jones & Jones p. 280]

5

gorffo Pres.  
Sely. of gor-vrt  
overcome §160

"Dun-brane"

"went after"

mount

"armed him  
with a hatchet"  
swift, dexterous

15 "caught"

hunt, chase

20 sic MS.  
eg. Rhyfartth.

holldi' to split,  
cleave  
fang, tusk  
eg. Yspad[ad]en.

25

vain, needless

v. p. 60

to transform  
oneself

to seek

ysglyffu yau to snatch  
ymerdwies (ac), to overtake, come up with, touch

202 THE HUNTING OF TWRCH TRWYTH

ederyn; a disgynnu a bnaeth uch penn y gŵal, a cheissab  
ysglyffuab un or tlysseu y gantaab; ac yn chauas dim hagen  
namyn un oe wrych. Kyuodi a oruc ynteu yn wychyr da  
ac ymysgytyab, hyt pan ymordiweadaab peth or gŵenbyn ac  
ef; odyna ny bu dianaf Meno uyth.

19. Gyrru o Arthur gennat gŵedy hynny ar Odgar uab  
Aed, brenhin Iwerdon, y erchi peir Diornach Wydel, maer  
idaab. Erchi o Otgar idaab y rodi. Y dywaab Diornach:

"Duab a wyr, pei hanffei well o welet un oluc arnaab, nas  
kaffei." A dyuot o gennat Arthur a nac genthi o Iwerdon.

Kychwynnu a oruc Arthur ac ysgaon niuer ganthaab, a mynet  
ym Prytwen y long, a dyuot y Ywerdon; a dygyrchu ty  
Diornach Wydel a orugant. Gŵelsant niuer Otgar eu meint.

A gŵedy bŵyta onadunt ac yuet eu dogyn, erchi y peir a  
15 oruc Arthur. Y dywaab ynteu, pei as. rodei y neb, y rodei  
ŵrth eir Odgar brenhin Iwerdon. Gŵedy lleueryd nac udunt,  
kyuodi a oruc Bedwyr ac ymauel yn y peir, ae dodi ar  
geuyn Hygŵyd gŵas Arthur; braab oed hŵnnŵ unuam y  
Gachamŵri gŵas Arthur. Sef oed y sŵyd ef yn wastat

20 ymdŵyn peir Arthur a dodi tan y danaab. Meglyt o  
Lenlleaŵc Wydel yg Kaletvŵlch, ae ellŵng ar y rot, a llad  
Diornach Wydel ae niuer ach[llan]. Dyuot lluoed Iwerdon  
ac ymlad ac ŵy. A gŵedy ffo y lluoed achlan, mynet Arthur  
ae wyr yn eu gŵyd yn y llong, ar peir yn llaŵn o sŵlt

25 Iwerdon gantunt; a diskynnu yn ty Lŵydeu mab Kelcoet  
ym Porth Kerdin yn Dyuet. Ac yno y mae messur y peir.

20. Ac yna y kynnullŵys Arthur a oed o gynifyr yn  
teir ynys Prydein ae their racynys, ac a oed yn Freinc  
a Llydaab a Normandi a Gŵlat yr Haf, ac a oed o gicŵr dethol

30 a march clotuaab. Ac yd aeth ar niuerod hynny oll hyt yn  
Iwerdon. Ac y bu ouyn maab ac ergryn racdaab yn Iwerdon.  
A gŵedy disgynnu Arthur yr tir, dyuot saint Iwerdon attaab  
y erchi naab idaab. Ac y rodes ynteu naab udunt hŵy, ac y

gelluwyd cledyd ar y rod to brandish a sword in circle

\* v. Peder Kenc, p. 161. Cf. p. 203, line 31

X | "God knows, though he should be the better of getting and glimpsing of it,  
he should not have it"

hair

poison

steward

a refusal  
highly, slightly,  
easy  
make for

to grip, grasp  
cling to

money, treasure  
"disembarked"

P? a measure,  
impression  
"warrens"  
"p. 163 adjectives  
islands"

dread fear

rodassant bynteu eu bendyth idaŵ ef. Dyuoŵ a oruc gŵyr  
 Iwerdon hyt att Arthur a rodi bŵyttal idaŵ. Dyuoŵ a oruc  
 Arthur hyt yn Esgeir Oeruel yn Iŵerdon, yn y lle yd oed  
 Tŵrch Trŵyth ae seithlydyn moch gantaŵ. Gellŵng kŵn  
 arnaŵ o bop parth. Y dyd hŵnnŵ educher yd ymladaŵd y  
 Gŵydyl ac ef; yr hynny pymhet ran Iwerdon<sup>1</sup> a ŵnaeth yn  
 diffeith. A thrannoeth yd ymladaŵd teulu Arthur ac ef;  
 namyn a gaŵssant o drŵc y gantaŵ, ny chaŵssant dim o da.  
 Y trydyd dyd yd ymladaŵd Arthur ehun ac ef naŵ nos a  
 naŵ nieu; ny ladaŵd namyn un parcheŵl oe uoch. Gouynnŵys  
 y gŵyr y Arthur peth oed ystyr yr hŵch hŵnnŵ. Y dywaŵt  
 ynteu: "Brenhin uu, ac am y bechaŵt y rithŵys Duŵ ef yn hŵch." L

21. Gyrru a ŵnaeth Arthur Gŵrhŵr Gŵalstaŵt Ieithoed y  
 geissaŵ ymadraŵd ac ef. Mynet a oruc Gŵrhŵr yn rith  
 ederyn, a disgynnŵ a ŵnaeth vch benn y wal ef ae seithlydyn  
 moch. A gouyn a oruc Gŵrhŵr Gŵalstaŵt Ieithoed idaŵ: "Yr y  
 gŵr ath wnaeth ar y delŵ honn, or gellŵch dywedut, y harchaf  
 dyuoŵ un ohonaŵch y ymdidan ac Arthur." Gŵrtheb a ŵnaeth  
 Grugyn Gŵrych Ereint (mal adaned aryant oed y wrych oll;  
 y fford y kerdei ar goet ac ar uaes y gŵelut, ual y llithrei y  
 wrych). Sef atteb a rodes Grugyn: "Myn y gŵr an gŵnaeth  
 ni ar y delŵ honn, ny wnaŵn, ac ny dywedŵn dim yr Arthur.  
 Oed digaŵn o drŵc a ŵnathoed Duŵ ynni, an gŵneuthur ar y  
 delŵ hon, kynny deleŵch chŵitheu y ymlad a ni." "Mi a  
 dywedaf yŵch yd ymlad Arthur am y grib ar ellyn ar  
 gŵelleu yssyd rŵng deu glust Tŵrch Trŵyth." Heb y  
 Grugyn: "Hyt pann gaffer y eneit ef yn gyntaf, ny cheffir  
 y tlysseu hynny. Ar bore auory y kychŵynnŵn ni odyma;  
 ac yd aŵn y wlat Arthur, ar meint mŵyhaf a allom ni o drŵc  
 a ŵnaŵn yno." Kychŵyn a orugant hŵy ar y mor parth a  
 Chymry. Ac yd aeth Arthur ae luoed ae ueirch ae gŵn ym  
 Prytwen, a tharaŵ lygat ymwelet ac bynt. Disgynnŵ a ŵnaeth

1. MS. y iwerdon.

1 came to land

victuals

waste

pl. of adan, wing

crib comb  
shears, scissors

in the  
twinkling of  
an eye, immediately

pl. of adan, wing

waste

young bird

to answer, reply

llathrei

razor

X  
"they saw them"

Tŵrch Trŵyth ym Porth Cleis yn Dyuet. Dyuot a oruc Arthur hyt ym Mynyŵ y nos honno. Trannoeth dywedut y Arthur eu mynet heibaŵ. Ac ymordiwes a oruc ac ef yn

"And he overtook him"

1 ŷad gŵartheŵ Kynnwas Kŵrr y Uagyl. (A) gŵedy ŷad a oed yn Deugledyf o dyn a mil kynn dyuot Arthur, or pan deuth Arthur, y kychŵynnŵys Tŵrch Trŵyth odynd hyt ym Presseleu.

?⊙

Dyuot Arthur a lluoed y byt hyt yno. Gyrru a oruc Arthur y wyr yr erhyl, Ely a Thrachmyr, a Drutwyn keneu Greit mab Eri yn y laŵ ehun; a Gŵarthehyt uab Kaŵ yghongyl

congyll a corner, angle ("quarter")

10 arall, a deu gi Glythmyr Letewic yn y laŵ ynteu; a Bedwyr a Chauall ki Arthur yn y laŵ ynteu. A restru a oruc y milwyr oll o deu tu Nyuer. Dyuot tri meib Cledyf Divŵlch, gŵyr a gauas clot maŵr yn ŷad Ysgithyrwyn Pennbeid. Ac yna y kychŵynnŵys ynteu o Lynn Nyuer, ac y doeth y

to range

15 Gŵm Kerŵyn, ac y rodes kyuarth yno. Ac yna y ŷadaŵd ef bedwar ryssŵr y Arthur, Gŵarthehyd mab Kaŵ, a Tharaŵc Allt Clŵyt, a Reidŵn uab Eli Atuer, ac Iscouan Hael.

A gŵedy ŷad y gŵyr hynny, y rodes yr eil kyuarth udunt yn y lle, ac y ŷadaŵd Gŵydrre uab Arthur, a Garselit Wydel,

20 a Gleŵ uab Yscaŵt, ac Iscaŵyn uab Panon; ac doluryaŵ ynteu yna a ŵnaethpŵyt.

to grieve

22. Ar bore ym bronn y dyd drannoeth yd ymordiweŵdaŵd rei or gŵyr ac ef. Ac yna y ŷadaŵd Huandaŵ a Gogigŵr a Phenn Pingon, tri gŵeis Gleŵlŵyt Gauaeluaŵr, hyt nas gŵydyat

25 Duŵ was yn y byt ar y helŵ ynteu, eithyr Laesgenym ehunan, gŵr ny hanoed well neb ohonaŵ. Ac y gyt a hynny a ŷadaŵd ŷaŵer o wyr y ŵlat, a Gŵlydyn saer, pensaer y Arthur. Ac yna yd ymordiweŵdaŵd Arthur ym Pelumyaŵc ac ef. Ac yna y ŷadaŵd ynteu Madaŵc mab Teithyon, a Gŵyn

30 mab Tringat mab Neuŵet, ac Eiryaŵn Pennlloran. Ac odynd yd aeth ef hyt yn Aber Tyŵi. Ac yno y rodes kyuarth udunt. Ac yna y ŷadaŵd ef Kynlas mab Kynan, a Gŵilenhin bre[nh]in Freinc. Odynd yd aeth hyt yg

Imperf 355. d  
ham-vor 8160

x | "And then he himself was wounded: (?)

o | "so that God knows he had never a servant left to him in the world, save only Llaesgenym (Black-bewer), a man for whom none was the better"

di-gribyaw (y) to attack

ny nodydoed 3sg. p. perf. pass. of nodi to mark, notify, specify

## THE HUNTING OF TWRCH TRWYTH 205

Glynn Ystu. Ac yna yd ymgollasant y góyr ar cón ac ef.  
Dyuynnu a oruc Arthur Góyn uab Nud attab, a gouyn idab a  
dydyatef dim yórth Tórch Tróyth. Y dywaótynteunasgdydyat.

lost sight of him  
"lost him"

23. Y hela y moch yd aeth y kynnydyon yna oíll hyt yn  
Dyffryn Lychór. Ac y digribyóys Grugyn Góallt Ereint  
udunt a Lóydaóc Gouynnyat; ac y lladass[ant] y  
kynnydyon, hyt na diengis dyn yn vyó onadunt namyn un  
góyr. Sef a oruc Arthur dyuot ae luoed hyt lle yd oed

X  
pl. of kynnydyon  
5 huntman

Grugyn a Lóydaóc, a gellóng yna arnadunt a oed o gi  
rynodydoed yn llóyr. Ac órth yr aur a dodet yna ar kyuarth,  
y doeth Tórch Tróyth ac y diffyrth bynt. Ac yr pan  
dathoedynt dros uor Iwerdon, nyt ymwelsei ac bynt hyt  
yna. Dygóydaó a ónaethpóyt yna a góyr a chón arnaó.

10 gave a shout,  
cry, battle

"he had not set  
eyes on them till  
now"

Ymrodi y gerdet ohonaó ynteu hyt ym Mynydd Amanó.  
Ac yna y llas banó oe uoch ef. Ac yna yd aethpóyt eneit  
dros eneit ac ef. Ac y lladóyt yna Tórch Llavin. Ac  
yna y llas arall oe voch; Góys oed y enó. Ac ody na  
yd aeth hyt yn Dyffrynn Amanó. Ac yno y llas banó  
a bennwic. Nyt aeth ody no gantaó oe uoch yn vyó  
namyn Grugyn Góallt Ereint a Lóydaóc Gouynnyat. 20

15 \*

Caps.?

Or lle hónnó yd aethant hyt yn Lóch Eóin. Ac  
yd ymordiweadaó Arthur ac ef yno. Rodi kyuarth a ónaeth  
ynteu yna. Ac yna y lladaó ef Echel Uordóyt Tóll, ac  
Aróyli eil Góydaóc Góyr, a llaber o wyr a chón heuyt. Ac  
yd aethant ody na hyt yn Llóch Taóy. Yscar a ónaeth  
Grugyn Górych Ereint ac bynt yna. Ac yd aeth Grugyn  
ody na hyt yn Dintywi. Ac ody na yd aeth hyt yg  
Keredigyaón, ac Eil a Thrachmyr gantaó, a lliaós gyt ac  
bynt heuyt. Ac y doeth hyt yg Garth Grégyn. Ac yno  
y<sup>1</sup> llas Llóydaóc Gouynnyat yn y mysc. Ac y lladaó  
Ruduyó Rys, a llaber gyt ac ef. Ac yna yd aeth Lóydaóc  
hyt yn Ystrat Yó. Ac yno y kyuaruu góyr Lydaó ac ef.

mor sword high  
twice perforated, pierced

25 to leave, part  
with

multitude, host-  
u (so the)  
in their  
midst

1. MS. y y

X | "and then he let loose all the dogs that had been named  
to this end"

\* myrned eneit dros eneit to engage in a life-for-life struggle



along to dismiss, dispatch, let; shed (blood)  
(X) also: v. p. 89. 3 sq. Pr. Subj. 5 unwed in fut. sense.

## 206 THE HUNTING OF TWRCH TRWYTH

peiss-awg  
coated

Ac yna y lladaŵd ef Hir Peissaŵc brenhin Lydaŵ, a  
Lygatrud Emys a Gôrbothu, eŵythred Arthur, vrodyr y  
uam. Ac yna y llas ynteu.

to summon

24. Tôrch Trôyth a aeth yna y rông Taŵy ac Euyas.  
5 Gôysysaŵ Kernyŵ a Dyfneint o Arthur yn y erbyn hyt yn  
aber Hafren. A dywedut a oruc Arthur ôrth vilôyr yr  
ynys honn: "Tôrch Trôyth a ladaŵd llaber om gôyr. Myn,  
gôrhyt gôyr, nyt a mi yn uyŵ yd aho ef y Gernyŵ. Nys

I will pursue  
him no  
further"

below weakness  
bravery, strength  
X v. p. 205

10 ymlityaf i ef bellach, namyn <sup>x</sup>mynet eneit dros eneit ac ef a  
wnaf. Gôneŵch chôl a ŵnelhoch." Sef a daruu o gyghor  
gantaŵ ellong kat o uarchogyon, a chôl yr ynys gantunt,  
hyt yn Euyas, ac ymchoelut odyo hyt yn Hafren, ae ragot  
yno ac a oed o vilwyr prouedic yn yr ynys honn, ae yrru  
anghen yn anghen yn Hafren. A mynet a ŵnaeth Mabon

to waylay  
an ambush

battalion

tried, tested

by sheer  
necessity, "force"

15 uab Modron gantaŵ ar Wynn mygdôn march Gôedô  
yn Hafren, a Goreu mab Custennin, a Menô mab Teirgôaed  
y rông Lynn Liŵan ac aber Gôy. A dygôydaŵ o  
Arthur arnaŵ, a ryssôyr Prydein gyt ac ef. Dynessau  
a oruc Osla Gyllelluaŵr a Manaŵydan uab Llyr a

20 Chacmôri gôas Arthur a Gôyn Gelli, a dygrynnyaŵ yndaŵ,

& seize, clute

Chergaw to plunge,  
immense  
above him  
(such v. 653)

ac ymauael yn gyntaf yn y traet, ae gleicaŵ ohonunt yn  
Hafren, yny yttoed yn llenŵi odyuchtaŵ. Brathu amôis o  
Uabon uab Modron or neil[l] parth, a chael yr ellyn y  
gantaŵ. Ac or parth arall y dygyrchôys Kyledyr Wyllt y

X make for, set  
upon; draw

25 ar amôis arall gantaŵ yn Hafren, ac y duc y gôlleu y gantaŵ.

Cribl could (fem)

Kynn kaffel diot y grib, kaffel dayar ohonaŵ ynteu ae  
draet. Ac or pan gauas y tir, ny allôys na chi na dyn na  
march y ganhymdeith, hyt pan aeth y Gernyŵ. Noc a gaffat  
o drôc yn keissaŵ y tlysseu hynny y gantaŵ, gôaeth a gaffat

canhym-deith, to  
accompany, keep  
up with

30 yn keissaŵ diffryt y deu ôr rac eu bodi. Kacmôri ual y  
tynnit ef y uynyd, y tynnei deu uaeu Xureuan ynteu  
yr affôys. Osla Gyllelluaŵr yn redec yn ol y tôrch, y  
dygôydôys y gyllell oe wein ac y kolles; ae wein ynteu

bodi to draw  
guernstone

X v. p. 12 for  
imitation

"On the one side Nabon son of Modron spurred his horse and  
took the razor from him, & on the other Kyledyr the Wild, on  
another horse, plunged into Severa with him & took from him the  
shears"

brenan f. handmill, quern

? y holet ("he was forced out of Cornwall")

blinded fatigue  
gwidon J. a witch

gogof J. cave

# THE HUNTING OF TWRCH TRWYTH 207

gŵedy hynny yn llawn or dŵyr, ual y tynnit ef y uynyd, y  
tynnei hitheu ef yr affŵys. Odyna yd aeth Arthur a lluoed,  
hyt pan ymordiwedaŵd ac ef yg Kernyb. Gŵare oed a gafat  
o drŵc gantaŵ kyn no hynny y ŵrth a gaffat yna gantaŵ yn  
keissaŵ y grib. O drŵc y gilyd y kaffat y grib y gantaŵ.  
Ac odyna y holet ynteu o Gernyb, ac y gyrrŵyt yr mor yn y  
gyueir. Ny wybuŵyt vyth o hynny allan pa le yd aeth, ac  
Anet ac Aethlem<sup>x</sup> gantaŵ. Ac odynd yd aeth Arthur y  
ymeneinaŵ ac y uŵrŵ y ludeŵ y arnaŵ hytyg Kelli Wic yg Kernyb.

from.

5 "from mischief  
to mischief"

straight before  
him, headlong  
X v. gloss.  
asth - lym

"to bathe himself  
and him of his  
weariness"

25. Dywedut o Arthur: "A oes dim weithon or anoethu  
heb gaffel?" Y dywaŵt vn or gŵyr: "Oes. Gŵaet y widon  
Ordu merch y widon Orwen o penn Nant Gouut yg gŵrthtir  
Uffern." Kychŵyn a oruc Arthur parth ar Gogled,  
a dyuot hyt lle yd oed gogof y wrach. A chynghori o  
Wynn uab Nud a Gŵythyŵr uab Greidaŵl gellŵng Kacmŵri a  
Hygŵyd y uraŵt y ymlad ar wrach. Ac ual yd euthant y

uplands of  
Hell

"the blood of  
the Black Witch,  
daughter of the  
White Witch"

let, send

gwrach J. a  
hag, witch

seize, snatch  
by

myŵn yr ogof, y hachub a oruc y wrach; ac ymauel yn  
Hygŵyd herŵyd gŵallt y benn, ae daraŵ yr llawr deni.  
Ac ymauel o Kacmŵri yndi hitheu herŵyd gŵallt y  
phenn, ae thynnu y ar Hygŵyd yr llawr. Ac ymchoelut a  
oruc hitheu ar Kacmŵri, ac eu dygaboli yll deu, ac eu diaruu, ae  
gyrru allan dan eu hub ac eu hob.<sup>x</sup> A llidyaŵ a oruc Arthur  
o welet y deu was hayachen wedy eu llad, a cheissaŵ achub  
yr ogof. Ac yna y dywedassant Gŵynn a Gŵythyŵr ŵrthaŵ:

under her (p. 39)

to belabour,  
beat soundly

precipitate  
oneself

almost

It is neither  
clearly nor  
satisfactory for us"

"Nyt dec ac nyt digrif genhym dy welet yn ymgribyaŵ a  
gŵrach. Gellŵng Hir Amren a Hir Eidyl yr ogof." A mynet  
a orugant. Ac or bu drŵc trafferth y deu gynt, gŵaeth uu  
drafferth y deu hynny, hyt nas gŵypei Duŵ y vn ohonunt  
eŵ pedwar allu mynet or lle, namyn mal y dodet eŵ pedwar  
ar Lamrei kassec Arthur. Ac yna achub a oruc Arthur  
drŵs yr ogof, ac y ar y drŵs a uyrrei y wrach a Charnwennan  
y gyllell, ae tharaŵ am y hanner, yny uu yn deu gelŵrn hi. A  
chymryt a oruc Kaŵ o Brydein gŵaet y widon ae gadŵ ganthaŵ.

25. to wrangle  
with, "scuffling"  
trouble, "plight"

"took aim at"  
"until she  
was as two  
trees"

v. gloss. sv.  
am-wyn  
wyring a white  
wolf

X Gloss. pushing and kicking them. Trans. "spealing  
and squalling"

llidyaŵ to become angry.

o "so that God knows not one of the whole four could have stirred from the  
place, but for the way they were all four loaded on Llamrei, Arthur's mare."

#### IV. THE PROCEDURE IN A SUIT FOR LANDED PROPERTY.

Puipenzac auezno kefroŷ haul am tir a dayar.<sup>1</sup> Kefroet panuezno o nauuethid klangayaf allan. Neu onauu-  
5 ethid meŷ. Kanis<sup>2</sup> eramseroyd hezny ybit agoredic keureith am tir ay dayar.

Oderuit yr haulur meznu  
10 holi tir en eramseroyt hinni deuhet<sup>1</sup> ar er argluyt yerchi did y guarandau y haul a hinni aretir. In edid huznu datkanet y haul. Ni  
15 dele y dithun<sup>2</sup> kaifail ateb edithun. Kanis haul dissuiut yu ar<sup>3</sup> guercheidveith ac wrth hinni yguercheidveith a deleant oyt urth porth.  
20 Yaun yu irhalur y ludyas udunt onit ekeureyth ay deweyt ydeleu. Ac ena emay<sup>4</sup> ereneyt ev guarandau. A gouin pale emay eu porth.  
25 Odeweduuant pot eu porth eneu kemmut euhun. Roy oyt trideu udunt. Obit en

1. Pwy bynnac a uynno kyffroi hawl am dir a dayar, kyffroet pan uynno o nawvet dyd kalan gayaf allan, neu o nawvet dyd Mei. Kanys yn yr amseroed hynny y byd agoredic kyvreith am dir a dayar.

2. O deruyd yr hawlwr mynnu holi tir yn yr amseroed hynny deuet ar yr arglwyd y erchi dyd y warandaw y hawl, a hynny ar y tir. Yn y dyd hwnnw dadganet y hawl. Ny dyl y kaffael ateb y dyd hwnn. Kanys hawl dysseivyt yw ar y gwercheidweit.<sup>x</sup> Ac wrth hynny y gwercheidweit a dylyant oet wrth borth. Iawn yw yr hawlwr y ludyas udunt, onyt y gyvreith a dyweit y dylyu. Ac yna y mae iawn yr yneit eu gwarandaw, a govyn pa le y mae eu porth. O dywedant bot eu porth yn eu kymmwt eu hun, roi oet

*8 inst. title  
a claim*

*358. F. 1. S. 1  
b. 1. 1. 1. 1.*

*sudden  
max posted*

*v. p. 83*

*= 1002*

(Ch. 1). 1 the second *a* is added over the line, 2 add *yn* with several MSS.  
(Ch. 2). 1 *h* over the line, 2 omit, 3 add *y* with many MSS., 4 add *iaun* with many MSS.

X pl. of gor-cheichwad m. a guardian, custodian  
oed m. age; appointed time, respite, delay.  
porth f. help, assistance, support  
ludyas to hinder



eli<sup>5</sup> kemut naunieu. Obit en etredit neu uot llanu a trey eregthun ac eu porth. Os kin hanner did ebernir eroyt petheunos or did hunnu ebit eroyt. Os guedi hanner did petheunos otrannoith. Ac essev achaws yu henne. Kanydoys did kubil ac nat yaun talu drill did en lle did. Ac en eroyt barnedic huznu emay yaun deuod ar etir<sup>6</sup> ac vynt ac eu porth. = *reckon*

Ac ena ymay yaun guneythur<sup>1</sup> du<sup>2</sup> pleit ac eiste en<sup>3</sup> keureithaul. Esseu ual etestedyr en keureythiaul. Eiste orbrenhin neu or neb a uo enile. ay keuen ar er eul<sup>4</sup> neu ar er<sup>5</sup> hin. Rac aulonidu er hin oyuynef. Ar enat llis neu egnat ekemut erhun henau auo en eiste rac euron ef. Ac ar<sup>6</sup> llau assu y huznu er egnat arall auo enemays neu er eneid.<sup>7</sup> Ac ar ellau

tridieu udunt. O byd yn yr eil gymmw, naw nieu. O byd yn y trydyd neu vot llanu a threi yryngthunt ac eu porth, os kyn hanner dyd y bernir yr oet, pythewnos or dyd hwnnw y byd yr oet; os gwedy hanner dyd, pythewnos o drannoeth. Ac yssef achaws yw hynny; 10 kanyt oes dyd kwbyl, ac nat iawn talu dryll dyd yn lle dyd. Ac yn yr oet barnedic hwnnw y mae iawn dyvot ar y tir ac wynt ac eu porth. 15

3. Ac yna y mae iawn gwneuthur dwy bleit ac eisted yn gyfreithiawl. Sef ual yd eistedir yn gyfreithyawl. Eisted or brenhin neu or neb 20 a uo yn y le ae gevyn ar yr heul neu ar yr hin, rac avlonnydu yr hin oe wyneb ef. Ar ynat llys neu ynat y kymmwt, yr hwn hynaf a uo, 25 yn eisted rac y uron ef. Ac ar y llaw assw y hwnnw yr ynat arall a vo yn y maes. Ac ar y llaw deheu idaw yr

*tide & ebb  
5 before midday*

*portion, fragment*

*pleid f. a side, party*

*weather  
incommode*

*super. of hen old  
before / in front  
of him*

*open court*

(Ch. 2). 5 leg. ereil, 6 e over the line

(Ch. 3). 1 n and y over the line, 2 leg. dui, 3 MS. eneu, 4 the e over the line, 5 added over the line, 6 add y with many MSS., 7 after neu some letters cancelled; er eneid added over the line

deheu ydau ereferiat neu er  
 eferieit.<sup>8</sup> Ac egkell<sup>9</sup> er ar-  
 gluid edeu heneuid. Ay  
 guirda o hinny allan o pop-  
 5 thu ydau. Odena ford yr  
 eneyt keuarvyneb. ac eu<sup>10</sup>  
 darimret yeubraudle. Keg-  
 haus er haulur ar ellau assu  
 ydau ar eford. ar haulur  
 10 enessav. ydau. en eperued<sup>11</sup>  
 ar kanllau ar ellau arall  
 ydau. Ar<sup>12</sup> rigyll en seuill  
 trakeuen ekeghaus<sup>13</sup>. er  
 amdiffinur ar ellau deheu ar  
 15 eforth. ar amdiffinur  
 enessau. ydau. eneperued.  
 ay kanllau or tu arall ydau.  
 arigill traigeuen entheu.  
 Gwedi darvo eiste euelly.  
 20 Kemerer<sup>14</sup> mach ar keureith.  
 Esseu meychyeu auid ar<sup>15</sup>  
 tir ay dayar. Guystlon<sup>16</sup> o  
 dynyon. deu<sup>17</sup> dyn neu auo  
 muy. o popleit. arey<sup>18</sup> hinni  
 25 emedyant er argluid edant.

effeiryat neu yr effeiryait. Ac  
 yg kylch yr arglwyd y deu  
 hyleneid; ae wyrda o hynny  
 allan o bob tu idau. Odyna  
 fford yr yneit gyvarwyneb  
 ac wynt y darymret y eu  
 brawdle. Kynghaws yr  
 hawlwr ar y llaw assw idaw  
 ar y fford, ar hawlwr yn  
 nessaf idaw yn y perved, ar  
 kanllaw ar y llaw arall idaw;  
 ar ringyll yn sevyll tracheuyn  
 y kynghaws. Ar bleit arall  
 y tu arall yr fford; yn nessaf  
 yr fford kynghaws yr amdiff-  
 ynnwr ar y llaw deheu ar y  
 fford, ar amdiffynnwr yn  
 nessaf idaw yn y perued, ae  
 ganllaw or tu arall idaw;  
 ar rhingyll traegevyn ynteu.  
 Gwedy darvo eisted yvelly,  
 kymerer mach ar gyvreith.  
 Sef meichyeu a vyd ar dir a  
 dayar, gwystlon o dynyon,  
 deu dyn neu a vo mwy o  
 bob pleit. Ar rei hynny yn  
 medyant yr arglwyd yd ant.

priest

an elder

opposite  
them  
to pass to & of  
a counsel  
advocate

a supporter

defendant

a surety  
guarantee3 pl. Pres.  
of mynet

power

(Ch. 3). 8 in marg., where it has been written twice, the first entry having been mutilated by the cutting of the margin, 9 on p. 103 the phrase is *yný gylch*, 10 *leg. uy y or the like*, 11 after this ydau with a stroke beneath it, 12 after this some letters cancelled, 13 some words omitted which in the text of the Laws are: ar bleit arall y tu arall yr ford yn nessat yr fford kyglaw, 14 MS. Kemeret, 15 MS. a<sup>t</sup>, 16 some letters cancelled, 17 e over the line, 18 h after a cancelled and r written above it.

leg. idaw.

judgment seat

an apparitor, a headle

leg. ringyll.

leg. nessaf.

*gosteg* silence, the proclaiming of silence in court  
*biu* of cattle; a standard of value  
*camlwrw* a fine, penalty for the lesser offences.

# A SUIT FOR LANDED PROPERTY 211

Odena guedi henne e dodir  
tellued<sup>1</sup> essev yu hene.<sup>2</sup>  
Gostec ar emays. Puipenac  
a thorro etelleued honno teyr  
biu<sup>3</sup> camluru a tal ne nau  
ugeint. Ar geyr adeweter  
guedi er ostec bot hunnu<sup>4</sup> en  
diuunyant er neb ay deweto  
ac yr keghaus edevether  
irporth ydau.

Guedi daruo eyste<sup>1</sup> en  
keureithaul mal y redewes-  
sam ny vchot ena e may  
yaun yr egnat deueduit  
wrth e dupleit ymdeve-  
dych o keureith weithion.  
Ac ena may yaun iregnat  
gouin yr<sup>2</sup> haulur puy de  
keghaus<sup>3</sup> di a puy de kanllau  
ac ena e may yaun<sup>4</sup> yr haulur  
ev henwi. Ac ena may  
yaun eregnat gouin ir haulur  
a dodycolli a kaffayl eneu pen  
vinteu. Ac ena ema yaun  
yr haulur<sup>5</sup> dodav heb eff.  
Ac ena may yaun eregnat<sup>6</sup>  
ac yr kanllau a sauant huy  
ydau ef en erenmay ef  
enidody arnadunthuy.<sup>7</sup> Ac

4. Odyna gwedy hynny y  
dodir tyllwed. Sef yw hynny, *stillness of*  
gostec ar y maes. Pwy  
bynnac a dorro y dyllwed  
honno, teir buw camlwrw a *5 ?*  
dal neu naw ugeint. Ar  
geir a dywetter gwedy yr *Pres. Subj. Pass.*  
ostec, bot hwnnw yn divwyn-  
yant yr neb ae dywetto, ac *profitless*  
yr kynghaws y dywetter yr 10  
porth idaw.

5. Gwedy darvo eisted yn  
gyvreithiawl, val y rydywed-  
assam ni uchot, yna y mae  
iawn yr ynat dywedut wrth y 15  
dwy bleit: "ymdywedwch  
o gyvreith weithyon." Ac *according to law*  
yna y mae iawn yr  
ynat ovyn yr hawlwr: "pwy  
dy gynghaws di a phwy dy 20  
ganllaw?" Ac yna y mae  
iawn yr hawlwr eu henwi.  
Ac yna y mae iawn yr ynat  
ovyn yr hawlwr: "a dody  
colli a chaffael yn eu pen 25 *X*  
wynteu?" Ac yna y mae  
iawn yr hawlwr dywedut,  
"dodaf," heb ef. Ac yna y  
mae iawn yr ynat ovyn yr  
kynghaws ac yr kanllaw, a 30

(Ch. 4). 1 u over the line, 2 h over the line, 3 i over the line, 4 after this  
did cancelled

(Ch. 5). 1 y over the line, 2 MS. hŷr, 3 ke over the line, 4 after this eregnat  
cancelled, 5 leg. haulur deueduyt, 6 add gouin yr kyghaus, 7 h over the line

*ym - dywedyd to discuss, argue*

212 A SUIT FOR LANDED PROPERTY

ena emay yaun<sup>8</sup> udunt huin-  
theu dewedvyt sauun.

5

Ac guedi hinny emay yaun  
eregnat gouin eramdiffenvr<sup>1</sup>  
puy dekeghaus ditheu apuy  
de kanllau. Ac ena emay  
10 yaun ydau entehu eu henwi.  
Ac ena emay yaun<sup>2</sup> yr egn-  
at gouin ydau entehu · a did  
ev kolli a kaffayl en eu pen  
Ac ena may yaun ydau  
15 entheu dewetuyt dodau heb  
ef. Ac ena emay iaun<sup>3</sup>  
eregnat devetvit wrth er-  
haulur · haul di weython de  
haul. Ac ena emay<sup>4</sup> yaun  
20 yhaulur<sup>5</sup> decreu.

Llema essit yaun yr haulur  
edewetuyd<sup>1</sup> menegi · yuot  
ef en briodaur ar etir hun-  
25 ema ardayar. Ac obit  
aameuho ydau ef yuot en  
briodaur · bot kanthau entheu  
a kathuo ybriodolder · o · ach  
ac edriu · hit emay digaun  
30 en ekeureyth. Ay reerru en

sav<sup>ant</sup> hwy idaw ef yn yr  
hyn y mae ef yn y dodi  
arnadunt hwy. Ac yna y  
mae iawn udunt hwynteu  
dywedut : “sav<sup>an</sup>.”

6. A gwedy hynny y mae  
iawn yr ynat ouyn yr  
amdiffynnwr : “pwy dy  
gynghaws ditheu, a phwy dy  
ganllaw?” Ac yna y mae  
iawn ydau ynteu eu henwi.  
Ac yna y mae iawn yr ynat  
ovyn idaw ynteu, a dyd ef  
golli a chaffael en eu pen.  
Ac yna y mae iawn idaw  
ynteu dywedut : “dodaf,” heb  
ef. Ac yna y mae iawn  
yr ynat dywedut wrth yr  
hawlwr : “hawl di weithon  
dy hawl.” Ac yna y mae  
iawn yr hawlwr dechreu.

7. Llyma yssyd iawn yr  
hawlwr y dywedut, menegi y  
vot ef yn briodawr ar y tir  
hwynn yma ar dayar. Ac o  
byt a amheuo idaw ef y vot  
yn briodawr, bot ganthaw  
ynteu a gatwo y briodolder  
o ach ac edrif, hyt y mae  
digawn yn y gyvreith, ae

(Ch. 5). 8 after this yregnat cancelled

(Ch. 6). 1 e over a cancelled i, 2 over the line, 3 over the line ; after this  
irhaulur cancelled, 4 e over the line, 5 leg. yrhaulur

(Ch. 7). 1 MS. edewetduyd

3 Pl. Pres.  
of se. f. 216

1 Pl. Pres.

? 3 st. h. 2  
of dodi

Imper. 25  
of holi

= byd

descent  
lineage

cf. p. 216

briodawr  
prïprïe lary  
landowner

lineage, descent  
sufficient

agkeureithiaul yar ybriodol-  
der · ac osid ay hammehuho<sup>2</sup>  
emay ydau ef<sup>3</sup> ay guyr ·  
yreheru enagkeureithiaul.  
Ac essev emay entehu<sup>4</sup> endodi  
ar ekeureith deleu deuot en  
keureythaul traykeuen er lle  
ereherruyd en agkeureith-  
yaul<sup>5</sup> ohonau.

Oderuit bot rey adewetho  
dodi keythveid ac gwybed-  
yeid or un pleyt Ninni  
adewedun egellir ene war-  
handawer ateb er amdiffen-  
hur.

Heb amdiffenhur<sup>1</sup> myuy  
essit briodaur o acch<sup>2</sup> ac  
edriu · ac esseu eduyf en  
guarchadu empriodolder<sup>3</sup> val  
emay goreu edeleauvy y-  
guarchadu · ac osid ay  
hamehuo y · am<sup>4</sup> henni  
emay ymy ageidu digaun<sup>5</sup>  
bot en guir adewedau. A  
thitheu obuosty ema ty hay-  
thost en keureythaul odema.  
Ac osid a hamehuo hinni ·  
emay ymy digaun aygyur.

ryyrru yn anghyvreithyawl  
y ar y briodolder. Ac osit  
ae hamheuo, y mae idaw ef  
digawn ae gwyr y ryyrru yn  
anghyvreithyawl. Ac yssef  
y mae ynteu yn dodi ar y  
gyvreith, dyllyu dyvot yn  
gyvreithyawl traegvyn yr lle  
y ryyrrwyd yn anghyvreith-  
yawl ohonaw.

8. O dervyd bot rei a  
dywetto doddi ceidweid a  
gwybydyeid or un bleit,  
Ninni a dywedwn y gellir,  
yny warandawer ateb y<sup>15</sup>  
amdiffynnwr.

9. Heb yr amdiffynnwr:  
“ Mivi yssyd briodawr o ach  
ac edrif. A sef yd wyf yn  
gwarchadw vym priodolder,  
val y mae goreu y dylaf y  
warchadw . Ac osit ae ham-  
heuo imi hynny, y mae imi  
ageidw<sup>x</sup> digawn bot yn wir a  
dywedaf. A thitheu, o buost  
ti yma, ti a aethost yn  
gyvreithyawl odyma. Ac osit  
a hamheuo hynny y mae imi  
digawn ae gwyr.”

(Ch. 7). 2 the third *h* over the line, 3 digawn has probably been omitted, 4 *h* over the line, 5 *r* over the line

(Ch. 9). 1 *leg.* eramdiffenhur, 2 there is something like an *h* over the second *c*, 3 the third letter seems to have been altered to *p*, 4 *y* am; *leg.* y mi? 5 *leg.* digaun ageidu

x 3 *sp.* Pres. Ind. of cadw to keep, preserve, maintain

v. gyrru  
if there is

3 *sp.* Pres. of  
5 gyrrhod (?)  
to appeal to the  
law  
to have a right to

10  
3 *sp.* F. v. of darfod  
Pl. of ceidwad witness  
“ gwybydyeid an  
Page - witness

20 to guard, protect  
a *fi*.

25 digawn a geidw

214 A SUIT FOR LANDED PROPERTY

Ninni adewedun ket darfo  
eramdiffenur rohi atheb kin  
oyholý ev or haulur bot en  
anolo er ateb· eny warandao  
5 ef· er haul ac odena atebet.

Ac guedy darfo vduent  
euduy kegheussayth maleded-  
wedassam ni vchot. Gouenet  
10 er egnat udunt aydygaun hyn  
adewedassant. Ac gouenet  
udunt auennant guellau eu  
kykeussayth.<sup>1</sup> Ac obit ay  
menno gather<sup>2</sup> ydau. Ac  
15 onibit ay menno kyemeret  
eregnat euduy kegheussayth<sup>3</sup>  
a dadkanet huy. A guedy  
estadkano aynt eregneyt  
allan. ar effeyryhet y gyt  
20 ac vy· a. Righyll ygyt aguy·  
hy eu kadv. Rac douot  
dynyon ywarandu<sup>4</sup> arnadunt.  
Oderuit idyn deuot ywaran-  
dau arnadunt huntheu<sup>5</sup> ev  
25 adely talu teyrbuy kamluru  
hir brenhin. Ac o bit ebrenin  
enemays· ev adele talu kam-  
luru deudeplic am hinny.  
Ac ena guedy edeystedont  
30 huy emay iaun· yr effeyryat·  
guedya duy ydangos oduy

10. Ninni a dywedwn, kyt  
darffo yr amdiffynnwr roi  
atted kyn noe holi ef or  
hawlwr, bot yn anolo yr  
atted, yny warandao ef yr  
hawl, ac odynd attebet.

11. A gwedy darffo udunt  
eu dwy gynghheussaeth, val y *a pleading*  
dywedassam ni uchot, gov-  
ynet yr ynat udunt, ae  
digawn yr hyn a dywedas-  
sant, a gouynet udunt a  
vynnant gwellau eu kyng-*to improve, amend*  
heussaeth. Ac o byd ae  
mynno, gatter idaw. Ac ony  
byd ae mynno, kymeret yr  
ynat eu dwy gynghheussaeth,  
a dadganet hwy. A gwedy *recapitulate rehearse, restate*  
as dadgano, aent yr yneit  
allan, ar effeiryet y gyt ac  
wy, ar ringhyll y gyt ac wy  
y eu kadw, rac dyvot dynyon  
y warandaw arnadunt. O  
dervyd y dyn dyvot y waran-  
daw arnadunt wynteu, ef a  
dyly talu teirbuw kamlwrw *a fine*  
yr brenhin. Ac o byd y  
brenhin yn y maes, ef a dyly  
talu kamlwrw deudyplic am *double two-fold*  
hynny. Ac yna gwedy yd  
eistedont hwy y mae iawn *3 Pl. Pr. Subj.*

(Ch. 11). 1 *ky* over the line, 2 *h* over the line, 3 *ssa* over the line, 4 *leg*.  
ywarandaw, 5 the second *h* over the line

geir cyfarch a supplementary question asked after the trial, before the verdict is given.

A SUIT FOR LANDED PROPERTY 215

er yaun<sup>6</sup> udunt. Akanu onadunt huyntheu eu pader Ac guedy epader emay yaun yr egnat dadkanu eduykeg-hessaith eylweyth.

Ac o deruit bot enreyt<sup>1</sup> egeyr keuarch. Elleger deu oy ouyn. Ac obit reynt yr bleyt egouener egeyr keuarhc ydy vrth kemyrith keghor<sup>2</sup> aynt tuy kan kanyat<sup>3</sup> yr egneyt hycu keghor ac essev edant ynŷuer ebuant en eukehussayth heb auo muy agwas yr argluyd yggt aguy yeu kadu Rac deuod neb yeu keghor yggt ac huy ac odau neb atadunt ay keghoro talet ef kamluru er brenin a bot en anolo ekeghor. Ac guedy edarfo ekeghor deu<sup>ent</sup> edeu hinny ar eregneyt<sup>4</sup> adatkanent egneyth<sup>5</sup> ekeghor.

Oderuit nabo reynt urth eyr keuarch yaun yu gadayl udunt vintheu eu ardelu

yr effeiryat gwediaw Duw y dangos o Duw yr iawn udunt. A chanu onadunt wynteu eu pader. A gwedy y pader y mae iaun yr ynat dadganu y dwy gyngheussaeth eilweith.

12. Ac o dervyd bot yn reit y geir kyvarch, ellynger deu oe ovyn. Ac o byd reit 10 yr bleit y govyner y geir kyvarch idi wrth gymryt kynghor, aent wy gan ganyat yr yneit y eu kynghor. Ac yssev yd ant, y niver y buant 15 yn eu kyingheussaeth, heb a vo muy, a gwas yr arglwyd y gyt ac wy y eu kadw rac dyvot neb y eu kynghor y gyt ac wy. Ac o daw neb 20 attadunt ae kynghoro, talet ef gamlwrw yr brenhin, a bot yn anolo y kynghor. A gwedy y darffo y kynghor, deu<sup>ent</sup> y deu hynny ar yr 25 yneit a dadganent yr yneit y kynghor.

13. Odervyd naboreit wrth eyr kyvarch, iawn yw gadael udunt wynteu eu hardelw, a 30 a voucher

*caused permission, consonant*

*v. p. 214*

(Ch. 11). 6 u over the line

(Ch. 12). 1 some MSS. add wrth, 2 h over the line, 3 y over the line, 4 the second e over the line, 5 n over the line; leg. eregneyt



mwynhaŷu to use, employ, enjoy, profit  
defnydd m. material, element, substance, cause; pl. defnyddiau,  
defnyddwyr witnesses, guarantors etc. in a lawsuit

## 216 A SUIT FOR LANDED PROPERTY

agerru deu youyn puy eu-  
gubideyt · ac eu kedweyt · a  
phale emaynt · odewedant eu  
bot ene mays · munaher vynt ·  
5 odewedant<sup>1</sup> eubot en<sup>2</sup> un ke-  
mut ac vy rodher oyd trideu<sup>3</sup>  
udunt. Odewedant eubot en  
ereil kemud rodher oyd  
naunyeu udunt. Odewetant  
10 eubot egulat arall vynt<sup>4</sup> neu  
lanu neu trey eregthunt ac  
vy · oyt petheunos or did  
hunnu · os kin hanner did  
vit · os guedy hanner did  
15 petheonos odranoyth · ar did  
hennu endyd kolli akaffayal.  
Abot eguystlon egkarch<sup>5</sup>  
brenin · hit edid hunnu · ac  
erchi y paup deuot ay devni-  
20 dev kanthau edid hynnu ·  
hit ar etir. Kenebo duun  
kan edu bleyd · hinny. Neu<sup>6</sup>  
edyu endid keureit bar-  
nedic.

25

En etrededet guedi edele-  
her vyneb<sup>1</sup> iaun yu i paup  
eistet enelle mal ereystedus  
edid kint · ac obetant meiru  
30 rey or guir auu en ekeg-

gyrru deu y ovyn pwy eu  
guibydeyt ac eu keidweit, a  
pha le y maent. O dywedant  
eu bot yn y maes, mwynhaer  
wynt. O dywedant eu bot  
yn un kymwt ac wy, rodher  
oet tridieu udunt. O dywe-  
dant eu bot yn yr eil gymwt,  
rodher oet naw nieu udunt.  
O dywedant eu bot yg gwlat  
arall neu lanw neu drei  
yryngthunt ac wy, oet  
pythewnos or dyd hwnnw,  
os kyn hannerdyd y byd.  
Os gwedy hannerdyd,  
pythewnos o dranoeth, ar  
dyd hwnnw yn dyd kolli a  
chaffael. A bot y gwystlon  
yg karchar y brenhin hyt y  
dyd hwnnw. Ac erchi y  
bawp dyvot ae devnydeu  
ganthaw y dyd hwnnw hyt  
ar y tir. Kynnybo duungan y  
dwy bleit hynny, neud ydiw  
yn dyd kyvreith barnedic.

accordant  
agreeable

decided, fixed

14. Ynytrydyd dyd guedy  
y delher wyneb yn wyneb  
iawn yw y bawb eisted yn y  
lle, val y ryeistedws y dyd  
kynt. Ac o bydant meirw

(Ch. 13). 1 *ed* over the line, 2 over the line, 3 *e* over the line, 4 omitted  
in several MSS., 5 *leg.* karchar e, 6 written twice over; *leg.* neud

(Ch. 14). 1 *leg.* vyneb en vyneþ; there are remains of the missing words  
on the margin

Pres. Subj. Pass. of  
dyfod

Cynning to propose, prefer, suggest  
dodi yn mhen un to suggest, submit, entrust, hand over

## A SUIT FOR LANDED PROPERTY 217

kussaeith doder ereill en eu lle · a guedi er<sup>2</sup> eisteter ena emae yaunt yr haulur · kenic y devnidieu iam etestion ay keidveit<sup>3</sup> adeueduit evot ef en paraut. Ac ena emay yaun ir<sup>4</sup> amdifinnur gurtheb ac esev ateb a dere · deueduit yvot ef en paraut · ay defnetyeu kanhau val y hedeuis ac ena emae yaun yr brenin hercki dankos eguestelon en emays · kanys vint essit vechieu.<sup>5</sup> <sup>6</sup>Ac ena emay yaun ir egnat deuedut kosb er anostec · esseu eu hene teir biu camluru abot en anolo egeir adeueter. *punishment, fine*

rei or gwyr a vu yn y gyn-  
gheussaeth, dotter ereill yn  
eu lle. A gwedy yr eistether,  
yna y mae iawn yr hawlwr  
kynnic y devnydyeu y am y  
dystyon ae geidweit, a  
dyuedut y vot ef yn barawt.  
Ac yna y mae iawn yr  
amdiffynnwr gwrtheb. Ac  
yssef ateb a dyry, dyuedut  
y vot ef yn barawt, ae  
devnydyeu ganthaw, val y  
hedewis. Ac yna y mae  
iawn yr brenhin erchi dangos  
y gwystlon yn y maes;  
kanys wynt yssyd veichieu.  
Ac yna y mae iawn yr ynat  
dywedut kosb yr anostec.  
Sef yw hynny teir buw  
kamlwrw a bot yn anolo y  
geir a dywetter.

5 including (?)

8 answer, reply  
10 Prop. of dy-nodi  
to give

promised (adaw)

15  
ke. of each surety,  
guarantor

disturbance,  
disorder

Ac ena emae yaun ir haulur  
dodi em pen er eneyt pan niu  
effo adedeuis<sup>1</sup> en kentaf  
testion · akeitueit · a deleu  
ohonau enteu<sup>2</sup> muenhau en  
kentaf Ac ena emay yaun  
yr eneit erchi ydau enteu  
duyn y keditveit<sup>3</sup> ay testion

15. Ac yna y mae iawn yr  
hawlwr dodi ym pen yr yneit  
panyw efo a edewis yn  
gyntaf dystyon a cheidweit, 25  
a dylyu ohonaw ynteu eu  
mwynhau yn gyntaf. Ac  
yna y mae iawn yr yneit  
erchi idaw ynteu dwyn y

use

(Ch. 14). 2 some MSS. yd, 3 the second i over the line, 4 after this brenin cancelled, 5 kanis—vechieu interlined, in part on the margin and illegible, 6 there seems to be a lacuna here; some MSS. have: Ac ena gōedy dangosser y gōystlon y mae iāwn yr brenhin erchi yr righyll dodī gostec ar y maes

(Ch. 15). 1 leg. aedeuis, 2 leg. enten eu, 3 leg. keidveit

§155(a)(B)

breint (bruin, brein) m. privilege, prerogative; state, condition.  
tref - tadawg m. an inheritor

## 218 A SUIT FOR LANDED PROPERTY

y eu muinahu. Ac ena  
 emae yaun idau enteu eu  
 duin huy ene keuil<sup>4</sup> ef ac  
 eudangos· esseu eu rei  
 5 aedeueis<sup>5</sup> ef erei a enguis  
 en edit kyntaf Ny dele er  
 amdifennwr llessu yrun ona-  
 dunt kanivir<sup>6</sup> nabo da idau  
 adeueduit.<sup>7</sup> Ar hun a llesso  
 10 onatuunt kin guibot bet  
 aduedoent<sup>8</sup> bit sauedc<sup>9</sup>  
 hunu· er amdifenur aeil  
 gouin<sup>10</sup> aoes breint yr rei-  
 hinny. Ac obit doent rac-  
 15 dunt· esseu pa achau<sup>11</sup>  
 egeill ef gouin hinny vrth na  
 eill alldut bot en vybitiat ar  
 treftadauc. Ac na eill  
 gureic· ar gur. Ac ekit  
 20 ahene ni heill llauer o  
 deneon bot yn vibetiet nac  
 en kedueit heruit breint ar  
 amdifenur ni lluger arnau  
 deueduit hinny.

25

Oderuit ir amdifenur  
 readau testion auo gwell no  
 rei aedeuis er haulur· ae ouot  
 en guell yu breint ay o bot  
 30 en amlach Amennu ohonau

geidweit ae dystyon y eu  
 mwynhau. Ac yna y mae  
 iawn idaw ynteu eu dwyn  
 hwy yny kyvyl (?) ef ac eu  
 dangos. Sef yw rei a edewis  
 ef y rei a enwis yn y dyd  
 kyntaf. Ny dyly yr am-  
 diffynnwr llyssu yr un on- *to reject*  
 adunt, kany wyr na bo da  
 idaw a dywettont. Ar hwn  
 a lyssu onadunt cyn gwybot  
 beth a dywettont, bit sauedic *established fixed, valid*  
 hwnnw. Yr amdiffynnwr a  
 eill ovyn a oes breint yr rei  
 hynny. Ac o byd, doent *3<sup>rd</sup> Imp.*  
 racdunt. Sef pa achaws y  
 geill ef ovyn hynny, wrth  
 na eill alltut vot yn wyby- *eye-witness*  
dyat ar drewtadawc, ac na  
 eill gwreic ar wr. Ac y gyt  
 a hynny ny eill llauer o  
 dynyon vot yn wybydyet  
 nac yn geidweit herwyd  
 breint. Ar amdiffynnwr ny  
lwgyr arnaw dywedut hynny. *harm, damage disadvantage*

16. O deruyd yr amdiffyn-  
 nwr ryadaw tystyon a uo *a<sup>dan</sup> promise*  
 gwell nor rei a edewis yr  
 hawlwr—ae o vot yn well eu  
 breint ae oe bot yn amlach—

(Ch. 15). 4 some MSS. have kылh, 5 the second e over the line;  
 leg. aedewis, 6 the second i over the line, 7 leg. adeueduint, 8 o over  
 the line, 9 leg. sauedic, 10 i over the line, 11 the second a over the line

Cynghellawr m. a. chancellor, the king's principal steward or reeve  
ysgolherj scholar, clerk, priest

# A SUIT FOR LANDED PROPERTY 219

kannal hinny. Iaun eu<sup>1</sup>  
dangos aguedi dangosso ef  
etestion nityaun<sup>2</sup> yr haulur  
eu llessu vyntheu. Ena emai  
iaun yr enat gouin yr haulur  
may breint de destion dý.  
Ac ena emay yaunt yr haulur  
deueduit breint y testion : ae  
vntoe en veirri neu en  
kegheoron<sup>3</sup> ae vnteu en  
veneich<sup>4</sup> neu en ahtraon ae  
vnteu en efferiet neu en  
escoleicion ae vnteu en  
lleecion breinaul Guedi  
daruo ir enat gouen ir haulur  
breint etestion iaun eu yr  
enat gouin yr amdifenur  
breint y testion Ac ena  
emay yaunt yr amdiffennur  
deuedut ebreint goreu avo oy  
testion Ac ena emay yaunt  
yr enat datkanu deubrein  
yreduedasant eduypleit yeu  
testion.

Ena emay yaun yr enat  
gouin ir duipleit<sup>1</sup> a sauant  
huy hen erhen ededis en  
y dodien eu pen : llema paup  
or guebethit en deueduit

a mynnu ohonaw gynnal  
hynny, iawn yw eu dangos.  
A gwedi dangosso ef y  
dystion, nyt iawn yr hawlwr  
eu llyssu wynteu. Yna y 5  
mae iawn yr ynat ovyn yr  
hawlwr : "Mae breint dy  
dystyon di?" Ac yna y  
mae iawn yr hawlwr dywedut  
breint y dystyon, ae wynteu 10  
yn veiri neu yn gynghell-  
oryon, ae wynteu yn veneich  
neu yn athrawon, ae wynteu  
yn effeiryet neu ysgoleigyon,  
ae wynteu yn lleygion brein- 15  
niawl. Gwedy darvo yr  
ynat govyn yr hawlwr breint  
y dystyon, iawn yw yr ynat  
govyn yr amdiffynnur breint  
y dystyon. Ac yna y mae 20  
iawn yr amdiffynnwr dywe-  
dud y breint goreu a vo oe  
dystyon. Ac yna y mae  
iawn yr ynat dadganu deu  
vrent y rydywedassant y 25  
dwy bleit y eu tystyon.

17. Yna y mae iawn yr  
ynat ovyn yr dwy bleit a  
savant hwy yn yr hyn yd  
ydys yn y dodi yn eu pen. 30  
Llyma bawb or gwybydyet

*Cynnal to sustain,  
support, maintain*

*where is?*

*teachers*

*15 privileged*

*= X*

*= X*

*X*

(Ch. 16). 1 leg. eu eu, 2 t over the line, 3 leg. keghelloron, 4 MS. venich

Ch. 17). 1 There is a smudge between p and l

*pl. 9  
maer a  
steward,  
reeve*

dygryn hard, severe; a lêr, proof. dwyn yr dygryn to affirm on or on creirhau to cause to swear by relics

220 A SUIT FOR LANDED PROPERTY

- esauahant· llema popun or  
duipleit yn amheu guibytied  
y kilit nasdegant yr degin·  
ket as deuetoent ar eutauaut  
5 leuerit jaun eu yr eneit ena  
ev kreirhau· ac guedi askreir-  
hauont emay yaun vddunt  
menet allan. Ac edrych<sup>2</sup> er  
hyn jaunaf aueloent vrth a  
10 gluassant. Ac oguelhant bot  
en vell testion eneill rei noe  
gilit· diuarnent huy eguae-  
thafe testion. Oderuit bot en  
kestal eution· diuarner er  
15 amdifennur· kanys etheuis  
ef testion a vey guell noc  
aoet kan ellall. Ac nis  
cauas. Ac ena emay jaun  
yr egneit barnu deuot er  
20 haulur ar etir· ar e breint  
edoet pan kechuinuus<sup>3</sup> en  
agkaefreithiau yarnau  
yn dywedut y savant. Llyma  
bob un or dwy bleit yn  
amheu gwybydieit y gilyd  
nas dygant yr dygryn, kyt as  
dywettont ar eu tawawt  
leveryd. Iawn yw yr yneit  
yna eu kreirhau. A gwedy  
askreirhaont y mae iawn  
udunt vynet allan, ac edrych  
yr hyn iawnaf a welont wrth  
a glywassant. Ac o gwelant  
bot yn well testyon eneill rei  
noe gilyd, divarnent hwy y  
gwaethaf y dystyon. O  
dervyd bot yn gystal eu  
tystyon, divarner yr amdiff-  
ynnwr; kanys edewis ef  
tystyon a vei well noc a oed  
gan y llall, ac nys kauas. Ac  
yna y mae iawn yr ygneit <sup>gneit</sup>  
barnu dyvot yr hawlwr ar y  
tir, ar y breint yd oed pan  
gychwynws yn aghyvreithy-  
awl y arnaw.  
18. A gwedy hynny y  
mae iawn yr yneit provi y  
keidweit, y edrych a dwng <sup>x</sup>  
pob rei onadunt hwy bot yn  
briodawr y bleit y maent yn  
y chynhelu; a dywedut o  
geidweit pob rei eu bot yn

(Ch. 17). 2h over e, 3 h over the line

(Ch. 18). 1 leg. emay iawn, 4 MS. ekeuit

x hwng 3 sg. Pr. Ind. of hwng to swear, take an oath.

leg. tystyon y  
neill.

speak on  
verbal evidence

judge, decide  
against

judge, decide  
against

last sides

cilyaw to retreat, desert, fail

A SUIT FOR LANDED PROPERTY 221

vntheu yaun eu eucreirhau  
ar nep akellio y kedueit  
onaduunt y vrht ellu kollet  
etir· o seif ekeitueit or due-  
pleit kehedet yv· ar lle ebo  
kehedet deuhanner vit.

from

Ked barner ydau deuod  
yr tir· nikecuuin egur aoet  
ene mediant kynt erdau  
okeill kaffael· tu· atal· ydau  
en er un lle ac en kastal  
edeudir vrth na burir odena  
ef. Ac nideleir talu tir  
ambreinaul en lle tir abreint  
ohonau val kegkalloraith  
neu vaerony neu redit.

Ac ena emay yaun er  
egneit deuot traceukeuen y  
eu braudle ac ena emay  
yaun vdunt kemrit keder-  
nit a<sup>1</sup> bot vrth ebraut a  
kamrit mach areugober. Ac  
ena edeleant er eneit datcanu  
eduy kegheusaeh· a guedi  
hene datcanu eu uaraut<sup>2</sup> ac  
ena ebrenin adele redhau  
eguestelon· oeu carcar.

(Ch. 20). 1 leg. ar, 2 leg. braut

briodawr. Ac ot amheuir  
wynteu, iawn yw eu kreir-  
hau. Ar neb a gilio y geid-  
weit onadunt y wrth y llw,  
kollet y dir. O seif y keidweit 5  
or dwy bleit, kyhyded yw.  
Ar lle y bo kyhyded deu-  
hanner vyd.

Pres. Ind. Pass.  
amheuir to  
doubt, despair,  
call in question.  
an oath

equality, parity

divided in two equal halves

19. Kyt barner idaw dyvot  
yr tir, ny chychwyn y gwr a 10  
oed yn y medyant gynt  
yrdaw, o geill gaffael tu a  
thal idaw yn yr un lle ac yn  
gystal y deu dir, wrth na  
vwryr odyna ef. Ac ny 15  
dylyir talu tir ammreiniawl  
yn lle tir a breint ohonaw,  
val kynghelloraeth neu vae-  
roni neu rydit.

an equivalent?

because - - not (?)

without privilege

20. Ac yna y mae iawn yr 20  
yneit dyvot tracheukevyn y  
eu brawdle. Ac yna y mae  
iawn udunt kymryt kedernit  
ar vot wrth y vrawt, a  
chymryt mach ar eu gobyr.  
Ac yna y dylyant yr yneit  
dadganu y dwy gyngheu-  
saeth, a gwedy hynny dad-  
ganu eu brawt. Ac yna y  
brenhin a dyly rydhau y 30  
gwystlon o eu karchar.

25 a fee, pay

a pleading



## V. THE PRIVILEGE OF ST. TEILIO.

The following Latin Charter (Lib. Land., page 118) deals with the same subject, and illustrates the Welsh :

Privilegium Sancti Teliani est et ecclesiae suae Landaviae, datum sibi et omnibus successoribus suis in perpetuo a regibus istis et principibus Britannie, confirmatum apostolica auctoritate, cum omnibus legibus suis in se plenariis sibi et terris suis, libera ab omni regali servitio, sine consule, sine proconsule, sine conventu intus nec extra, sine expeditione, sine uigilanda regione. Et cum omni iustitia sua; de fure et furto, de rapina, de homicidio, de arsione, de rixa, de sanguine, de refugio uiolato ubique in terra sancti, de assultu uiarum et extra uias, de faciendo iudicio et patiendo, de omni populo Sancti Teliani in curia Landaviae; de communione aquae et herbae, campi et siluae populo ecclesiae Sancti Teliani; cum mercato et moneta in Landauia; cum applicatione nauium ubique per terras Sancti Teliani libera pro regibus et omnibus nisi ecclesiae Landaviae et episcopis eius. De opprobrio et omni iniuria quod rex Morcanhuc et sui homines fecerint episcopo Sancti Teliani et suis hominibus, idem rex Morcanhuc et sui homines rectum faciant episcopo et suis hominibus, et iudicium patiantur in curia Landaviae. Omnis lex quae fuerit regali, omnis etiam et in curia plenarie episcopali Landanensi.

Lŷmma ŷ cŷmreith ha  
brŷein eccluyŷ Teliau o  
lanntaf arodes breenhined  
hinn ha touŷssocion Cŷmrŷ  
5 ŷntrŷcŷguidaul dŷ eccluyŷ  
teliau hac dir escip oll gueti  
ef amcŷtarnedic o audurdaut  
papou rumein ŷ holl cŷfreith  
didi hac dŷ thir· hac di dair·  
10 rŷd o pop guasanaith bre-  
ennin bŷdawl· heb mair·  
heb cŷghellaur· heb cŷhoith·  
dadlma ŷmeun gulat hac nŷ  
dieithŷr· heb luyd· heb  
15 gauaŷl· heb guŷlma ŷcŷf-  
reith idi ŷnhollaul· o leitŷr  
o latrat· o treis· odŷnnŷorn·

Llyma y gyvreith a breint  
eglwys Deilaw o Lanndaf, a  
rodes y brenhined hynn a  
thywŷsogyon Cymry yn dra- <sup>eternal</sup>  
gywydawl y eglwys Deilaw  
ac yr escyp oll gwedy ef, <sup>confined,</sup>  
amgadarnedic o awdurdawt <sup>ratified,</sup>  
pabeu Ruvein. Y holl  
gyvreith idi ac y thir ac y  
dayar; ryd o bob gwasanaeth  
brenhin bydawl; heb vaer,  
heb gynghellawr, heb gyhoed <sup>cyhoed</sup>  
dadylva y mewn gwlat ac yn  
y dieithŷr; heb luyd, heb  
auael, heb wylva. Y chyv-  
reith idi yn hollawl o leidyŷr,  
o ladrat, o dreis, o dynyorn,

dyn-y-orn (cf. Gr.  
duin-organ), homicide, murder

<sup>④</sup> dadyd-fa a meeting-place, court  
llu-yd a hosting, military expedition  
gafael a seizing, holding; seizure  
gwyl-fa festival, watch, ward



cynllwyn an ambush, waylaying  
losg arson  
dirwy b. a fine, mulct

cangwyl a fine, penalty  
llydaw a host, household, community

THE PRIVILEGE OF ST. TEILIO

223

o cynluyn hac o losc· o  
amryson canguaýt aheb-  
guaýt· ý diruý haý camcul  
ýndi didi yn hollaul· o dorri  
naud ýnn lann hac ýn-  
dieýthýr lann· orachot ýnn  
luhýn hac dieithýr luhýn·  
o cýrch ý popmýnnic artir  
teliau haý guir· haý braut  
dý lýtu ýr ecluýs ygundý  
teliau ýnn lantaf· hac ný lýs·  
dufýr ha guell· hac choýt ha  
maýs ýncýfrytin dý lýtu  
teliau· cýfnofut habathori-  
aýth ýnn lanntaf hac aperua  
ardir teliau dýr loggou adis-  
cýnno nýthir ý pop mýnnic  
ýt uoý rýd rac brennin arac  
paup namýn dý teliau aý  
eccluýs lantam· ha dý escýp·  
har mefýl har sarhaýt har cam  
har ennuet a gunech<sup>1</sup> brenn-  
hin morcannhuc hay gur haý  
guas dý escop teliau hac dý  
gur hac dý guas· dýuot  
brennhin morcannhuc ý-  
gundý teliau ýn lanntaf· dý  
gunethur guir ha cýfreith·  
ha diguadef braut xdiam  
ý cam a diconher dý escop  
teliau ha dý gur ha dý guas·  
ýthir haý daýr dý luyd  
dý uuner digauaýl· ha pop

o gynllwyn ac o losc, o amry-  
son gan waet ac heb waet.  
Y dirwy ae chamgwyl yndi  
idi yn hollawl o dorri nawd  
yn llann ac yn diethyr llann,  
o ragot yn llwyn ac diethyr  
llwyn, o gyrch [ ]  
ar dir Teilaw. Ae gwir ae  
brawt y deulu yr eglwys yg  
Gwndy Teilaw yn Llandaf  
ac yny llys. Dwvyr a gwellt  
a choet a maes yn gyffredin  
ý deulu Teilaw. Cyvnewit  
a bathoriaeth yn Llandaf, ac  
aberya ar dir Teilaw yr  
llongeu a discynno yny thir  
pa le bynnac y bo, ryd  
rac brenhin a rac pawb  
namyn y Deilaw ac eglwys  
Landaf ac y hescyp. Ar  
mevyl ar sarhaet ar cam ar  
enywet a wnel brenhin Mor-  
gannac ae wr ae was y escop  
Teilaw ac y wr ac y was,  
dyvot brenhin Morgannac y  
Wndy Teilaw yn Llandaf y  
wneuthur gwir a chyvreith a  
diodef brawt yam y cam a  
x digonher y escop Teilaw  
ac y wr ac y was. Y thir ae  
dayar di luyd divuner  
diavael. A pob cyvreith a  
vo y vrenhin Morgannac yn

a quarrel

break, violate

5

justice, right

lydaw

10

gross

coin, merchandise

mintage, mint

harbour, harborage

15

?

gamel 38. B.  
Sulj.

law, right

Pres. Sulj. Pass. of  
digaun to be  
able, effect do,  
30 accomplish  
exempt from  
allegation to a  
lord

mefyl f. to m. disgrace, shame, insult

sarhaed f. an insult, affront

cam wrong, injustice

enywed damage, injury

di-afael exempt from seizure

cyfreith auo dý brennin [y] lys, eu bot<sup>1</sup> yn hollawl y<sup>1</sup> *oll*  
 morcannuc ýn lýt · ou bot escop Teilaw yn y lys ynteu.  
 oll ýn hollaul dý escop teliau Ae vot yn emelldigedic ac *accused*  
ný lýt yntou · haý bot yn yscumunedic y neb ae  
 5 ýnemelldicetic hac ýn ýscu- torro ac ae divanwo<sup>x</sup> y breint  
 munetic ýr neb aitorro hac hwnn, ac ef ae blant wedy  
 aý dimanuo ý brýeint hunn · ef. Yn vendigedic ac ef ae  
 hac ef haý plant guetý ef. blant ae enrydedockao<sup>o</sup> y  
 Hýnn bendicetic hac ef haý breint hwnn ac ae katwo.  
 10 plant aý enrydedocao ý- Amen.  
 breint hunn hac aý cat(6o).<sup>2</sup>  
 Amen.

1. leg. gunel. 2. 6o added in later hand.

X 3rd sg. Pres. Subj. of di-faw (O.V. dimanu) to disparage, slight  
 o 3rd. sg. Pres. Subj. of enrydedu to celebrate

VI. MORAL VERSES.

Kalan gaeaf, kalet graŵn, grain, "barren's"  
 deil ar gychŵyn, llynnwynn llawn: a pool  
 y bore gynp noe vynet "the morning before his group was to him who  
 gwae a ymdiret y estraŵn. trusts a stranger"

Kalan gayaf, kein gyfrin; a confidant "fine is a secret shared"  
 kyfret awel a dryckin: (<drag him) foul weather 5  
 gŵeith keluyd yŵ kedu rin.

Kalan gayaf, cul hydod, pl. of hyd a stag  
 melyn blaen bedd, gŵedd hauot: gwe dŵ deserted, desolate, lonely  
 gŵae a haed meuyt yr bychot. a trifle 10

Kalan gayaf, crŵm blaen gŵrysc, the smaller branches of a tree  
 gnaŵt o benn dirieit teruysc: trouble, conflict, uproar  
 lle ny bo daŵn ny byd dyc. "where there is no natural gift there will  
 be no learning"

Kalan gaeaf, garŵ hin, weather  
anhebic y gynteuin: beginning of summer (Er. atēumcin)  
 namwyn Duŵ nyt oes dewin. a magician "diviner" 15

Kalan gaeaf, kein gyfreu<sup>(\*)</sup> x  
 adar, byrr dyd, ban cogeu: pl. of cog a cuckoo  
 trugar daffar Duŵ goreu. ✓ "the merciful providence of God is best"

Kalan gayaf, kalet cras, "what is parched is hard" 20  
 purdu bran, buan o vras; "swift is the sturdy"  
 am gŵymp hen chwerdit gŵen gŵas. "the youth laughs when the old  
 man stumbles"

awynt m. a fall

(\*) kyfren 'words, song' v. *Cann llywarch Hen*. p. 162.  
 (cf. p. 229 infra)

39. Pn. Ind. of garri to be  
angry, from kindness

Kalan gaeaf, cul kerwyt, < carw; a plur. or collective termination?  
gwae wann pan syrr; byrr vyd byt:  
gŵir gŵell hegarŵch no phryt. "comeliness"

"the plough is in the  
furrows"  
5

Kalan gayaf, llŵm godeith, a ~~hau~~ boufia  
aradyr yn rych, ych yg gweith: an or  
or kant odit kedymdeith. "from a hundred scarcely a  
friend"

rihyd splendour, splendid? rhwyssg  
amnad skilful, fine  
 ? adfel :? powerful, strong

227

[of Lewis, Ilen Gerddi Crefyddol, pp. 11-13]

# VII. DOOMSDAY.

	Deus Duó <u>delwat</u> ,	creator	< delw + -iad
leg. gwlad	Góledic, góaed <u>neirthyat</u> .	a strengthener, stay	
	Crist Jessu góyliat,	a guardian	
sway	Róysc <u>rihyd</u> amnat	?	
?	Aduelach <u>kaffat</u> .	pret. pass. of cappel to get p 145	5
	Nym gónel heb ranned		
	Moli dy trugared.		
	Ný dyfu yma,		
	Góledic, dy gynna.	gynna, equally good, peer	v. W.G. 246
	Ny dyfu, ný dyfyd		10
	Neb kystal a Douyd.		
	Ny ganet yn dyd plúyó	people	
	Neb kystal a Duó.		Dwyw
	Nac nyt adef	adef to admit, acknowledge, allow	
	Neb kystal ac ef.		15
	Vch nef, is nef		
	Nyt góledic namyn ef.		
	Vch mor, is mor		
	Ef an creóys. h	creu to create; -wys v. p 132(d)	1 [Ior]
v. p. 91	Pan dyffo Deós,		20
v. p. 93	Ef an gwnaho maór trús.	= trust noise?	
	Dyd braót yn echwrys.	violent, fierce	
	Kennadeu o drús		
	Gwynt a mor a than,		
	Luchet a tharyan,		25
	Eiryf ab <sup>1</sup> góengan.	white and fair	
a tale, people	Lóyth byt yg griduan	gridfan to groan, a groaning	
{ Fut. Ind. Pass.	Ergelaór, dygetaór lláóhethan.*	Fut. Ind. Pass. of dwyn to take, carry, bring	
{ of er-gelu to hide	Ergelhaór mor a syr <sup>2</sup> ,	capture p 129 (u). "will be led"	

1. leg. eiry fab? 2. leg. ser.

\* = llwyethan one of the constellations (a popular etymology for herethan) but  
 leg. Engelawr [huan] 'the sun will be hid' see Lewis.

? \* crynu to tremble, make

228

# DOOMSDAY

		Pan discynho Pater	
a meeting, dispute, suit, judgment		Y dadyl ae nifer,	a number, host, retinue
pl. of corn horn, trumpet		A chyrn* gopetror	go-bedn-on the four corners (of the world)
		Ac ennynnu mor.	to bundle, fire; be inflamed
§ 152	5	Llôyth byt llosetaôr	will be burned § 130 ? lloseter/ marwar
		Hyny uoynt marwaôr,	cinders
§ 130 (359. Fut.)		Loscâb ynyal ran	desert, wild
		Rac y vaôr varan.	baran wrath, fury
		Ef tynho aches	flood-tide (& L. accessus)
		Rac y varanres.	baran-res (rank of soldiers, host) v. Lewis p. 152
		Diffurn dyd reges	ebb-tide; adversity
was to him who		Gôae ae harhoes.	359. pres. of aros to await, expect, wait
359. pr. subj. of tardu to flee, run away, start		Ef tardho talaôr;	? pl. of tal (= "myryddedd" yma ? Lewis)
tardid 359. pr. ind. of tardu		Terdit nef y laôr.	= falls
rud red, ruddy		Gôynt rud dygetaôr	v. l. 28
15 outside of, beyond?		Ech y gadôynaôr.	pl. of cadwyn chain
		Neu byt mor wastat	
		Mal pan great.	pres. pass. of creu, to create
Saint Peter		Seith Pedyr ae dywaôt,	§ 133 (b)
		Dayar diwarnaôt.	359. fut. of di-farnu to judge, decide against
		Dywaôt duô Sadôrn	on Saturday
		Dayar yn vn flôrn.	a furnace
		Sadôrn vore rôyd	ruyd easy, prosperous, favourable
		In gônaho ny Culôyd.	Culwyô God
359. fut. § 152 n. 2		Tir bydaôt tywyd,	tywyô a tempest, storm
25 to di to melt; also		Gôynt y todo gôyd.	gwyô wood, trees
steep, soak		Ebryn pop dyhed,	?
		Pan losco mynyded.	
		Atuyd triganed	a trumpet blast?
		A chyrn rac rihed.	? tag. rhiedd = his Majesty ? Lewis
adfyô 359. fut. of ad-fod to exist, be		Kyfoethaôc ae henuyn,	359. pr. ind. of anfon send, dispatch
30 powerful, wealthy		Mor a tir a llyn.	
		Atuyd cryn dygryn	terror

a trembling, quaking

A dayar gychwyn.

Ac uch pop mehyn

A maró mein uudyn.

Eryf argelúch

Ac enynnu llúch.

Ton aghyolúch,

Taryan ymrythúch.

\* Teithyáoc afar m. grief

Ac eryf tróy alar

Ac enynnu tróy var

Rwg nef a dayar.

Pan dyffo Trindaót

Y maes maestaót,

Lu nef ymdanaó,

Lóyth llydan attaó,

Kyrd a cherdoryon,

A chathleu egylyon.

Drychafant o vedeu;

Eirant o dechreu.

Eirant kón coet,

Ar gymeint adoet.

A rewinyóys mor

A wnant maór gaór,

Pryt pan dyffo

Ef ae góahano.

" Y saól a uo meu,

Ymchoelant o deheu.

A digonóy kamwed,

Ymchaelent y perthgled.

Ponyt erlys dy gyfreu\*

A lefeir dy eneu?

Dy vynet yn du hynt yn nanheu

Yn tywyíl heb leuereu.

an earthquake

place, country? (dimin of ma 'place': Lewis)

(ludyn) ?

concealment, seclusion

a lake

5

\* but v. Lewis

galar sorrow

bar m. wrath, anger

10

38f. Br. Subj. of dyffo § 141, n. 6.

= field of judgment. But v. Lewis 144-5.

§§ 53, 164

15

cyrd pl. of cyrd craft, art, song

caithl a song, lay,  
y can

It will rise; v.  
RE VI, 27

when

those § 77

canweddau, vigils

= nonne § 240

v. Lewis.

||

ad-ood appointed time; destiny, fate

38f. pret. ind. act. of rewinyan to cause to perish, destroy,  
ruin  
gôr?

25

deigwin, 138f. pr. digon of to be able, effect, do, accomplish

= parth-gled left-hand side

er-lysu to reject, deny (? See Lewis)

30

pl. of nant a valley

pl. of lleufer light

\* hyfreu words, song v. Cam hlywarch Hen, p. 162  
(cf. p. 225 supra).



- Ac ym oed y ereu, ? (g)leirau  
 Ac ym oed i iei<sup>th</sup>eu,  
 Ac ym oed i ganwlat a hundred countries  
 Ac eu cant lloneit. fill, the full of anything  
 Canu<sup>e</sup>t gŵlat pressent the present world  
 Nŷ bum heb gatwent. cadwent battle, fight, contest  
 Oed mynych kyfar chwerŷ trouble, anger  
 Yrof am<sup>1</sup> kefynderŷ. <sup>ŷ d</sup> cousin  
 Oed mynych kyrŷscŷydat a quarrel, contention?  
 Yrof y am kywlat. compatriot  
 Oed mynych kyflafan an outrage, slaughter  
 Yrof i ar truan.  
 Am goryŷ hŷn vyth;  
 Nym gŷnaei dyn byth. 3<sup>rd</sup> sg. Imp. v. Conditional  
 Am gyrrŷys yg croc,  
 A wy<sup>d</sup>ŷn yn oc. ?  
 Am gyrrŷys ym pren  
Dipynŷys ym pen.  
Tafaŷ ti vyn deu troet, 2<sup>nd</sup> sg. Imperat. meaning?  
 Mor tru eu hadoet. ad-oed appointed time; destiny, fate.  
 T<sup>aua</sup>ŷ dy 'r hoenet, = "t<sup>aua</sup>la di mor boenus yw esgym  
 Escyrn vyn traet. by nhraed"  
 T<sup>aua</sup>ŷ dy vyn dŷy vreich;  
Ny ny dybyd eu beich. § 141  
 T<sup>aua</sup>ŷ dy vyn dŷy yscŷyd;  
 Handit mor dyuyd. v. Lewis  
 T<sup>aua</sup>ŷ dy 'r cethron a spike  
 Y myŷn vyg callon.  
 T<sup>aua</sup>ŷ dy gethraŷt leg. gethrat < cethr 'nail'  
 Yr<sup>wg</sup> vyn deu lygat.  
 T<sup>aua</sup>ŷ yr da allat,  
 Coron drein ym iat. iad the upper part of the head  
 T<sup>aua</sup>ŷ dy oestru,  
 1. MS. eim.

= canfed hundredth,  
hundredth part 5

between me; § 53 10

3<sup>rd</sup> sg. Pr. of gan-fod,  
 overcome, conquer

15  
 1<sup>st</sup> sg. Imp. of gwybod

dybydd to hang down

Sad, wretched 20

v. Lewis

25

v. Lewis

v. Lewis

\* Lewis: = "O Dywysog, ni wyddem mai ti a grogem. Dywysog nef a phob gwlad, ni wyddem ymblle y byddolit. Pe baem ni'n gwybod hynny, Grist, fe giblem oddi wrthyf."

# DOOMSDAY

231

A wanpŷt vyn tu.

gwanpwyd past ind. pass. of gwan to pierce  
§134 (f)

Teu yŷ chitheu

Mal yr yŷch llaw deheu.

lŷch nŷ byd madeu

Vy gwan a bereu."

ber a spike, lance. 5

\* "A wledic, ny wydyem

1 Pl. Imperf. of gwybod

Pan oed ti a grogem.

Gŵledic nef, gŵledic pop tut,

and people, country  
v. Lewis.

Nŷ wydem ni, Grist, tut vyhut.

Bei ath ŷybydem,

10

Crist, ath athechem."

"Nyt aruollir gŵat

arfall to entertain, receive

Gan lŷth eissyfflat.

? occurred (v. Lewis)

Digonsaŷchi anuat

an-fad evil, crime

Yn erbyn Dofydyat.

Dofydyad the hard

15

Can mil egylyon

Yssyd imi yn tyston,

A doeth ym kyrchaŷ

to fetch, bring

Gŵedy vyg crogaŷ.

created f. of crenhŷd blood-stained, gory  
20

Yg croc yn greulet

to succour, help, rescue

Myhun ym gŵaret.

cryd a trembling, tremor

Yn nefoed bu cryt,

Pan ym crogysst.

time requires crogysst

Pan orelwis Keli

God

Dy Culŷd vch keli.

Culŷd God cell the heavens  
25

A chenŷch deu Luan

cyran a first or chief part; a leader

Ragof y deu gynran,

A deu lyfyr yn ach llaw

Yn eu darllaw.

to read

Nys deubi ryrys

?

30

Rygossŷy rygossys.

?

Ac aŷch bi wynnyeith

gwynnyeith = cosb, dial (< l. vindicta)

Gŵerth aŷch ynuyt areith.

ynfyd foolish areith a speech

= that it was  
(v. Lewis)

if we had known this  
(v. Lewis)

= derbynir,  
croesewir

digonsaŷch : 2 Pl.  
Pres. of digawn to be  
able, effect, do,  
accomplish

grelwis 399 pretindat  
to cry on

q gon-als  
call aloud  
eq. Dyw, old form  
of Dwy ? §53

399. Fut. of dyfod

lyddel ichwi, cerch  
li: Fut. §152 n.2)

= cherwydd, alleged

First Ind. Pass. of caeu  
to shut, close.

Perf. sg. 3 of seilaw to  
found, establish; remain?

5

llewydhu to shine;  
leg. llewydhu? § 144

sign, number  
the present world 10

cf. awch li 231, 32  
cyt though § 205

orig a short hour  
(dimin. of awr.)

Kayator y dyleith "clo neu far ar ddwr" death  
Arnaŵch y vffern lleith."

Crist Jessu uchel ry seilas trycha[n] mil  
blŷdyned,

Er pan yttyŵ ym buched. buched life, salvation

Ac eil mil kyn croc

Yt lewydhu Enoc. = ? Both(s) of Enoc

Neu nyt atwen drut drud bold, arrogant, wicked

Meint eu heissyllut. progeny, followers

Gŵlat pressent yth ermut, ?

A chyt abch bei odit. scarcely, hardly, rarely

Trychan mil blŷdyned namyn vn

Oric odit buched tragywyd. tragywyd eternal

gwrdd strong, vehement; gwrδ-fleidd a fierce wolf.

gar - diwng very steady, steadfast

bar m. wrath, anger

gordwy oppression, violence

gystung to lower, overcome 233

go-leith to dissolve

brwng stout

di-wreid an uproaching

gar-flwg very severe, austere

aer-glyw dealing wounds in

aer-lew lion of battle

lleith death

brwyg strong, impetuous, swift

## VIII. TO GWENWYNWYN.

Here is to me,  
Glewe, 1558  
note 1.

n. a ruler  
fierce

Ysym arglōyd gōrd, gordiūōng y var,

(gordōy neb nyū hystōng)

glyō diwreid gōrdvleid<sup>1</sup> gorvlōg,

gleō dywal, ny dal, ny dōg.

nyw v. 649(c)

39. Pr. Ind. of tyga to swear, take an oath

6154 A(a) Yssit ym arglōyd aerglōyf ner nerthuaōr, m. a lord 5

aerlleō llāōr,<sup>2</sup> llāōch niuer,

ny oleith lleith yr llyfyrdēr,

ny odef cam, nyw kymer.

protection

cowardice

golden-sword-red

pl. of llafn a blade

3 Pr. Ind. of tali to

cut, diminish

3 Pr. Ind. of cron to

bind, amass, accumulate

a protector

song, panegyric

Yssit ym arglōyd eurgledyfrud gaōr,

breise llafnaōr brōysc llōfrud,

ny daōl ōrth ae maōl maōruud,

ny graōn golut, nyw golud.

a slayer of men  
Caver giant, mighty man  
(lfr. red-handed)  
10

3 Pr. Ind. of moli to praise, commend

go-leud to hinder, obstruct

Yssit ym arglōyd argledyr anaō beird,

am bardeir yn eidaō,

am karyat kadarn arnaō,

am kerd, am kynnelō ohonaō.

poetry, muse

15

pattern, example, model

Yssit ym arglōyd argledyr cat a tharyf, ? toryf multitudes, host

a theruyn ar gywlat, cy-wlad a neighbouring territory, borderland

klotuaōr llāōr, llāō agllaeat, anghacod unclosed, open, liberal

koryf toryf, teruysc oe anghat.

hand 20

gwrdd a ruler

Yssit ym wledic wlat amdiffyn llary,

(llawer dyn ae govyn)

?(v. Voc).

gwalchlan wosparth warth wrthryn,

gōalpar gōanar Gōenwynwyn.

a chief, lord.

sharp-spearred

1 r over d 2 r over 6

maer-fud great gain or advantage.

coryb kommel, saddle-bow; metaph. stay, support.

llyfysg trouble, conflict, uproar.

gwasparth support

gwarth disgrace, shame

gwrthryn resistance, opposition

## IX. CYNDELW TO RHYS AB GRUFFUDD.

(\*) BLACK BOOK, page 39*b*.

Assuŷnaw naut Duv diamhev<sup>1</sup> ŷ daun  
 ae donŷauc wiffinnhev.  
 ar dŷ guir erir aerev.  
 ar dŷ gulad guledic dehev.

- 5      Assuinaf archaf eirchad ŷmgelwir.  
          naut kŷuir kŷgwastad.  
          ar dŷ drissev aer. drussad.  
          ar di drissaur gvaur gwen Vlad.

- Assuinaw archaw arch vaur ŷ periw.  
 10      a peris new a Paur.  
          naut rac dŷ uar car kertaur.  
          ar dŷ pirth ar di porthaur.

- Assuinaf naut haut haelon deheuparth  
          diheuporth kertorion.  
 15      ath turuf oth tarianogion.  
          ath torŷf oth teern meibon.

- Assuinaf ŷch naut na cheluch ŷch porth.  
          can perthin attreguch.  
          gostecwir Iis gosteguch.  
 20      gostec beirt bart aglŷwuch.

         Assuinaf naut haut<sup>2</sup> haelvonet worsset.  
          nŷth orsseiw teernet.  
          ar dŷ torif corŷf kŷwrisset  
          ar dŷ teulu teilug met.

1. MS. diamehv.    2. MS. haut naut *with marks of transposition*.

# CYNDDELW TO RHYS AB GRUFFUDD 235

Metcuin ev gwiraud metkirn ae gwallav. *to serve liquor*  
*? gwalling to* ae gwellig in eurdirn.  
*distribute*  
 a gloev y ved in edirn.  
 a gliv deur. a glev teeirn.

Teernweilch Prïdein prýdaw ých priwger. 5  
 ých priwclod a digaw.  
 ých bart ých beirnad výtaw.  
 ých porth perthin ýv ataf.

Attep a ganaw ar canhuýw vý argluit.  
 ergliv. wi. can dothuif. 10  
 lleissaun liiw llew gliv glevrvit.  
 lleassa di var di bart wif.

Viw kertaure im ruw. ruis. morkimlout gurt.  
 ruisfirt kirt kert. vahaut.  
 assuin asserv herv hirvlat. 15  
 assuinaf ar wut naw. naut.

*as a lord, king,  
 the lord*

(b) RED BOOK.

*intercession,  
 invocation*

Dadolóch Rys vab Gruffud. Kyndeló ae cant.

*I invoke, entreat*

Assóynaf naóð Duó (diamheu dy daón,

*gifted, endowed*

ath donyaóc óyf inneu)

*before?*

ar dy wyr, eryr aereu,

20

ar dy wlat, wledic deheu.

Assóynaf, archaf arch vaór y beryf

*perys the Creator*

a beris nef a llaór,

naóð rac dy var, car kerdáor,

ar dy byrth, ar dy borthaór.

25

Assóynaf, archaf (eirchat ym gelwir)

*a suitor, suppliant*

naóð kywir kyngwastat

*pl. of dwys door,  
 entrance*

ar dy drysseu, aer dróssyat,

*constant*

trwssyat one who arranges, disposes

ar dy dryssaór, góayr góenwlat.

gostegu : to proclaim silence ; gostegwr a silence  
gwirand a beverage, drink  
gwyrd green, fresh, vigorous

## 236 CYNDELW TO RHYS AB GRUFFUDD

Assŷynaf aŷch naŷd, na chelŷch aŷch porth,

appropriate, pertinent

<sup>h</sup>an perthyn attregŷch.

a stepping, delay

Gostecwyr llys, gostegŷch:

"Gostec, beird! bard a glywch."

5

Assŷynaf naŷd haŷd haelon deheubarth,

pl. of hael

firm support (dihau undoubted, certain) ? doryf

diheuborth kerdoryon,

ath daryf oth duranogyon,

taryanogion pl. of taryanawg - shield - bearer

taryf multitude, host

ath doryf ath deyrnuebyon.

teyrn - jal - a king's son

hael - fones one of noble descent 10

Assŷynaf naŷd haŷd haeloned worsaf

gwer-saf support, bulwark

(nyth orseif teyrned)

? kings do not withstand the

pommel, saddle-bow; metaph. stay, support

ar dy doryf, koryf kywryssed,

cy-wrissed contention, strife

ar dy deulu teilŷng med.

a mead banquet

gwarchado to guard, protect

15

Medgwyn eu gŷyn eu gŷiraŷt, medgyrn ae gŷarchae,

to besiege a siege

ae gŷercheidŷ yn eurdryn,

pl. of eurdwrn golden-handed, liberal

a gloŷ yfet yn etryn,

sovereignty, supremacy

a glyŷ deŷr, a gloŷ deyrn.

rules

teyrnwaleh a royal hawk, hero

loud praise, eulogy

Teyrnweilch Prydein, prydaf aŷch prifgerd,

pryde to sing, compose poetry

aŷch prifglot a dygaf,

panegyric

aŷch bard, aŷch beirnyat vydaf,

20

aŷch porth perthyn yŷ attaf.

Atteb a ganaf a ganŷyf; arglŷyd,

1st. Pr. Subj. of canu

erglyŷ vi, kan dothŷyf.

1st. Perf. of dy vot; v. p. 91

2sg Imper. of er-glybod to listen to

generous, liberal

Leissaŷn llyŷ, lleŷ glyŷ gleŷ ŷyf,

a ruler, leader

llaessa to abate, relax, moderate

llaessa dy var, dy vard ŷyf.

har m. wrath, anger

25

Wyf kerdar ym ŷyf ŷyisc morgvmlaŷd gŷyrd,

the rapids of the sea

ŷyisc ffyrd, kyrd kerd wahaŷd.

gwahawd to visit

cyrd pl. of cerd craft, art, song bright, brilliant

Assŷyn asserŷ herŷ hirvlaŷd,

a plundering, pillaging

assŷynaf ar ud naf naŷd.

the lord

ud a lord, king

hir-flawŷ a long tunnel



## X. A RELIGIOUS POEM.

## BLACK BOOK.

In enu domni  
meu ý. voli.  
maur ý uolaud.

Molawe douit.  
maur ý kinnit  
ar ý cardaud.

Duu an amuc.  
Duu an goruc.  
Duu an guaraud.

Duu an gobeith.  
teilug pirfeith.  
tec ý purfaud.

Duu an dýli.  
Duu issi vrý.  
vrenhin trindaud.

Duu a broued  
in ý truyted  
in<sup>1</sup> ý trallaud.

Duu a dýfu.  
oe garcharu  
gan vuilaud.

Guledic deduit  
an gunel in rit  
erbin dit braud.

## RED BOOK.

Yn enó Dñi,  
meu y moli;  
maör y molaöt.

Molaf Douyd, <sup>5</sup> the Lord, God  
maör y gynnyd <sup>gynnyd increase, prosperity</sup>  
ar y cardaöt. <sup>charity, alms.</sup>

Duó an hamuc, <sup>35 pret. of am-wyn & protect</sup>  
Duw an goruc, <sup>§133(4)</sup>  
Duó an gbaraöt. <sup>103 pret. of</sup>  
<sup>gwa- nad success, deliver</sup>

Duó an gobeith,  
teilóng perffeith,  
tec y purffaöt. <sup>pure/perfect happiness</sup>

Duó an dýli,  
Duó yssy bry, <sup>above</sup> 15  
brenhin trindaöt.

D<sup>u</sup> a prouet  
ynn yn dróydet <sup>bry & ed to visit, pass, sojourn</sup>  
dróy y drallaöt. <sup>trallawd f. persecution,</sup>  
<sup>trial.</sup>

Duw a dyuu 20  
oe garcharu  
gan uvullaöt.

Góledic detwyd <sup>dedwyd happy, blessed,</sup>  
an gónel ni yn ryd <sup>unlions.</sup>  
erbyn dyd braö[t]. 25

2 sg. Pr. Subj. of  
dwyyn & take, carry,  
bring, capture

An duch ir gulet  
ir y varet.  
ae werindaud.

An dóc yr wled 2 sg. Imper. of  
yr y wared <sup>dwyyn</sup> ~~gwared~~ meekness  
ae werindaót. ~~querindaud~~  
virginity

Ym paraduis.  
5 im pur kynnuiis <sup>pure, perfect</sup>  
rac puis pechaud.

Ym Paradöys,  
ym pur gynnöys <sup>& receive admitt. adf.</sup>  
rac pöys pechaót.

Q 51

An gunel iechid  
ir y penid  
ae pimp dirnaud.

An gónel iechyt <sup>may He work</sup>  
yr y penyt <sup>salvation for us</sup>  
ae pym dyrn<sup>n</sup>ót.

3 sg. pres. of diffiryd  
to protect, defend §133a

10 Dolor eghirith. <sup>grief, anguish</sup>  
Duu an diffirth  
ban kýmirth cnaud.

Dolur <sup>(n)</sup>eghyrth— terrible, painful  
Duó an diffirth,  
pan gymerth knaót.

Din a collei  
bei nas prinhei  
15 diuei devaud.

Dyn a gollei <sup>wd. he lost</sup>  
pei nas prynei—  
<sup>faultless, perfect</sup> diuei deuaót. custom, l.

crog f. cross

Or croc crevled  
y deuth guared  
ir vedissyauđ.

Or groc greulet <sup>crevled f. of</sup>  
y deuth gwaret <sup>crevled bloodstain</sup>  
yr ved<sup>s</sup>ssya<sup>t</sup>ót. <sup>gang</sup>

bedessyauđ f. unisense

Kadarn bugeil  
20 Crist nid adweil.  
y teilygdaud

Cadarn ugeil  
Crist nyt agweil  
y teilyngdaót.

adfeilau to  
decline, decay

# XI. A DIALOGUE BETWEEN UGNACH UAB MYDNO AND TALIESSIN.

"Marchauc a girch y dinas,  
ae cun gwinion ae cirn bras,  
nyth adwaen, mi ryth welas."

upon  
"Marchauc a kirch ir aber  
y ar march cadarn kadfer,  
dabre genhiw ; nym gwatter." 5 cad. yf. strong  
in battle  
Pn. Suly. Pass. of gwadu to deny, refuse.

goden purpose, design  
"Mi nŷd aw ina in aur,  
gotev gueith y godriccaur : go-driccaur a lingerer, sojourner  
elhid bendith new a llaur." ?

benydyd benydyd daily,  
everyday  
whither  
"Y gur nim guelas beunit  
y<sup>1</sup> tebic y gur deduit, dedwyd happy, blessed, virtuous  
ba hid ei dy? a phan doit?" 2 sg. Pn. S. d. of dyvot (v. p. 90, § 141, n. 1)

v. § 225  
"Ban deuaw o Caer Seon v. p. 249, n. 3  
o imlat ac Itewon,  
it aw Caer Lev a Gwidion." 15

? § 51  
"Dabre de genhiw ir dinas,  
ath uit met ara phellas, v. gloss.  
ac eur coeth ar di wanas."

am etev,  
"Mi nŷd adwaen y gur hy hold  
a mteu tan a gveli : 20  
tec a chuec y diwedi." chuec sweet.

1. leg. vyt.

eden 3 sg. Pn. 2nd. of adaw to promise

?

{ 51

"Dabre genhiw im tino, *valley, vale*  
 ath uit guin gorysgelho, *3rd ss. Pr subj. of \*gar-ysgelin' to*  
 Vgnach yw vy heno mab Mýdno." *overflow (the bowl)*

5 { 51

"Vgnach, bendith ith orsset ! *gor-set f. seat, throne, court*  
 ath vo rad ac enrydet !  
 Taliessin viw inheu, talaw itti dý  
 gulet."

*pennaf ymrodd, chief*  
beidad a challenger  
 10

"Taliessin, penhaw or guir,  
beitad yg kert kyuergir, *a conflict, contest*  
 tric ima hid dyv merchir." *on Wednesday*

*increase, augment*

{ 51

? haedu to deserve, claim, merit

"Vgnach, mvihaw y alaw, *?*  
 ath vo rad y gulad pennhaw:  
 ný haetaw kabil, ny thrigiaw." *reproof*

2. *ir added in a later hand.*

llwm bare, poor  
llygru to corrupt, war, spoil, violate; 241, 3 to become foul destroy  
gwael an outcry, cry of distress; pl. -eu  
breid hardly, scarcely  
cawn m. (coll.) reed grass, stalks, coarse grass; sg. conin

v. Jackson, Early Celtic Nature Poetry, p. 50

## XII. WINTER.

keen, sharp  
 = an-laws

v. § 97 (c) 1

toid, toid 3 of pres. of  
tai to cover  
 very high/land  
 hill, promontory

"bed of the lake"

battlement, boisterous

pl. of pres. a field  
 ice, a sheet of ice  
diwedys evening

odi to snow

pl. of cad-wr a warrior  
lliw colour, hue

disengaged, idle

on the tip of (quarter of)  
 upper part, surface)  
 3 of. pr. 2nd. of to sweep  
go-sgubaw  
cadwr strong, firm

Llŷm awel, llum brin, llyn a hill, mount  
 an<sup>h</sup>aut caffael clid: a shelter  
llirid rid, reuhid llin, reuhid 3 of pres. of newi to freeze.  
ry seiw gur ar vn conin.<sup>o</sup> a man can stand on a single stalk

Ton tra thon toid tu tir,  
goruchel gwaetev rac bron baney pl. of ban a height  
bre: breit allan or seuir. pres. pass. of gor-seiŷell to withstand, stand

Oer lle lluch rac brŷthuch tumult, storm  
 gaeaw, crin caun, calaw truch, cut, broken  
kedic awel, coed in i bluch. X 10

Oer guely pisscaud yg kisscaud cyspaud shade, shelter, shadow  
iaen, cul hit, caun barŷwhaud, barŷphae to grow a beard  
birr diuedit, guit gvŷrhaud. bends (v. § 129) gvŷr-hae to incline, bend.

Ottid eirŷ, guin ŷ cnes,  
 nid a kedwir oe neges,  
 oer llinnev, eu llyu heb tes. hear, hot weather, sunshine <sup>15</sup> "warmth"

Ottid eirŷ, guin aren, (arien) hoar-frost  
segur ŷscuid ar iscuit hen, ysgwyd a shield }  
ryuaur guint, reuhid dien. buds ysgwyd a shoulder }

Ottid eirŷ ar warthaw rev<sup>1</sup>, raw frost, ice 20  
goscupid guint<sup>2</sup> blaen guit tev, tev thick, dense  
kadir ŷscuid ar ŷscuit glev. glev brave, stout; a brave man, hero

1. In MS. res has been altered later to reo.

2. MS. gint

calaf (coll.) stalks, reeds

gvŷd (coll.) wood, trees.

for 3rd sg. Pres. 2nd. endings in -id v. § 129

anaw ~~pechy~~, ~~was~~

anaf m. a blennish, wound.

WINTER

v. di-ffyrddio to hasten, speed (for ending v. 6129)

gorwyd a steed, war-horse  
5

v. annwyl nature, temper  
"timbers"

v. llwffyr. a coward

Ottid eirý, tohid istrad, ystrad a vale, valley  
diurýssint vy keduir y cad,  
mi nid aw, anaw nim gad. "I do not go, a wound does not allow me"

Ottid eirý o dv riv, rin a slope  
karchaur goruit, cul biv, bin cattle  
nid annuýd hawdit hetiv. = haf-dydd a summer's day

Ottid eirý, guin goror a border, side  
mýnit, llum guit llog ar mor: gwyd = mast of a ship (to  
meccid llwýr llauer kýghor. "a coward fosters many plans"

meccid 3 sg. Pr. Ind. of magu to nourish, (6129)  
rear, bring up, engender, conceive

## Glossary





## GLOSSARY

The paragraphs refer to the Grammar. voc.=causing vocalic mutation (lenation). nas.=causing nasal mutation. spir.=causing spirant mutation. coll.=collective. n.l.=nomen loci. chw follows c, ô follows d, ng follows g in the order of the alphabet.

1. a (voc.) rel. part. § 82 ff. With pers. pron. (§ 48 ff.) sg. 1 am, sg. 2 ath (voc.), sg. and pl. 3 ae, ay, as, pl. 1 an, pl. 2 ach.

2. a (voc.) interr. part. § 239. With pres. of copula ae. ae... ae whether... or. 2 either --- or

3. a (voc.) interj. § 243.

4. a (spir.) prep. with, see 1. ac.

5. a (spir.) conj. and, see 2. ac.

6. a (voc.) prep., see 1. o.

6. a- used to infix pronoun. § 94. With pers. pron. sg. 1 am, sg. 2 ath, sg. and pl. 3 as.

abad m. an abbot; pl. -eu.

aballu to perish. 158, 15.

aber a river-mouth, estuary.

aber-fa f. harbour, harbourage.

aberth sacrifice. 150, 17.

abid f. a habit, monastic dress.

abreïð scarcely, hardly. 159, 10. 197, 20. 200, 17.

1. ac, a (spir.) prep. with, § 162. With art. ar; with poss. adj. sg. 1 am, sg. 2 ath (voc.), sg. 3 m. ae (voc.) f. ae (spir.), pl. 1 an, pl. 2 ach, pl. 3 ae.

2. ac, a (spir.) conj. and, as. § 198. With art. ar; with poss. adj. sg. 1 am, sg. 2 ath (voc.) etc. ac... ac both... and.

1. ach (awch, ych) your. §§ 57, 58.

2. ach lineage, descent; pl. -oed.

3. ach, see 1. a, 1. ac, 2. ac.

achaws m. cause, reason. pa a. why? 218, 16. o a. because § 199.

Cf. achwysson.

achenoctid, see anghenoctid.

aches (from Lat. accessus) flood-tide. 228, 9. See CZ. V, p. 566.

achlan entire, all. 202, 22. 23.

achub to occupy, seize, precipitate oneself, snatch. 151, 5. 180, 19. 199, 12. 201, 20 (see cyfarth). 207, 17.

achubeid to seize. 152, 8.

achwanecâu to augment, increase.

achwaneg more.

achwanegu to increase.

achwysson (pl.) causes. 161, 15.

achyfyeth, see anghyfyeth.

adan f. a wing; pl. -ed. 203, 19.

adar (coll.) birds; sg. ederyn.

adaw to leave, allow. pres. ind.

pass. edir. 152, 4. 158, 8. 193, 10.

adeilad to build, a building; pl.

-eu. 139, 3.

ad-feilaw to decay, decline. 238, 20.

ad-fod to exist, be. fut. ind. sg. 3

adfyð 228, 29. 33.

ad-libin a wretched remnant. 153, 28.

ad-na-bod to recognise, know. § 144.

pres. ind. act. sg. 1 adwaen.

ad-newyðu to renew. 155, 4. 184, 20

adolwyn to beseech. 142, 31. pret.

pl. 3. adologyssant. 149, 10.

adref homeward. 196, 9. atref

198, 29.

adwaen, see adnabod.

adwy a gap, opening; pl. -eu. 175,

17.

aðas fit, meet, suitable.

aðassu to fit, adjust. 150, 26.

aðaw to promise. 170, 177, 7.

218, 27. pres. ind. sg. 3 eðew 239, 20.

aðef to acknowledge, admit, allow. 227, 14.

aðfelach? 227, 5.

að-fwyn-der m. gentleness, nobility, honour. 181, 24.

að-oed m. appointed time; destiny, fate. 229, 21. 230, 20.

aðurn adorning. 163, 29.

aðurnaw to adorn, decorate. 155, 5.

1. ae, see 1. a. 2. ae, see 2. a.

3. ae, see 1. ac. 4. ae, see 2. ac.

aed, see myned.

Aeð (Ir. Aed) n. pr. m. 201, 14.

aefed ripe, mature. 165, 20.

aer slaughter; pl. -eu.

Aer n. pr. m. 195, 26.

aer-fa f. slaughter; pl. -eu.

yn achwanec 189, 8. ? in addition

30/

aer-glywf *dealing wounds in battle.* 233, 5.

aer-llew m. *lion of battle.* 233, 6.  
aeth, see myned.

aeth-lym *keen and sharp.* Aeth-lem f. *the name of a sow.* 207, 8.

af, see myned.

Afallach n.l. *Avallon.*

afar m. *grief.* 229, 8.

af-lonyðu *to incounmode.* 209, 23.

afllonyðwch *disturbance.* 148, 6.

afon f. *a river; pl. -oeð.*

afory *to-morrow.* 203, 28.

Affric *Africa.*

affwys m. *an abyss, deep, bottom.* 197, 29. 206, 32. 207, 2.

agalen f. *a whetstone.* 194, 14.

agori *to open; part. agoredig.*

agos *near; comp. nes; sup. nessaf.*

angel *an angel; pl. engyliyon.*

angerð m. *vehemence, force.* 151, 17. 184, 24. 186, 4.

angeu, see anghau.

anghad f. *hand.* 233, 20.

anghaead *unclosed, open, liberal.* 233, 19.

anghen (agen) m. *need, necessity; a. yn a. by sheer necessity* 206, 14; cf. Hg. II. 197, 25.

anghenoctid (achenoctid) *want, indigence.* 142, 20. 146, 3.

angheu (agheu, ageu) f. *death.* 150, 15.

angheuwyl *deadly; mortally wounded.* 159, 8. 18. 183, 26.

anghlywedig *unheard of, unusual.* angheift (agreift, agriff) *example.* 163, 12. 156, 5. 181, 19

anghyf-nerth *helplessness, impotence.* 143, 6.

anghyf-reith *injustice, wrong.*

anghyfreithiawl *unjust, wrongful.*

anghyfrwys *untrained, unskilled.*

anghyf-yeith *alien in speech, foreign.* 191, 19. pl. -yðyon. 153, 17.

anghyolwch? 229, 6.

aho, see myned.

alaf *wealth; pl. -oeð.* 164, 9.

Alban *Scotland.* yr A. 141, 7.

allan out, outwards, outside. o hynny a. *thenceforth.*

allt a cliff. A. Clwyd (wrongly, instead of Clud) *Dumbarton.*

all-tud a *foreigner, alien; exile.*

am (voc.) prep. *about, on account of.* § 164. am hynny *therefore.*

am-blygu *to embrace.* 148, 12 v. 1.

amcawð said (he). amkeuðant *said they.* § 133 (b).

am-ðiffyn *to defend, protect; defence.* amðiffynwr m. *a defendant in a lawsuit.*

am-gadarnedig *confirmed, ratified.* amgen *different.* nyd a. *namely.*

amherawdyr m. *an emperor; pl. amherodron.*

amherodraeth f. *empire, dominion.*

amheu *to doubt, dispute, call in question.*

amlach, amlaf, see amyl.

amlwg *clear, manifest.*

ammreiniawl (ambreinawl) *without privilege.* 221, 16.

amnad? 227, 4.

amod m. *a covenant, compact.*

149, 17. 150, 20. 158, 24. 159, 10.

amryfael *various, different; pl. -on.*

amryson a *quarrel.* 223, 2.

am-ryw *various, divers.*

am-sathyr *a treading, moving of feet.* 193, 15.

amser m. *time; pl. -oeð.*

amug, see amwyn.

amws m. *a stallion; pl. emys.*

am-wyn *to protect.* § 133 (b). pret. ind. act. sg. 3 amug.

Amwythig *Shrewsbury.* 161, 31.

amyl *frequent; numerous; comp.*

amlach; sup. amlaf.

amylder *plenty, abundance, multitude.* 145, 23.

amylhau *to increase, augment.*

1. an (yn) our. § 57.

2. an, see 1. a.

3. an, see 1. and 2. ac.

anadyl *breath.*

anaf m. *a blemish, wound.* 242, 3.

anaw *poetry, muse.* 233, 13.

anawð, see an-hawð.

an-dyllyedus *illegal, wrong.* 167, 26.

an-eiryf *innumerable, countless; a countless number.* 184, 27.

an-fad *evil, crime.* 231, 14.

an-feidrawl *immense.*

anfon *to send, dispatch.* pres. ind. sg. 3 enfyn 228, 31.

Angiw *Anjou.*

an-hawð *not easy, difficult.* 241, 2.

anhebig (y) *unlike, dissimilar (to).*

225, 15.

anheilwng *unworthy.*

anher, see hanher.

anifeil m. *an animal, beast; pl. -eid.*

hend, host (v.  
Peder Kene, 241, 248)

=? x law 240, 11

## GLOSSARY

ar-drychafel 169, 27 <sup>247</sup>

annerch to greet, address; pl. -eu greetings. 143, 8.

annobeithaw (o) to despair (of).

annod delay. 171, 27.

annoeth (anoeth) a precious thing; pl. -eu. 163, 13. 187, 13. Cf. Arch. I, p. 453.

annog to urge, encourage, recommend.

annwyd nature, temper. 242, 6.

anolo void, worthless, nugatory.

an-osteg f. disturbance, disorder.

anreg f. a dish of meat; pl. -yon. 163, 31 (fercula).

anreithaw to plunder, ravage.

anreithwr m. a plunderer.

anrydeð, see enrydeð.

ansawð f. condition, nature, quality, state, station. 160, 10. 180, 6. 181, 22

ansoðedig established, founded.

ant, see myned.

an-udonawl perjured, treacherous, wicked. 149, 31 v. l. 190, 10

an-uundeb (-dab) discord, disunion, conflict. 167, 30.

an-waethach no less. 145, 20 v. l.

anwyl a friend; pl. -yd. 160, 26.

anyanawl natural, native, innate.

1. ar (voc.) prep. on, over, for, before. § 165. within 146, 25. ar hynt thereupon. About to, on the point of. ar gychwyn 225, 2.

2. ar, see 1. and 2. ac.

3. ar=a (rel. part.) + ry, see § 95 note.

4. ar, see 1. o.

aradyr a plough.

araf slow, gentle, mild. 155, 27.

arall another, other; pl. ereill.

§ 68. ereill . . . ereill some . . . others.

arbed to spare, save. 153, 23.

ar-benhig chief, principal.

arch f. a request. 153, 34. 234, 9.

arch-esgob m. an archbishop; pl.

archesgyb.

archesgobaeth an archbishopric; pl. -eu.

archesgobawd f. an archbishopric.

archesgob-dy m. an archbishop's palace.

archyssant, see erchi.

ar-dymheru to temper, warm. 143, 13.

ar-ðeîw a voucher. 215, 30.

ar-ðerchawg exalted, noble, illustrious.

ar-ðerchocâu to exalt, honour.

ar-ðyrchafel to raise, exalt; part. ar-ðyrchafedig.

areith f. a speech. 231, 33.

aren (arien) hoarfrost. 241, 17.

arf m. a weapon; pl. -eu.

arfawg armed.

ar-fer to be wont, be accustomed; use, wont.

arferu (o) to use, employ, enjoy, be accustomed.

arfoll to entertain, receive. 148, 10; 231, 12.

ar-gelwch concealment, seclusion. 229, 4.

ar-gledyr m. a protector.

arglwyð m. a lord; pl. -i.

arglwyðes f. a lady, mistress.

arglwyðiaeth f. lordship.

ar-gyfreu a marriage portion. 140, 12. 24.

ar-gyweðu (y) to injure, hurt.

arnaf etc., see ar § 53.

aros to await, expect, wait. past subj. sg. 3 arhoei; pret. sg. 3 arhoes.

arth m. a bear. 172, 27.

aruthrêd terror, fear. 172, 28.

aruthyr terrible, fearful. 172, 29.

ar-weðu to bear, wield. 159, 3.

arwein to carry, bear. 163, 3. 10.

arwyð f. a token, mark; a battle-standard; signal; pl. -on. 150, 26. 158, 32. 180, 4. 183, 8. 194, 22.

arwyðocâu to signify, imply.

aryant silver.

as (es), see 1. and 6. a.

asgell a wing; pl. esgyll.

asgell-wrych m. spray. 154, 18.

asgrifenu, see ysgrifenu.

asgwrn a bone; pl. esgyrn.

asserw bright, brilliant. 235, 15.

assw (asseu) left.

asswyn an invocation. 235, 15.

asswynaf I invoke, entreat.

at (voc.) prep. to. §§ 53, 166.

attal to restrain, withhold, hinder.

attek (at-heb) m. to answer; an answer, defence; pl. -yon. 167, 19. 169, 1.

attregwch a stopping, delay. 234, 18. 236, 2.

1. ath, see 1. and 6. a.

2. ath, see 1. and 2. ac.

athechem? 231, 11.

athoeð, see myned.

athraw a teacher; pl. -on. 145, 3. 161, 11. 219, 13.

awdurdawd m. authority. 222, 7.

awch, see ach.

154, 4;  
215, 23  
217, 20

154, 2  
156, 15

awel m. a breeze, wind. 241, 1.  
awn, see myned.  
awr f. hour. yn a. now. 239, 7.  
yr a. hon now. 142, 15.  
awssen absence. 177, 6.  
awst August. 166, 16.  
1. ay, see 1. a.  
2. ay, see 1. and 2. ac.

ba, see pa.  
bach a bend, angle. 198, 8.  
baeð m. a boar. b. coed a wild  
boar. 184, 12; pl. beið. 201, 16.  
Baðon n. l. Bath. 179, 31.  
bagyl f. a crook, crutch. Cwrr y

Fagyl n. l. 204, 4.  
1. ban loud. 227, 18.  
2. ban, see pan.  
bann a height; pl. baneu 241, 6.  
b. y gaer battlement; 196, 1.  
banw a pigling. porchell . . hyt

tra no en denu . . ac o henne eny el  
e moch yr coet banu vyt BCh. 92, 28.  
bar m. wrath, anger. 229, 10.  
233, 1.

baraf, see baryf.  
baran wrath, fury. 240, 8.  
baran-res rank of soldiers, host.  
228, 10.

Barberfloi n. l. Barfleur.  
barð m. a poet, bard; pl. beirð.  
barð-eir song, panegyric. 235, 14.  
barfawg bearded. 199, 31.  
barf judgment. 188, 6 v. l.

barnu to judge, decide, fix, pass judg-  
ment, deem. past. part. barnedig.  
barwn m. a baron; pl. -eid, -yeid.  
baryf (baraf) a beard.

baryfhân to grow a beard. 241, 12.

Cf. baryf-lwyf rew FB. 244, 9.

bathoriaethf. mintage, mint. 223, 14.

bedissyawd f. the universe. 238, 18.

bedw f. (coll.) birch-trees. 225, 9.

Bedwyr n. pr. m.

beð m. a grave; pl. -eu.

1. bei, bey, see bod.

2. bei a fault.

beich a burden, load. 230, 24.

beiðad m. a challenger. 240, 9.

beirnad (beirnyad) m. a judge.

235, 7. 236, 19.

bendgedig blessed.

bendyth (bendith) f. a blessing.

bennwig f. a young sow. 205, 19.

ber a spike, lance; pl. -eu. 231, 5.

beth, see peth.

beunyðyawl daily. 190, 9.

biw f. cattle. 242, 5; a standard  
of value. teirbuw 211, 5.

blaen m. point, top, end, front.  
or b. in front, oe f. before him, ym

b. pawb before any one else, yn ol ac  
ym b. behind and before.

blaen-weð highest state, summit.  
169, 21. RB. II. 41, 33.

blawð tumult, commotion. 235, 15.

bleið-ast f. a she-wolf.

blin weary, wearisome.

blinaw to weary, molest, harass.

blinder weariness.

blodeuaw to flourish, prosper. 186, 1.

blwch? 241, 10.

blwyðyn f. a year; pl. -eð.

blynghân to become angry, to frown.

140, 7. 177, 23.

blyneð f. years (after numerals).

bo, see bod.

bocsach f. a boasting, vaunting.

174, 13.

boch, see bod.

bod to be, state of being (verb subst.

and copula) § 152 ff.

boð goodwill, pleasure. oc eu b. of

their own free will. 156, 6. 12.

boði to drown.

bogel f. the navel. 174, 25.

Bolwyn n. l. Boulogne. 184, 31.

bon stem, root, stump; pl. -eu.

boneð lineage, noble birth. 162, 1.

bonheðig hereditary, innate 180, 15;

noble; pl. -yon; superl. bonheðickaf.

bore m. morning. y b. in the

morning. 225, 3.

brad m. and f. treachery, plot.

bradwyr m. a traitor; pl. bradwyr.

bran m. and f. a raven; pl. brain.

bras stout, fat. 241, 2. 227, 20.

Cf. Gnawd buan o vain, gnawd buan

o vras MA. 845<sup>b</sup> 15.

brath m. a stab, wound. 188, 21.

brathu to wound, stab, spur. impf.

ind. act. pl. 3 brethynt; impf. ind.

pass. brethid; part. brathedig.

1. brawd f. judgment, day of

judgment. 185, 16.

2. brawd m. a brother; pl. brodyr,

broder.

brawd-le m. a judgment seat.

bre hill, promontory; 243, 7.

Redyn-fre n. l.

breich m. and f. an arm. 230, 23.

breið hardly, scarcely. 241, 7.

breiðwyd f. a dream, vision. 173, 6;

v. l. ib. 14.

5/

4/

28/

pres pass.  
bernyd 109, 6

218, 14

breiniawl *privileged*. 219, 14.  
 breint (bryein, brein) *m. privilege, prerogative; state, condition*. 220, 22.  
 breisg *stout*. 233, 10.  
 brenhin, (breenhin, brennhin, brennin) *a king; pl. -eð*.  
 brenhinawl *kingly, royal*.  
 brenhines *f. a queen*.  
 brenhin-wisg *royal robe; pl. -oeð*.  
 brenhinyaeth *f. kingdom*.  
 brethid, brethynt, *see brathu*.  
 breu *brittle*. 200, 1.  
 breuan *f. a handmill, quern*. 206, 31.  
 briwaw *to break in pieces, shatter, destroy*. *past part. briwedig*. 147, 3.  
 broder, brodyr, *see brawd*.  
 bron (bronn) *breast; pl. bronnoeð; dwy-fron breasts*. *rac b. before, in front of; ger b. before; ym b. y dyð towards day; cf. ymrou y gorfflen* Hg. II, 248, 17; *dynyon ymrou aglieu*, *ib.* 201, 34.  
 brwysg *strong, impetuous, swift*. 233, 10.  
 bry *adv. above*. 237, 15.  
 bryd *mind, thought; o un f. with one accord*. 175, 10.  
 bryn (brin) *m. a hill, mount*.  
 brys *m. haste; ar f. in haste*.  
 brysyaw *to hasten*.  
 Brytaen *f. Britain*. B. Fechan *Brittany*. Brytanyeid *Britons*.  
 brythwch *tumult, storm* 229, 7;  
 241, 8. brythweh gaeaf MA. 189a<sup>46</sup>.  
 bu, *see bod*.  
 bual *a drinking-horn*.  
 buan *swift, rapid*. 151, 21. 225, 21.  
 buaned *swiftness, fleetness*. 158, 29.  
 bucheð *f. life, salvation*. 150, 15.  
 bucheðu *to live*. 165, 9.  
 buðugawl *victorious, gifted*. 164, 28.  
 buðugolyaeth *f. victory, triumph; pl. -eu*. 144, 5.  
 buðyn? 229, 3.  
 bugeil *m. a shepherd*. 238, 19.  
 bwch *a gap; pl. bylcheu embrazures*. 164, 22.  
 Bwlwyn *n. l. Boulogne*. 162, 14.  
 bwrð *m. a table; pl. byrðeu*.  
 Bwrgwyn *n. l. Burgundy*.  
 bwrw *to throw, cast, strike, hit, overthrow*. *impf. ind. act. sg. 3 byryei; pret. ind. sg. 3 byrywð*. 159, 5

bwyell-ig *a small hatchet*. 201, 21.  
 bywyd *m. meat, food*.  
 bwyta *to eat, act of eating*.  
 bwyttal *virtuals*. 203, 2.  
 bychan *small*.  
 bychod *a trifle*. 227, 10.  
 1. byd *m. world*. gwyn y f. *happy* *he!* 170, 18. goreu yn y b. *best of all; gwas yn y b. any youth*.  
 2. byd, *see bod*.  
 bydawl *earthly*. 222, 11.  
 byðin *f. a troop, division of an army; pl. -oeð*.  
 byðinaw *to array in troops, to draw up in battle array*.  
 byhud? 233, 9.  
 bylchau, *see bwch*.  
 byrr (birr) *short, brief*.  
 byryei, *see bwrw*.  
 byth (fyth) *ever*.  
 byw (1) *alive; (2) life*.  
 bywyd *life*. 193, 9 v. 1.

cabil *reproof*. 240, 13.  
 cad f. (1) *battle*, roði c. ar faes *to give battle; (2) a battalion*.  
 cadarn *strong, firm, powerful*.  
 cadarnhau *to strengthen, fortify, confirm, ratify, affirm*.  
 cadeir *f. a chair, seat*.  
 Cadell *n. pr. m.*  
 cad-ffer *strong in battle*. 241, 5.  
 cad-lys *f. a fortified court*. 195, 5.  
 cadw *to keep, preserve, maintain*.  
 Cad-wallawn *n. pr. m.*  
 cadwent *f. battle, fight, contest*. 198, 20; 230, 6.  
 cad-wr *m. a warrior; pl. cedwyr*. 241, 15. 242, 2.—*n. pr. m.*  
 cadwyn *a chain; pl. -awr*. 228, 16.  
 cadyr *strong, firm*. 241, 22.  
 cae *m. an enclosure, fence*. 149, 6.  
 cael, *see caffel*.  
 caer *f. a citadel, fortress, city*. *pl.*  
 ceyryð 156, 31. 193, 2. C. Alclud (Ir. Ail Cluáide) *Dumbarton*, C. Efracwg *York*, C. Faðon *Bath*, C. Fudei *Silchester*, C. Geint *Canterbury*, C. Idor *Dorchester*, C. Lew Dinas *Dinllel*, C. Loyw *Gloucester*, C. Lyr *Leicester*, C. Lleon *Chester*, C. Llion ar Wysc *Carleon*, C. Lwydcoed *Lincoln*<sup>2</sup>, C. Seon *Segontium*,<sup>3</sup> C.

239/

232, 5—

<sup>1</sup> See Rhys, *Celtic Heathendom*, p. 406.

<sup>2</sup> According to Holder, *Alteltischer Sprachschatz* II, col. 192, *Létocetum* is the old British name for Lichfield in Staffordshire.

<sup>3</sup> On p. 239, l. 13 *Caer Seon* is confused with *C. Sion* 'Zion'; hence the mention of Jews in l. 14. Cf. Rhys, l.c., p. 272.

X  
X

Weir Warwick, C. Wynt Winchester,  
C. Wyrangon Worcester.

caeth captive; pl. ceith.

caeu to shut, close. fut. ind. pass.

cayator. 232, 1.

Cafall the name of one of Arthur's  
hounds. Cabal, Nennius ed. Mommsen, p. 217.

caffel (caffael, cael) to get, seize,

obtain, succeed 184, 15. pres. ind. sg.

2 ceffy, pl. 2 ceffwch, pret. pass.

caffad (cahat), etc. § 145.

calaf (coll.) stalks, reeds; 241, 9.

calaf m. Calends; c. Awst first of

August; c. gaeaf All Saints' Day;

c. Mei May-day.

calanêd corpses, pl. of celein. 188, 12.

caled hard, severe; pl. -yon.

Caled-fwlch (Ir. calad-bolg) m.

hard in making notches, the name of  
Arthur's sword.

calon (callon) heart; pl. -eu, -oed.

cam crooked, wrong; wrong, in-

justice; gan g. wrongfully, unjustly.

camgwl a fine, penalty. 225, 3.

v. l. for camlwrw Leg. Wall. 40b2.

camlwrw a fine, penalty for the  
lesser offences.

cam-ryfygu to act arrogantly.

166, 10. Cp. Hg. I. 219, 28.

cam-wed sin, iniquity. 229, 28.

1. can (gan) (voc.) prep. with, by.

§ 167. With pron. end. § 53. gellwng y

enit gan yr wybyr spiritum in auras

emisit 159, 25; yr yseymunedickaf

vradwr gan Vedrawt that most

accursed traitor of a Medrawd  
189, 15.

2. can (gan) conj. since. § 202.

3. can, see 1. cant.

canal, see cynhal.

canfed hundredth, a hundredth

part. 230, 5.

can-fod to perceive. § 160.

canhorthwy help, aid. A 178, 8. 10.

canhorthwyaw to help. 176, 8.

canhwyf, see canu.

canhym-deith to accompany, keep  
up with. 208, 28.

cani, see cany.

can-lyn to follow.

can-llaw m. a supporter. 212, 11;  
213, 21; 214, 10.

can-mawl to praise, commend.

canonwr m. a canon; pl. -wyr.

cans, see canys.

1. cant (can) (nas.) m. a hundred.

2. cant, see canu.

canu to sing, celebrate in song,

recite, play; pres. subj. act. sg. 1

canwyf; impf. ind. pl. 3 cenynt; pret.

ind. sg. 3 cant.

can-wlad a hundred countries.

232, 3.

can-wr a hundred men 151, 25.

172, 15.

cany (cani), before vowels canyd,

conj. since not. § 202.

canyad permission, consent. 211, 13.

canys (cans) i.e., can with the

present of the copula, for, since.

§ 202.

caplan m. a chaplain. 155, 3.

car a friend, relative; pl. -ant.

Caranwys Carnotensis. 179, 21.

carchar m. a prison, gaol.

carcharawr m. a prisoner; pl.

carcharoryon.

carcharu to imprison. 242, 5.

cardawd charity, alms. 237, 7.

carn a cairn.

carreg a rock; pl. cerrig.

carn-wyn having a white hilt.

Hence carnwennan f., the name of

Arthur's knife. 207, 31.

caru to love. impf. ind. act. pl. 3

cerynt; past part. caredig.

carw a stag. 196, 29.

caryad m. love, affection. 233, 15.

caryant 140, 4, either miswritten

for caryat or formed like mol-yant,

með-yant, &c.

casäu to hate.

casseg f. a mare.

castell m. a castle, fortress; pl.

cestyll.

cathyl f. a song, lay, poem; pl.

cathleu. 229, 17.

Catynes n. l. Caithness. 145, 11.

Caw n. pr. m. 201, 19.

cawn m. (coll.) reed grass, stalks,

coarse grass; 241, 9; 12; sg.

conin.

cawr m. a giant, mighty man; pl.

cewri.

cawssei, see caffel.

cayator, see caeu.

cedernid strength, force, security,  
violence.

cedig battlesome, boisterous. 241, 10.

cedwyr, see cadwr.

cedymdeith, see cydymdeith.

cefeis, see caffel.

clwssynt 178, 31  
? 3 Phn. Phn. Phn.

142, 31;  
148, 29  
158, 12

5/



cefnyn (keuen) *back*; pl. cefneu; dangos eu cefneu *to flee, take to flight*. drachefyn *behind, back, again*; traegfeyn *behind him*; dyfod *t. to return* 213, 8; trach-eu-cefnyn 221, 21; drae-cefnyn wynteu *behind them*. 179, 26.

cefynderw *a cousin*. plant yr hen-vam a uyd keuyn-dyru BCh. 75, 28. cegin *f. a kitchen*.

Cei *n. pr. m. Caius*.

ceidwad *m. a witness*; pl. keidweid.

ceing *f. a branch*. 165, 21. 197, 3.

cein *beautiful, fair, delightful*.

Ceint (Cent) *Kent*. 189, 19.

ceissaw *to seek, fetch, endeavour*.

ceirch *oats*. 196, 4.

ceith, see caeth.

celfyð skilful, ingenious; an artist.

celfyðyd *f. an art*; pl. celfyðoden.

celi *the heavens*. 231, 25. Celi

*God*. 231, 24.

celu *to hide, conceal*.

X celwrn *m. a piece?* 207, 32.

celwyðawg *lying, false*. 190, 10.

Celyðon: llwyn C. 148, 25 = coit Celidon, Nennius, p. 199.

Celli-wig *f. the name of Arthur's court in Cornwall, now Callington*.

ceneditaeth *f. a race, kind*.

cenedyf *f. a race, kind*; pl. cened-loeð.

ceneu *m. a whelp*. 198, 32. 199, 4.

32. Ceneu *n. pr. m.* 162, 3.

cennad *m. and f. a messenger, emissary, embassy*; pl. -eu.

cennadwri *f. a message, tidings*.

cenfeint *a convent*; pl. cenveinoeð.

cenwch, see L. can. ?

cerð *craft, art, song*; pl. cyrð.

cerðawr *m. a craftsman, minstrel, bard*; pl. cerðoryon.

cerðed *to walk, travel, journey, go*.

cerðedyad *a course, motion*. 161, 11.

Ceredigyawn *Cardigan*. 205, 28.

cerenhyð *relationship*. 168, 20.

Cernyw *Cornwall*.

cerwyd *a stag*. 226, 1.

cerwyn *f. a caldron*. Cwm C., *n. l.* 204, 15.

cesseil *the armpit*. 194, 14.

cethr *a spike*; pl. -awd. 230, 29.

cethron *a spike*. 230, 27.

cewilyð *shame*. 141, 8. 142, 31.

cewssynt, see caffel.

ci *m. a hound*; coll. 205, 9; pl. cwn.

cicwr *a footsoldier*; coll. infantry. 202, 29.

cig *m. flesh*.

ciglef, see clybod.

cil *a recess, nook*.

Cil-gwri *n. l.*

cilyaw *to retreat, desert, fail*.

cilyð *a mate, fellow*. § 72.

ciwdawdwr *m. a citizen, inhabitant*.

cladu *to bury*.

claf sick. 143, 13. 149, 28.

cleðyf *m. a sword*; pl. -eu, per metathesis clefyðeu.

clefyd *m. sickness, disease*. 161, 27.

clefyðeu, see cleðyf.

cleigaw *to plunge, immerse*. 206, 21.

cleis *a stripe*. 194, 14. Cf. maen cleis, *marble*. Llwyd.—Porth Cleis *n. l.* 204, 1.

clid *a shelter*. 241, 2.

clod *m. and f. fame, renown*.

clod-fawr *famous, celebrated*.

clodfori *to make illustrious, render famous*. 165, 15. < clodforus *praiseworthy, renowned, boastful; companion*. 164, 16. *Equatio 186, 5*

cloff *lame*.

clomen (colomen) *f. a dove*. 163, 10.

clust *m. an ear*. 201, 29. 203, 26.

clwm *a tune*; pl. clymeu moduli 147, 14.

Clwyd *a river-name*. 204, 17.

clybod *to hear*. *impf. ind. act.*

sg. 3. clywei; *impf. pass.* clywid;

*pret. ind.* sg. 1 ciglef; sg. 3 cicleu.

§ 133 b. clybod *ar to hear of*.

clymeu, see clwm.

cnawd *flesh*. 238, 12. 192, 24

cnes *skin*. 241, 14.

cneuen *a nut*. 196, 23.

cnithiaw *to pluck*. 200, 9.

coch *red*.

cochi *to redden, become red*. 173, 16.

coðyant *m. provocation, offence*. 166, 4.

coed (coyt) *m. (coll.) a wood, trees*;

baeð *c. a wild boar*. pl. coydyð.

coeth *pure, fine*. eur *c. refined gold*.

cof *memory, recollection*.

coffau *to remember, to call to mind*.

cog *a cuckoo*; pl. -eu.

congyf *f. a corner, angle*. 204, 9.

colled *m. loss*; pl. -eu 175, 31.

collen *hazel*. c. derwen *an oak*

sapling. 197, 2.

colli *to lose, be lost*. 238, 13.

conin, see cawn.

corff *a body, corpse*.

X celwrn, -yrwan *m. tub, bucket, pail; barrel*

corn *a horn, trumpet; a drinking horn.* pl. *cyrn, cirn.*  
 coron f. *a crown.*  
 coryf *pommel, saddle-bow; metaph. stay, support.* 233, 20; 234, 23. Arch. I, p. 487.  
 cosb *punishment, fine.* 217, 18.  
 craff *firm, steadfast.* 140, 5.  
 cras *hard, dry.* 225, 20.  
 crawn, see *croni.*  
 credu *to believe.* pres. subj. pl. 2 *crettoch.*  
 crefyðus *devout; a religious person.*  
 pl. -son. 155, 5.  
 crefyðwr m. *a religious person.* 144, 13 (miswritten for *crefftwyr = operarii* Geoffrey II, 14).  
 Creiðylad n. pr. f.  
 creir m. *a relic; pl. -eu.* 153, 26.  
 creirhau *to cause to swear by relics.* 221, 2.  
 crettoch, see *credu.*  
 creu *to create.* 227, 19. 228, 18.  
 creu *gore, blood.*  
 creu-lawn *blood-thirsty, cruel; compar. creulonach.*  
 creulon-der *cruelty, tyranny, oppression.*  
 creu-lyd *blood-stained, gory; f. creuled.* 231, 20. 238, 16.  
 crib f. *a comb.* 203, 25.  
 crin *withered, brittle.* 241, 9.  
 Crist *Christ.*  
 cristawn *a Christian; pl. cristonog-yon.*  
 cristonogawl *Christian.*  
 crog f. *a cross.*  
 crogaw, crogi *to crucify, hang.*  
 croní *to hoard, amass, accumulate.*  
 pres. ind. act. sg. 3 *crawn* 233, 12.  
 crwm bent. 225, 11.  
 crychyd *a shake (in music); pl. -eu.* 147, 14 v.l.  
 cryd *a trembling, tremor.* 231, 22.  
 cryfang *a talon; pl. -heu* 197, 28.  
 cryn *a trembling, quaking.* 228, 33.  
 cryno *suitable.* 156, 32. compar. -ach. 169, 2.  
 crynu *to tremble, quake.* 184, 22.  
 past part. *crynedig* 152, 16.  
 cuan *an owl* 197, 8; 9; *a rock-owl, Lhwyd.*  
 cuðyaw *to cover, hide.* 154, 13.\*  
 cul *lean, thin, emaciated.*  
 Culwyð *God.* 228, 24. 231, 25.  
 Custenhin n. pr. m. *Constantine.*

cwbwl (cwbyl) *entire, whole.*  
 cweiraw, see *cyweiryaw.*  
 cwfeint (cwfeint) f. *convent, assembly; pl. cwfenoes.*  
 cwm m. *a valley.* 197, 12.  
 cwnsli m. *counsel.* 148, 2.  
 cwr *an edge, corner.* C. y Fagyl n.l. 204, 4.  
 cwymmp m. *a fall.* 225, 22.  
 cwynaw *to lament.*  
 cwyn-fan f. *a lament, wailing.*  
 cychwyn, cychwynnu *to set out, move, start.* deil ar gychwyn = *dail yn syrthio* MA.361 b, n. 8.  
 cyd (ced) conj. *though; § 205.*  
 cyd ac, y gyd ac *together with.*  
 y gyd yg cyd *together* 155, 2. § 171.  
 y gyd a hynny *likewise* 204, 26. 218, 20.  
 cyd-ðioðef *to suffer.* 142, 14. past. part. -edig (y) *suffering (with).*  
 cyd-ðioch *to congratulate.* 180, 10.  
 cyd-farchawg m. *a knight-comrade.*  
 cyd-gynghor *joint counsel.* 155, 2.  
 cyd-synyedigaeth f. *consent.* 145, 4.  
 cyd-tywyssawg m. *a joint leader.* 178, 1.  
 cyd-ym-deith m. *a companion, comrade; pl. -on.*  
 cydymdeithocâu *to accompany, associate with.* 146, 4.  
 cyf-agos *near.*  
 cyfan *whole, entire.* 183, 32.  
 cyfar *trouble, anger; 230, 7. Cf. Rhyfedd ym fyw llyw llawged gan gyfar o gwyn gofid* MA. 301 a 17.  
 cyf-arch (keuarch) *to request, ask; c. gwell to greet; geir cyfarch a supplementary question asked after the trial, before the verdict is given.*  
 cyf-ar-fod *to meet, encounter, touch; § 160.*  
 cyfarth *to bark, bay; roði c. rendre les abois, to stand at bay. achub yr c. (sic leg.) to be first at the charge.*  
 cyf-arwyð m. *a guide.*  
 cyf-ar-wyneb(ac) *opposite(to)* 210, 5.  
 cyf-eillt m. *a friend.*  
 cyf-eir f. yu-y *gyfeir straight before him, headlong.* 207, 6.  
 cyf-enw *a namesake.* yg kyuenw yr vn dyd ym phen y vlywyd *that day a year.* 195, 19.  
 cyf-ergir m. and f. *a conflict, contest.* 240, 9.  
 cyf-ing *narrow, strait.* 175, 17.  
 cyf-lawn *full, complete.*

cyf cywassegit 152, 16

?  
140, 17

cyflafan f. an outrage, slaughter.  
cyf-le m. an opportunity. 159, 16.  
cyflehau to dispose, arrange, place.  
163, 27.

cyf-lym sharp, quick, speedy.  
cyf-newid (O. W. cyfnofud) f. coin,  
merchandise. 223, 13. Cf. ef a holltir  
furf y gyfnewit; haner crwn a vyd  
RB. 2. 146, 19.

cyfodi to arise.  
cyf-oed having the same age,  
so old. 141, 28.

cyf-oeth m. power, dominion, king-  
dom, wealth; pl. -eu.

cyfoethawg powerful, wealthy.  
cyfoethogi to enrich.

cyfranc f. an encounter, fight,  
combat. 178, 12.

cyf-red equally swift. 225, 6.

cyf-reith f. law, right; pl. -eu.

cyfreithiawl legal, lawful.

cyfreu plumage? 225, 17. action?  
229, 30.

cyf-rin a confidant. 225, 5.

cyfrwch a meeting. 147, 5 (v.l.).

cyfrwng m. mean, interval. yg c.  
in the midst of 184, 9.

cyfrwys trained, expert. 186, 19.  
190, 9 v.l. 191, 21.

cyf-ryw m. the same kind. 181, 27.  
a kind 161, 27. similar, like, such.

cyf-uch of equal height. yn g. ac  
on a level with. 174, 30.

cyf-un-deb unity, concord. 167, 23.  
163, 27 v.l.

cyf-yeith having the same lan-  
guage. 196, 13.

cyf-yl nearness, proximity. yn y  
gyfyl near him.

cyff m. stock, trunk, stem; pl. -yon.

cyffelybu to compare, imitate.

cyffredin common. yn g. in com-  
mon 185, 25. 223, 12.

cyffro m. excitement. 164, 27. 176, 6.

cyffroi (kefroy) to excite, arouse,  
disturb; c. cyfreith (hawl) to insti-  
tute a legal action (a claim). past

part. cyffroedig. 184, 10.

cyffur occasion, opportunity. 147, 9.

cynghaws m. a counsel, advocate.

cynghellawr m. a chancellor, the  
king's principal steward or reeve.

cynghelloraeth f. chancellorship.

cyngheusaeth f. a pleading.

cynghlodforussed equally renown-  
ed. 186, 5.

cynghor (keghor) m. counsel,  
advice; caffel yn y gyghor to decide.

cynghorfynt envy, malice. 156, 20.

Cf. L.A. 12, 19.

cyngkori to advise.

cynghreir f. a covenant, truce.  
159, 12.

cyngwastad constant. 234, 6.  
235, 27.

cyhoeð public. 222, 12.

cy-hyd having equal length. yn

gyhyd ac as long as.

cyhydeð equality, parity. 221, 6, 7.

cylch m. a circle. yg c. around,  
about, towards, concerning; yn eu c.

about them, around them; yg c.  
hynny about that.

cylchynu to surround, encompass,  
besiege. 146, 17 v.l.

cyllell f. a knife, dagger.

cyllell-bren the wooden lath of a  
scabbard; pl. -eu 195, 14. wooden

treezers 200, 15.

cyllell-fawr big-knived. 206, 19.

cymhell to compel, force, drive,  
exact. c. y law to force one to sur-  
render.

cymenn wise; compar. cymhen-  
nach. 175, 28.

cymer, see cymryd.

cymmeint of equal size, as much,  
as many, so great, so many.

cymmwd m. a commote, a division  
of country.

cymod to propitiate, make peace.  
197, 32. 201, 7.

cymodawg a neighbour; pl. cym-  
odogion.

cymod-loneð a concord, agreement.  
cymrwd mortar. 193, 2.

Cymry (pl. of Cymro m. a Welsh-  
man) Wales. 154, 10. 203, 31. 222, 4.

cymryd (kemyrit) to take. pret.  
ind. sg. 3. cymerth, cymirth. c. arnaw

to feign; c. eu fford (hynt) to set out;  
c. ffo to take to flight.

cymyn to entrust. 157, 10. 192, 22

cymynediw a command, injunc-  
tion; pl. -eu; 150, 24; 166, 26.

1. cyn (cynn) prep. before. § 170.

2. cyn (gynn) conj. sooner, before.  
§ 204. gynn noe fyned before he

goes. 225, 3.

3. cyn a stump; pl. -yon. 197, 14.

cynadyl a meeting, assembly.  
171, 19.

cyn-deced as fair. 163, 14.

\* pl. cynghellawr 219, 11

> *cyt*, v. § 171

*cyn-digrifed* as pleasant. 163, 14.  
*cyn-dosted* equally harsh. 198, 17.  
*Cyn-ðelig* n. pr. m. 162, 7.  
*Cyn-ðelw* n. pr. m.  
*Cyn-farch* n. pr. m.  
*cynefawd* custom, usage. 163, 24.  
 167, 1.  
*Cyn-felyn* n. pr. m.  
*cynhal*, *cynnal* (*kanal*) to sustain, support, maintain.  
*cynhebig* similar, like.  
*cynhebygu* to compare. 161, 2.  
*cynhelu* to support. 220, 30.  
*cynhen* contention, strife, contest; pl. *cynhennau*.  
*cynhyrfu* to excite, move. 173, 27.  
*cynired* to come together, assemble; bring together; a concourse. 162, 20.  
*Cyn-las* n. pr. m.  
*cynllwyn* an ambush, waylaying. 223, 1.  
*cyn-llyfan* a leash, a slip.  
*cynna* equally good, peer. 227, 9.  
*cynnal*, see *cynhal*.  
*cynnelw* pattern, example, model. 233, 16.  
*cynnifywr* (coll.) m. combatants, warriors. 202, 27.  
*cynnig* to propose, proffer, suggest.  
*cynnullaw* to collect, call together.  
*cynnwys* to receive, admit, adopt. 238, 5. *Ar sawl a oed dan geithiwet heuyt ef ae kynnwysawd ym paradwys* L.A. 133<sup>12</sup>; *Creawdyr celi an kynnwys ni yn trugared*, F.B. 1996.  
 1. *cynnyð* m. a huntsman; pl. *-yon*. 205, 4. 7.  
 2. *cynnyð* increase, prosperity. 237, 6. *ef a doeth att Walchmei. Ac a gyuarchawd gwell idaw. Duw a ro kynnyd arnat, heb y Gwalchmei* Hg. I. 223, 2.  
*cynnyðu* to increase. 180, 12.  
*cyn-ran* m. a first or chief part; a leader. 231, 27.  
*cynt* adv. formerly, before. *yn g.* sooner, rather 181, 8.  
*cyntaf* first; *yn gyntaf* first, at first.  
*cyntefin* (Ir. *cetemuin*) the beginning of summer. 225, 14.  
*Cyn-was* n. pr. m. 204, 4.  
*cyny* (kene) conj. though not. § 205.  
*cyrch* m. an attack, onset, raid.  
*cyrchaw* to fetch, bring. 231, 18.  
*cyrchu* to attack, set upon, march upon, make for, approach.

a *gich* 239, 1

*cyrn*, see corn.  
*cyryscwyðad* a quarrel, contention? 230, 9.  
*cysgawd* m. shade, shelter, shadow. 241, 11.  
*cysgu* to sleep.  
*crystal* equally good, as good.  
 > *cy-war-sangu* to trample upon, oppress, crush. 149, 26. 152, 16. 180, 32.  
*cy-weir* prepared, equipped, complete. 158, 29. 179, 16.  
*cyweiryaw* to prepare, equip, lay out.  
*cy-weithyð* a company. 194, 3.  
*cy-wir* true, just. 234, 6.  
 1. *cy-wlad* f. a neighbouring territory, borderland. 233, 18. *Rybu Vran vab Llyr llu rywmadur nat ygkamp ygkyulat ygkur* M.A. 180 b 13.  
 2. *cy-wlad* m. a compatriot. 230, 10.  
*cywrein* skilful, cunning.  
*cy-wrisseð* contention, strife. 234, 23. 236, 11.  
*cy-wyð-ol-(y)æth* f. harmony, music; pl. *-eu* 163, 14. Used also as sg. *pa gywydolyæth ev yw honn?* L.A. 82, 10.  
*chwaer* f. a sister; pl. *chwioryð*.  
*chware* to play; play; pl. *chwar-yeu*.  
*chwech*, *chwe* (whe) (spir.) *sic*.  
*chwedyl* m. a story, tale, news, tidings; pl. *chwedieu*.  
*chweg* sweet. 239, 21.  
*chwerthyn* to snile. *chwerðig* (§ 129) 225, 22.  
*chwerw* bitter. 230, 7.  
*chwi* you. Emphatic *chwichwi*, conjunctive *chwithen*, *chithen*. § 45.  
*Chwintus* n. pr. m. *Quintus*.

*da* (1) good, profitable; (2) goods, wealth, benefit.

*dabre* come! § 141.

*dad-ganu* to recapitulate, rehearse, recite. 173, 6.

*dadolwch* intercession, invocation. 235, 17.

*dad-rithaw* to re-transform. 199, 8.

*dadyl* m. and f. a meeting, dispute, suit, judgment; pl. *dadieu* (used as sg. masc. and pl.) a dispute.

*dadyl-fa* a meeting-place, court. O.W. *dadlma* 222, 13.

*dafad* f. a sheep; pl. *defeid*.

*dacur*, 139, 14 v. *clayr*.

*daffar provision.* 225, 19; cf. *gwnaeth Duw trvgar gardaul FB.* 15, 14.

*dangos (dankos) to shew, disclose, produce.* d. *cefnau to flee*; d. *brwnnoed to face*; d. *deheuoed turn the right to, face*; d. *yspardunau y to spur.*

*dala (daly) to hold, seize, retain, hold back, capture.* act. pret. ind. sg. 3 *delis (dellis)*, past subj. pl. 3 *delhynt*, pluperf. pl. 3 *dalyassant*.

*dam-gylchu to surround*; past part. *damgylchedig*.

*dam-gylchynu to surround.* 142, 17.

*damunaw to desire, wish, seek for*; past part. *damunedig*.

*damwein m. accident, chance, fortune, event*; pl. -eu; o ð. *by chance.*

*damweinaw (y) to happen to, to befall.* 173, 11. 150, 21

*danfon to send, dispatch.* 178, 7.

*dar f. an oaktree.* 197, 2.

*dar-estwng to subduc, subjugate, yield*; past part. *darestyngedig*.

*dar-fod to cease, end, come to pass, happen.* pres. ind. act. sg. 3 *deryw*; fut. ind. sg. 3 *dervyð*; impf. ind. sg. 3 *daroeð*; cond. sg. 3 *darffei*. § 160.

*dar-lleaw to read.* 231, 29.

*darmeth provision, preparation.* 162, 19.

*dar-o-gan prophecy, prognostication*; pl. *daroganneu*.

*darpar (am) m. preparation (for), provision, project.*

*darparu to prepare, intend.* 196, 7. *dar-ym-red to pass to and fro*; 210, 7.

*dathoedd, see dyfod.*

1. *daw m. a son-in-law*; pl. *dofyon*.

2. *daw, see dyfod.*

*dawn gift, mental endowment*; pl. *donyeu*.

*dayar (dayr, dair) f. earth, land, ground.*

*dayar-dy a subterranean vault.*

*dayar-gychwyn an earthquake*; 229, 1.

*dayoni goodness, virtue, valour.*

*dayrawl earthly, mundane, material.* 164, 9.

*de, see dy.*

*dechreu to begin, inaugurate*; a *beginning, origin.*

*dedwyð happy, blessed, virtuous.*

*dedwyðyd happiness, felicity.*

*defawd f. custom, practice, habit, ordinance*; pl. *defoden*.

*defnyð m. material, element, substance, cause*; pl. *defnyðeu, defnyðyeu* witnesses, guarantors, etc. in a lawsuit.

*deg, deng (nas) ten.* § 41.

*deheu (1) right (dexter), righteous*; (2) *the right hand or arm, the right side of the body, south, South-Wales*; pl. -oeð.

*Deheu-barth South-Wales.*

*dehongyl (dehogyl) to interpret*; interpretation. 173, 8. 13.

*dehol to expel, banish.* 143, 21. 153, 7.

*deifaw to roast.* 199, 28.

*deil (coll.) leaves.*

*deissyfeid (deissyfyt, dissinit) to demand, request, seek, merit.*

*deissyfyd (dysseifyd) sudden, unexpected.* 147, 3. 187, 23. 208, 17.

1. *delhynt, see dala.*

2. *delhynt, see dyfod.*

*delw f. image, form.*

*delwad m. creator.* 227, 1.

*delwyd, see dyfod.*

*deni, see l. tan.*

*derwen f. an oak-tree. collen d. a young oak.*

*dethol select, picked.* 202, 29.

*deu m. two*; f. *dwyl (dui, du).* § 42 (a).

*deubi, see dyfod.*

*deu-ðeg (nas.) twelve.*

*deu-ðeg-mlwyð twelve years old.*

*deu-ðyblig double, two-fold.* 214, 29.

*deugeint forty.*

*deugeinfed fortieth*; ar y d. *with forty men.* § 165.

*Deu-gleðyf the name of a cantref in Pembroke.* 204, 5.

*deu-hanner divided in two equal halves.* 221, 7.

*deuth, see dyfod.*

*Dewi n. pr. m. David.*

*dewin m. a magician.* 225, 16.

*dewis to choose, prefer.*

*dewr brave.*

*dewreð process, valour, prime of life.* 140, 6. 180, 10. 186, 1. 4. warriors 144, 1, (omnem armatum militem).

*Dews (Deus) Lat. Deus.* 227, 1. 20.

1. *di, see ti.*

2. *di (dy) (voc.) O.W. = later i, y, prep. to. diði to her.* § 195.

*di-aerfa without slaughter.* 170, 10 (sic leg.)

154, 26

175, 8 191, 22

181, 12

157, 1

162, 24



pdup. ind 3<sup>rd</sup>.  
dihagyssei,  
 153, 31

chian to flee,  
 escape. 205.7

to/

di-afael exempt from seizure. 223, 32.

di-angc to escape. pret. ind. act. sg. 3 diengis (dihegis).

di-al to avenge; vengeance.

di-am (O.W.) for. § 164.

di-amheu undoubted, certain, evident. 235, 18.

di-anaf flawless, whole. 202, 5.

di-annod without delay.

di-anrydeu to dishonour. 142, 6.

di-arfeu unarmed. 156, 1.

di-arfod unprepared. 177, 30.

di-arfu to disarm.

diawd drink. 170, 16.

did, see dodi.

di-drifwr n. a hermit. 165, 8.

di-dryf a solitary place, hermitage. 165, 9.

di-ðarbod to consider, care. heb ð. parum cogitans 184, 14. impf. ind. act. pl. 3 diðorynt 175, 26. § 147.

di-eithyr outside. § 172. yn y d. 222, 14.

di-en buds. 241, 19. Arch I. p. 503.

di-eu, dieuoeð, see dyð.

difa to destroy, annul. 197, 13.

di-fanw (O.W. dimanw) to disparage, slight. pres. subj. act. sg. 3 difanwo. 224, 7.

di-farnu V judge, decide against. 140, 9. 220, 13. 16. fut. sg. 3 diwarnawd 228, 20.

di-fei faultless, perfect. 238, 15.

di-fetha to destroy. 197, 31.

di-fryssio to hasten, speed. 242, 2.

di-funer exempt from allegiance to a lord. 223, 31.

di-fwlch without a notch. Cleðyf D. n. pr. m. 204, 12.

di-fwyn void, idle, unused, untouched (of a virgin). 201, 4.

di-fwynyant profitless. 211, 8.

diffeith waste.

diffeithaw to lay waste.

diffeithwch n. a waste, wilderness.

differei, see diffryd.

diffryd (rac) to defend, protect (from). past. subj. act. sg. 3 differei; pret. ind. sg. 3 diffyrth, diffrrth. § 133a.

diffurn? 228, 11.

di-garyad unloving, unkind. 142, 4.

1. digawn (dygawn) n. a sufficiency; sufficient.

2. digawn to be able, to effect, do, accomplish; pres. ind. sg. 1 digonaf.

di-gribyaw (y) to attack. 205, 5. Cf. yn-gribiaw.

digrif pleasant, agreeable.

digrifwch pleasure, enjoyment.

di-gyfoethi to dispossess, deprive of territory. 191, 17.

diheu undoubted, certain. d.-porth firm support. 234, 14.

di-hewyd affection, inclination, desire. 175, 25. 180, 32. 182, 11. ?adj. lager

dilëu to exterminate, annihilate.

dilid to pursue.

di-luyð exempt from hosting. 223, 31.

dillad (coll.) clothes, dress. 154, 8.

dim a thing, something; nothing, naught. dilëu hyd ar ðim to annihilate; dilid hyd ar ðim to pursue to extinction; adv. at all.

din a fortress. DinTywi n. l. 205, 27.

Din-dagwl n. l. Tintagel.

dinas m. a city, citadel; pl. dinas-soeð.

di-obeithaw to despair. 190, 13.

di-od to take off, direct, extract.

di-oëf (O.W. diguadef) to suffer, undergo, withstand.

diocwr verily, certainly. 176, 1.

di-o-gel safe, secure.

diogelwch safety, security.

diolch (i) to thank.

dipynwys, see dybynu.

dir necessary. 190, 10.

dir-fawr very great, huge, enormous.

dirieid wicked. 225, 12.

dirwy f. a fine, mulct.

di-rybuð without warning. 158, 12.

disgyblu to study, imitate (like a disciple). 156, 22. Cf. Hg. I. 208, 5.

disgyntu to dismount, descend, alight, land, put up at.

dispeilaw to unsheathe. 199, 13.

dissifid, see deissyfyd.

distryw to destroy, demolish.

ditheu, see titheu.

dithwn (O.W.) this day. 208, 15. 16.

di-wall careful, unceasing. 164, 5.

1. diwarnawd m. a day.

2. diwarnawd, see di-farnu.

diweddyð n. evening. 241, 13.

diweð end or d. at last.

di-weir chaste. 164, 15.

diweir-deb chastity. 190, 16.

diwethaf last. 154, 30.

di-wreioð an uprooting. 233, 3.

di-wreioðedig uprooted, demolished. 155, 4.

di-wyll cultivation. 167, 8.

**dodi** (*dody*) *to place, put, give, charge.* pres. ind. act. sg. 3 **did**; **dodi ar y gyfraith** *to appeal to the law*; **dodi ym mhen un** *to suggest, submit, entrust, hand over.*

**doðyw, doent**, see **dyfod**.

1. **doeth wisc, sage.** 143, 3.

2. **doeth**, see **dyfod**.

**doeth-ineb wisdom.** 142, 32.

**Dofyð m. the Lord, God.**

**Dofyðyad m. the Lord.** 231, 15.

**dofyon**, see 1. **daw**.

**dogyn portion, share.** 202, 14.

**doið**, see **dyfod**.

**dolur grief, anguish.** 144, 20.

**doluryaw to grieve.** 154, 25, 204, 20.

**domni** = Lat. *Domini*. 237, 2.

**donyawg gifted, endowed.** 235, 19.

**donyeu**, see **dawn**.

**dos**, see **myned**.

**dothuif, doy, doynt**, see **dyfod**.

**drachefyn**, see **trachefyn**.

**dragon, dreig f. a dragon**; 172, 29.  
*a battle standard.* pl. **dreigeu**.

150, 26, 180, 2, 184, 3.

**drein** (coll.) *thorns.* 230, 32.

**dros**, see **tros**.

**drud bold, arrogant, wicked.** 186, 13.  
232, 8.

**drudannaeth f. arrogance.** 165, 28  
(*protervia*).

**Drud-wyn m. the name of a hound.**  
204, 8.

**drwg bad, evil**; *mischief, harm.*

**drws door, entrance**; pl. **drysseu**.

**drwy**, see **trwy**.

**drycin** (i.e. **dryg-hin**) *foul weather.*  
225, 6.

**drychafel to raise, lift**; *rise.*

**dryg-ðamwein misfortune, ill-luck.**

**dryll m. portion, fragment**; pl. **-eu**.

**dryllyaw to break in pieces, shatter.**

**dryssawr m. a doorkeeper.** 234, 8.

**drysseu**, see **drws**.

**du black.**

**duc m. a duke.**

**duch, dug**, see **dwyn**.

**du-hunaw to awake.** 173, 6.

**Du-las** (Ir. *Dub-glas*) *a river-name.*  
146, 14.

**du-un accordant, agreeable.** 216, 23.

**duw (dyw): pob d. on every day.**

201, 5. **d. Sadwrn on Saturday.**  
228, 21. 240, 10.

**Duw m. God.** pl. **dwyyweu** 142, 21.

**dwfrein**, see **dwyrein**.

**dwfyr (dwfwr) m. water.**

**dwrn a fist, hand**; pl. **dirn.** 235, 2.

**dwy**, see **deu**. **dwyyweu**, see **Duw**.

**dwyyawl divine.**

**dwy-law** (pl. of **llaw**) *hands.*

**dwyn to take, carry, bring, capture**;

§ 133 (b). **d. ar gof to call to mind.** **d. ruthur to attack.** **d. yr dygyn to affirm on oath.** pres. ind. act. sg. 1 **dygaf**; fut. ind. pass. **dygetawr** (§ 129. n.); imper. sg. 2 **dwg**; pres. subj. sg. 3 **duch** (§ 110 n. 2); pret. ind. sg. 3 **dug**.

**dwyrein (dwfrein, dwyfrein) the east.** 172, 1. 181, 17.

1. **dy**, see 2. **di**.

2. **dy (de) (voc.) poss. adj. thy.** § 57.

3. **dy (de)**, see **ti**.

**dy-borthi to carry, inflict.** 180, 26.

**dy-bryd ugly, foul, base.** 178, 6;  
180, 19; 190, 26.

**dybynu to hang down.** 230, 18.

**dycco, dyccwy**, see **dwyn**.

**dychymyg m. invention, device**;  
pl. **-eu, -yon.** 164, 26.

**dyð** (O.W. *did*) *m. day, daytime, daylight, date*; pl. **dieu** (after numerals), **dieuoed, dyðyeu**; **d. brawd Doomsday**; **hanner d. mid-day.**

**dyð-gweith on a certain day, one day.** 199, 10.

**dy-ðwyn to bring.** 194, 13.

**Dyfed Demetia.**

**Dyfnarth n. pr. m.** 200, 28.

**Dyfnaint n. l. Devon.** 206, 5.

**dyfod (deuod, douot) to come.** § 141.

**dyfodedigaeth f. a coming, arrival.**

**dy-fryssyaw to hasten.** 242, 2.

**dyfuant, dyfyð**, see **dyfod**.

**dyfynnu to summon.** 201, 1. 205, 2.

**Dyfn-wal n. pr. m.**

**dyffo**, see **dyfod**.

**dyffryn m. a valley.** **D. Llychwr the valley of Loughor.**

**dyffgyyaw to fail, lack.** 145, 24.  
180, 11.

**dy-gaboli to belabour, beat soundly**  
207, 21.

**dygaf, dygetawr**, see **dwyn**.

**dygonho**, see 2. **digawn**.

**dy-gryn terror.** 228, 33.

**dygrynnyaw to seize, clutch.**  
206, 20.

**dy-grynoi to avail, profit.** 153, 10.  
175, 30.

**dy-gwyðaw to fall, chance.**

**dygwyðedigaeth f. setting (of the sun).** 151, 4.



*dygyn* hard, severe; a test, proof.  
See *dwyn*.

*dy-gyrchu* to make for, set upon;  
*draw*. 194, 23. 202, 12. 206, 24.

1. *dy-heð* discordant, strange?  
*piteous*, a pity? 194, 19.<sup>1</sup>

2. *dyheð*? 228, 27. Here MA.  
73 b 6 has the variant *tuedd*, pl. of  
*tu* 'country-side, country.'

*dy-leith death*. 232, 1.

*dylyed f. due*, claim, right, title.

*dylyedawg* high-born, noble; pl.

*dylyedogyon*. 140, 29. 155, 14.  
156, 24.

*dylyedus due*, proper. 182, 20.

*dylyu* (*delcu*) to have a right to,  
*deserve*, *be due*, *owe*. 171, 26. 208, 20. 23.

217, 25. 237, 19. <sup>4</sup>

*dyn* m. and f. a human being, man;  
coll. *men* 204, 5. pl. -*yon* (*deneon*).

*dy-nessau* to approach, draw near.

*dyn-y-orn* (cf. Ir. *duin-organ*) homicide, murder. 222, 17.

*dyrchefynt*, see *drychafel*.

*dyrn-awd* m. a blow; pl. *dyrnodeu*.

*dyrn-feð* a handbreadth. 197, 24.

*dy-roði* to give. pres. ind. act.  
sg. 3 *dere*, *dyry*; imperat. sg. 2 *dyro*.

*dyrys* (1) difficult, intricate; (2)  
*adversity*. 162, 20. 167, 16. 175, 18.

*dysg* m. teaching, instruction,  
*example*, *behaviour*. 164, 12. 182, 19.

184, 23 (*hortamen*). 187, 7. 191, 17

*dysgu* to teach, instruct.

*dysseifyd*, see *deissyfyd*.

*dywad*, see *dywedud*.

*dywal* fierce. 183, 13. 233, 4.

*dywalhau* to harass. 185, 26.

*dyfyð*, see *dyfod*.

*dyw*, see *duw*.

*dywedud* to say. § 133.

*dywygyad* (*di-*) manner, fashion.  
164, 12.

1. *e*, see *yð*.

2. *e*, see *i. y*.

*eb-rwyð* swift, quick. 176, 11.

*ebryn*? 228, 27.

*ech* outside of, beyond? 228, 16.

Cf. FB. 66, 8; 106, 30; 140, 31; MA.  
208a 49.

*Echel* Achilles.

*echenawg* needy, destitute. 143, 5.

*echwrys* violent, fierce. 227, 22;

Cf. FB. 159, 5; 199, 20. MA. 247,  
24. 36.

*ed*, see *yð*.

*ederyn*, see *adar*.

*edifar* repentant, sorry. 149, 17.

*edir*, see *adaw*.

*edirn* (*etyrn*) sovereignty, supremacy. 235, 3. 236, 15.

*edrych* to look, see. 164, 23. 220, 9.

*ed-rif* descent, lineage. 212, 29. Cf.  
MA. 168a 51.

*ed-ucher* (= *hyd ucher*) till evening.

193, 1. 203, 5.

*edyw*, see *ydyw*.

*eðewis*, see *aðaw*.

*ef* (*eff*) *he*, it. §§ 45; 47. Emphatic  
*efo* (*effo*); conjunct. *ynteu*. § 45 (b). (c)  
*efelly* thus, so. See *felly*.

*efo*, *effo*, see *ef*.

*Efyas* n. l. a cantred in Herefordshire. 206, 4.

*effeirad* m. a priest; pl. *effeiryeid*.

*eglur* clear, bright, brilliant,  
renowned, famous. 167, 1. 169, 22.

*eglur-der* brightness, brilliance.  
173, 1.

*eglwys* f. church; pl. *eglwysseu*.

*egnad* (O.W.), pl. *egneyd*, see  
*ynad*.

*englyn* m. a stanza of three or four  
lines. 200, 13.

*englylon*, see *angel*.

*enghyrth* (*eghirith*) terrible, painful. 238, 10. FB. 1772; MA. 351b 21.

*ehang* unrestricted, free. 173, 29.

*ehawg* m. a salmon. 197, 28.

*ehedeg* to fly. 172, 29. 156, 27 162, 24

*ehofyn-der* fearlessness, confidence,  
courage. 187, 4.

*ehunan* himself; pl. *ehunein* § 60.

*ei*, see *myned*.

*eidaw* his; *eidunt* theirs. § 55.

*Eiðt Egypt*. yr E. 172, 18.

*eigawn* ocean, sea. 161, 18.

*eingon* f. an anvil. 196, 21.

1. *eil* second, next. *eil hynaf* eldest  
but one; *eilweith* a second time,

again; *bop eilwers* alternately.

2. *eil* a son. 200, 28; 205, 24.

*eilenwi* to fulfil, accomplish.  
152, 14. 169, 22.

*eillaw* to shave, to cut (hair).

*einym* ours. 169, 14. § 55.

*eirant* they will arise. 229, 19; 20.

See RC. VI, 27.

*eirchad* a suitor, suppliant. 234, 5.

*eir-m-oed* since my time. 198, 9.

§ 197 n.

<sup>1</sup> For *oed dyhed ketu y ryw* was *hwnn* WB. 475, RB. 116 has *ys oed gryssyn ketu* &c.

"elo neu far  
ar ddwrws"  
(Lewis)

eiry *snow*.

Eiryawn n. pr. m. 204, 30.

eiryf *number*. 172, 14.

eir-y-oed (eiroed) *ever, always*.  
§ 197 n. 140, 3.

eisseu *want, indigence*. 146, 2.  
199, 19.

eissoes *yet, nevertheless*.

eissyfflad *hell*. 231, 13. v. l. issaf  
wlad, MA. 74b 14. eissyfflat, FB.  
16134. v. l. Eissyf wlad MA. 27a<sup>50</sup>.  
See FB. 302<sup>23</sup>.

eissyllud *progeny, followers*. 232, 9.  
Cf. FB. 44, 2; 203, 24; MA. 143a 39.  
169a, 35.

eisteð (eyste) *to sit*; e. wrth y gaer  
*to besiege the city*.

eisteð-fa f. *a seat, throne*; pl. -eu.

eithaf *end, extremity*; pl. -oed.

eithyr *prep. except*. § 172.

el, see *myned*.

*Elly n. pr.*  
el-chwyl *a second time, again*. 141,  
22. 142, 22.

104, 8.  
elhei, elhid, elhynt, eloch, see  
*myned*.

Elen n. pr. f. *Helen*.

ell (ill, yll) *all*, see § 67.

ellwng *to dismiss, dispatch, let*;  
*shed (blood)*. past. subj. act. sg. 3  
ellygei, pret. ind. sg. 3 ellygwys, etc.  
past part. ellyngedig.

ellyn *a razor*. 203, 25.

em, see *yn*.

emelldigedig *accursed*.

Emrys n. pr. m. *Ambrose*.

Emyr n. pr. m.

en, ena, see *yn, yna*.

encil, encilyaw *to retreat*. 185, 1.

encyd *space of time*. 184, 8.

ene, see *yny*.

eneid (eneyt) m. *life, soul*; pl. -eu;  
*myned e. dros e. to engage in a life-*  
*for-life struggle*.

enfyn, see *anfon*.

enguis (O. W.), see *enwi*.

enill *to gain, win*. 145, 18.

enneint *an ointment, a bath*. 143,  
13. Cf. RB. 76, 11.

Enoc n. pr. m. *Enoch*.

ennynnu *to kindle, fire; be inflamed*.

enrydeð (anryded) m. *honour,*  
*dignity*. 142, 16. 144, 11. 145, 21.

enrydeðu (anrydedu) *to celebrate*.  
154, 23. pres. subj. act. sg. 3  
enrydeðocao.

enrydeus *honourable, noble, vener-*  
*able, dignified*. 143, 24. cf 141, 17  
154, 26

enteu (entheu, entehu) pers. pron.  
sg. 3 m. §§ 45(c); 46(c).

enw (heno) m. *a name*.

enwi *to name*. pret. ind. act. sg. 3  
enguis (O. W.) 218, 5.

eny, see *yny*.

enywed (ennuet) *damage, injury*.  
Sew y turyw ac enwywet llosgy tey a  
thorry aradyr BCh. 63, 8.

1. er, see 1. yr.

2. er (yr) *prep. for*. §§ 53, 197.

3. er, see 1. y.

er-by n *against*; yn erbyn *to meet,*  
*against, by*. § 173. yn awch e.  
*against you*. 180, 19.

erbynyaw *to receive; withstand*.

erbyneyd (erbyneid) *to receive*.  
141, 16. 143, 25.

erchi (hercki) *to ask, request, bid*;  
pres. ind. act. sg. 1 archaf.

ereghun, ereghunt, see *rwng*.

ereill, see *arall*.

ereint *silver*. 200, 24. 203, 19.  
205, 5. Cf. Rhys, Celt. Heathendom,  
p. 125.

erestyn m. *a juggler*. 147, 13. The  
parallel passage in M. A. 531a 55 has:  
ac en rith kroesan ac arwestdyn ac  
gwareyt.

ereu 230, 1 = eireu MA. 73b<sup>46</sup>,  
see *geir*.

er-gelu *to hide*. fut. ind. pass.  
ergelawr 227, 28. ergelhawr ib. 29.

er-glybod *to listen to*. imper. sg. 2  
erglyw 235, 10. 236, 22.

er-gryn *dread, fear*. 202, 31.

er-gyd m. *a stroke, blow, cast*; pl.  
-eu.

er-hyl *hunt, chase*. 201, 18; 204, 8.

er-lid *to pursue*.

er-lysu *to reject, deny*. 229, 30.

ermid m. *a hermit*. pl. -wyr.

ermud? 232, 10.

ermyn-wisc *a robe with border of*  
*crmine*. 161, 29.

eryf? 229, 4. 9.

eryr m. *an eagle*; pl. -od 154, 3.  
*metaph. a leader*.

es, see §§ 94; 159 n. 2.

Esgeir Oervel n. l. *Sciscenn Uar-*  
*beöl in Ireland*. 201, 32. 203, 3.

esgob m. *a bishop*; pl. escyb.

esgobaeth f. *a bishopric*; pl. -eu.

esgobawd *a bishopric*.

esgolheig m. *a scholar, clerk*; pl.  
-ion.

esgyll, see *asgell*.

> *enryfedu (enryfeddu) to wonder, marvel* 154, 2 165, 27  
*enryfed* 158, 29

- esgyrn, see asgwrn.  
 esgyrnu to ascend, mount, climb.  
 esmwyth-der m. *casc, rest*.  
 estrawn a stranger. 225, 4.  
 estwng = gestwng to let down.  
 e. gantunt incumbentes 176, 30.  
 etifeð m. an heir; coll. heirs.  
 141, 1. pl. -yon 181, 26.  
 eto, see etwa.  
 etheuis, see ađaw.  
 ethol to choose, select.  
 ethynt, see myned.  
 etwa (eto) yet, still. ettwa 191, 7.  
 eu their. § 57. eu hun themselves.  
 eur m. gold.  
 eur-đwrn golden-handed, liberal.  
 pl. -đirn 235, 2. 236, 14.  
 eureid golden, gilt, set with gold.  
 184, 3 (aureus). 150, 25 161, 1  
 eur-gleđyf-ruð golden-sword-red.  
 233, 9.  
 euryr golden. 201, 11.  
 ewin f. a nail, talon, claw. 201, 9.  
 ewythy m. an uncle (brother of  
 one of parents, grand-parents, or  
 great-grand-parents); pl. ewythreð  
 206, 2.  
 eyl-weyth, see l. eil.  
 fal (mal) conj. as. § 216.  
 felly thus. yfelly 164, 30. 166, 20.  
 fi, fifi, see mi.  
 fry above.  
 fyhud? 231, 9.  
 fyn (nas.) my. §§ 57, 59.  
 ffalst cunning. 147, 16.  
 Ffichteid Picts.  
 ffiam f. a flame, fire. 160, 4. 185, 4.  
 fflamychedig inflamed, flaming.  
 159, 20.  
 Fflandrys Flanders.  
 ffo to flee. λ ar ffo in flight.  
 fforð f. a road, way, passage, means;  
 pl. ffyrð.  
 fforest f. a forest; pl. -i.  
 Ffreinc f. France.  
 ffuruf f. form, manner; pa ff. how?  
 ffustaw to strike, beat. 175, 2.  
 ffwrn f. a furnace. 228, 22.  
 ffyð faith. 149, 31.  
 ffyð-lawn faithful. 181, 3.  
 ffynhawn f. a fountain, spring.  
 ffyrð, see fforð.  
 gadael (gadayl) to leave, allow.  
 215, 29. See gadu.  
 gadaw to leave.  
 gadu to leave, allow, permit. pres.  
 ind. act. sg. 2 gedy; § sg. 3 gad  
 146, 2; pl. 2 gedwch; imper. pass.  
 gat-her.  
 gafael (gafayl) f. a seizing, hold-  
 ing; seizure. 222, 15.  
 gafael-fawr of mighty grip.  
 Glewlwyd G., 204, 24.  
 galar sorrow. 229, 9.  
 galw to call, summon, name. pres  
 ind. pass. gelwir; imper. pl. 2  
 gelwch.  
 gallel, gallu to be able; power,  
 might. pres. ind. act. sg. 2 gelly;  
 sg. 3 geill, etc.  
 gan, see can.  
 ganed, see geni.  
 garscon? 199, 12.  
 garth a mountain ridge. 205, 29.  
 garw rough.  
 gast f. a bitch.  
 gawr f. and m. a shout, cry;  
 battle. 205, 10. 229, 23.  
 gayaf (gaeaf) m. winter. 156, 14.  
 [gefeil tongs, pincers. geffeil 194, 14.] *v. ceseil*  
 1. geir (geyr) m. a word, request.  
 pl. -eu; o u eir with one accord.  
 2. geir (gyr, ger) near. g. llaw  
 near, close by. g. bronn before. § 168.  
 gelfin a beak. 196, 23.  
 gelyn m. an enemy; pl. -yon.  
 gelynwawl hostile.  
 gellwng to loose, let loose, let,  
 dismiss, deliver up, draw (a sword).  
 pret. ind. act. pl. 3 gellygassant.  
 geneu m. jaws, mouth. 229, 31.  
 geni to be born; pret. ind. pass.  
 ganed. 227, 12.  
 genthi, genti, see can.  
 ger, see 2. geir.  
 Gereint n. pr. m. 203, 9. 211, 8.  
 Gillamor (Ir. Gilla mōr Big Lad)  
 n. pr. m. 192, 14.  
 Gilleamwri (Ir. Gilla Muire the ser-  
 vant of Mary) n. pr. m. 192, 13.  
 Gilpadrig (Ir. Gilla Pádraig the  
 servant of Patrick) n. pr. m. 192, 13.  
 gilyð, see cilyð.  
 girad lamentable, piteous, terrible.  
 173, 3. 192, 9.  
 glan f. a bank, shore; pl. glanneu.  
 glanhäu to clean, polish. 194, 16.  
 gleif m. and f. a lance, spear. Hg.  
 II. 91, 12 = paladyr onn CM. 87, 32.  
 gleis, see cleis.  
 glew brave, stout; a brave man,  
 hero.—n. pr. m. 204, 20. 233, 4

Frollo 157, 31

158, 19

glew-der *bravery, boldness, valour.*  
 Glew-lwyd n. pr. m. 204, 24.

glin m. *a knee*; pl. -yeu.

gloew *bright, sparkling.* 235, 3.

glud *tenacious, fast, diligent.*

175, 5. MA. 285 a 1.

glyn (wrth) *an adhering (to), following close.* 195, 4.

glynn m. *a valley, glen.* 197, 12. 204, 14.

Glyth-myrr n. pr. m. 201, 12.  
 Glythfyr ib.

glyw m. *a ruler.* 233, 3. 235, 4.

gnawd *customary, usual, common.*

gnotædig *accustomed, usual.*

142, 11. 145, 22.

gobeith *hope.*

go-bedr *or the four-corners (of the world).* 228, 3. FB. 199, 20. 160, 19. MA. 236b 28.

go-ben-yð m. *a pillow*; pl. -eu.

go-byrr m. *a fee, pay.* 221, 25.

go-chel *to avoid, ward off, shun, escape.* 148, 30. 150, 21. 159, 3. 169, 28.

Godlont *Gothland.* 156, 11.

go-driccawr m. *a lingerer, sojourner.* 239, 8.

go-dwrð m. *a rumbling noise.* 172, 28.

go-ðef *to suffer, allow, permit.* 233, 8.

goðeith m. *a health.* 185, 5. 226, 4.  
 goðeu *purpose, design.* 239, 8.

yg g. gweith Mynaw FB. 187, 29.

gof m. *a smith.* 196, 21.

gofal m. *anxiety* 147, 6; pl. gofeilon 156, 30.

gofalus *anxious.* 149, 27. 160, 3.

gofud m. *affliction, injury.* 143, 6.

gofwy *to visit.* 142, 3.

gofyn (wrth) *to ask (of), seek.* 199, 2.

gofynnyad *an asking; demand.* 205, 20.

Gogigwr n. pr. m. 204, 23.

go-gleð m. *the North.* 145, 12. 200, 32. 201, 15.

go-gof f. *a cave*; pl. -eu.

go-gyfarch *prominent, conspicuous.*  
 Read with Add. gogyfurð (*duodecim pares*), q. v. 162, 16; 171, 11.

go-gyf-urð *of equal rank, peer.* 171, 11, v. l.

go-hir *to delay; delay, respite.*

golchi *to wash, polish.* 194, 6.

go-leith *to dissolve.* 233, 7. FB. 58, 30.

goleuhâu *to light up, illumine,* 173, 1.

golud *wealth.* 198, 20. 233, 12.

go-luð *to hinder, obstruct.* 233, 12.

golwg f. *a look, glance.*

gor-alw *to cry or call aloud.* 184, 18.

pret. ind. act. sg. 3 goremwis. 231, 24. FB. 283, 10. MA. 195 a 54.

gor-cheidwad m. *a guardian, custodian*; pl. gwercheidweid 208, 17.

gor-chyfygu *to overcome, conquer.* 155, 26.

gor-chymyn (gorchymun) *to command, commend, commit to; a command, injunction*; pl. -eu.

gorðerch-wraig f. *a concubine*; pl. -wrağð 164, 12.

gorðeri m. *a shrieking, noise, disturbance.* 176, 19. 183, 22.

gor-ðifwng *very steady, steadfast.* 233, 1.

Gor-ðu n. pr. f. 207, 12.

gorðwy *oppression, violence.* 233, 2.

gor-ðyfeid *to experience, enjoy habitually.* 142, 14. FB. 28, 18; 44, 13; 88, 27; 258, 22.

goremwis, see gor-alw.

gor-esgyn *to invade, overrun.*

1. goreu best.—n. pr. m. 195, 8.

2. goreu, see gwneuthur.

gor-fiwng *very severe, austere.* 233, 3.

gor-fod *to overcome, conquer.* g. ar 181, 4. pres. ind. sg. 3 gor-yw 230, 13. § 160.

gor-frowys *to cease, rest.* 157, 25. 148, 24

gor-hoffder m. *a boasting, vaunting.* 174, 34.

gor-hoffeð *a boasting, affectation.* 174, 13.

gor-llewin *the West.*

gormes f. *oppression, tyranny.*

gormod *excess*; 164, 6. yn o. too much, 176, 6.

gor-or m. *a border, side.* 242, 7.

gor-seð (gworseð) f. *a seat, throne, court.* 234, 21. 240, 4.

gor-sefyll *to withstand, stand.*

pres. ind. act. sg. 3 gorseiww 234, 22.

pres. pass. gorseuir 241, 7. Cf. MA. 160 b 2.

gor-uchel *very high or loud.* 150, 7. 241, 6.

gorug, see gwneuthur.

Gor-wen n. pr. f. 207, 12.

gorwyð m. *a steed, warhorse.* 242, 5.

cf. In  
fo-dend  
bonfire

\**gor-ysgelu* to overflow (the bowl).  
 pres. subj. sg. 3 *gorysgelho* 240, 2.  
*Ni ddodai eirif ar ra dillad*  
*Na gwin grysgelo nac ysgarlad*  
 MA. 222 b 18.  
 Cf. *gwin gorysgalawe* RB. 103, 18.  
*gorysgalauc in large bowls* E. Lh.  
*gosgorô retinuc.* 141, 9.  
*go-sgubaw* to sweep. pres. ind.  
 act. sg. 3 *gosgupiô* 241, 21.  
*gosgymonn* (literally fuel, food)  
*occasion.* 174, 5. RB. 114, 4; Hg.  
 II. 34, 30; FB. 6, 8; 306, 16.  
*gossod* to put, establish, set, attack,  
 thrust. *g. ar* to attack; *g. drwy*  
*arrange.* past part. -*edig* 148, 16.  
*gosteg* f. silence, the proclaiming  
 of silence in court. 211, 3. 8. 234, 20.  
*gostegu* to proclaim silence. 234, 19.  
*gostegwr* m. a silencer. 234, 19.  
*graô* f. a step; pl. -*eu.* 166, 27.  
*grawn* m. grain (coll.) 225, 1.  
*Greid* n. pr. m. 198, 18.  
*Greidawl* n. pr. m. 199, 10.  
*grîô-fan* to groan, a groaning.  
*Groeg* f. Greece.  
*Gruffuô* n. pr. m. 162, 4. 235, 17.  
*Grugyn* n. pr. m. 203, 19.  
*grwm-seid* having a dark-coloured  
 haif. 194, 15; MA. 954a 2. Cf.  
*gwrwm-dudet* FB. 83, 19; *gweilch*  
*gwrwm-de* 84, 4.  
*grym* force, strength, effort. 151, 13.  
 184, 24.  
*gwad* m. a denial. 231, 12.  
*gwadu* to deny, refuse; pres. subj.  
 pass. *gwatter* 239, 6.  
*gwae* woe! *g. a.* woe to him who..  
 225, 4. 10. *g. wann* woe to the weak!  
 226, 2.  
*gwaed* m. blood. 150, 10.  
*gwaed-lyd* bloody. 184, 9.  
*gwaeô* an outcry, cry of distress;  
 pl. -*eu.*  
*gwaeth* worse; *gwaethaf* worst.  
*gwa-hanu* to separate. past. subj.  
 pass. *gwehenid* 183, 5. pass. part.  
*gwahanedig.*  
*gwa-hawô* to invite.  
*gwal* a lair. 202, 1; 203, 15.  
*gwala* f. a fill, sufficiency. 200, 3.  
*gwalc* a hawk; metaph. a leader;  
 pl. *gweilch.*  
*gwalc-lan* a band of heroes?  
 233, 23. MA. 150a, 40; 161 B 20.  
*Gwalchmei* n. pr. m. 173, 31.  
*gwal-par* strong-speared. 233, 24.

*gwalstawd* m. an interpreter.  
 MA. 128a, 42. Cf. Rhys, Celt.  
 Heathendom, p. 489.

*gwallaw* to serve liquor. 235, 1.  
 Anc. Laws, I. 32. § viii.

*gwallt* the hair of the head.

1. *gwan* to pierce; pret. ind. act.  
 sg. 3 *gwant*, § 133 a; past. ind. pass.  
*gwanpwyd*, § 134, (f).

2. *gwan* (gwan) feeble, weak.

*gwanar* a chief, lord. 233, 24.  
 MA. 181 a 40; 203 b 19; 220 a 34; v. Paden  
 221 a 45; b 37. *Kenic,*

*gwanas* a clasp, buckle. 239, 18.  
 FB. 250, 21. 18, 19; 23, 16; 59, 14;  
 MA. 144 b 26; 177 a 19; 205 b 4; 269a  
 29; 299 b 46; 48. *H 200,*  
*243*

*gwanhau* to weaken. 178, 6.

*gwanwyn* m. spring. 155, 27.

*gwaradwyô* m. disgrace, shame,  
 reproach. 150, 12.

*gwaradwyôus* disgraceful. 180, 29.

*gwarafun* to forbid, refuse. 168, 25.

*gwarandaw* to listen, hear.

*gwarawd*, see *gwa-red.*

*gwar-chadw* to guard, protect;  
*g. ar* to besiege. 146, 18.

*gwarchae* to besiege; m. a siege.

*gwar-der* humanity, pity. 153, 33.

*gware* to play; m. a game, play;

pl. *gwary-eu.* Cf. *chware.*

*gware* n. pr. m.

*gwa-red* to succour, help, rescue;  
 help, deliverance. pret. ind. act.

sg. 3 *gwarawd.*

*gwar-eô* meekness. 238, 2. RB. II.  
 1223.

*gwarth* disgrace, shame. 233, 23.

*gwarthaf* upper part, surface.  
*ar w.* on the top of 241, 20.

*gwartheg* kine, cattle.

*Gwarthegy* d n. pr. m. 204, 9.

*gwary-yô* m. a juggler. 147, 13.  
 Hg. II. 10, 15.

*gwas* m. a youth, lad, servant; pl.  
*gweis.*

*Gwasgwin* Gaseony. 160, 4.

*gwassanaeth* service, attendance.

*gwassanaethu* to serve.

*gwassanaethwr* m. a servant.

*gwa-sgaru* (tr. and intr.) to disperse,  
 scatter. past part. *gwasgaredig.*

*gwa-sgawd* shelter, protection.  
 148, 28; 156, 2.

*gwasgu* to press, crush.

*gwastad* level, even, constant,  
 temperate; *yn w.* constantly.

gwastadawl *constant*. 169, 4. v.l. (sic leg.)  
 gwawr *dawn*. 173, 15. metaph. 234, 8.  
 gwayw (gwaew) m. and f. *a lance, spear*; pl. gwewyr. 175, 2.  
 gwôam, gwôost, see gwybod.  
 gwedi prep., conj. after. § 174. 210  
 gwed f. *form, fashion*. pa (py) wed how?  
 gweði f. *a prayer*. 161, 28.  
 gweðiaw *to pray*. 215, 1.  
 gweðu *to besit, to submit*. 144, 6. 148, 11. 165, 5.  
 gweðus *fitting, meet, seemly*.  
 Gweðw n. pr. m. 201, 8.  
 gweðw *deserted, desolate, lonely*. 225, 9.  
 gwehenid, see gwahanu.  
 gweilch, see gwalch.  
 gwein f. *a sheath, scabbard*.  
 gweir-glawð f. *a meadow*; pl. -gloðyeu.  
 gweis, see gwas.  
 1. gweith m. *work, task*. yg g. at work. 226, 5.  
 2. gweith f. *a turn, time*; dyð-g. once; weithon (weithyon) *this time now*; pl. -eu sometimes. -eu . . . -eu ereill now . . . again. 187, 18.  
 gweith-red m. *an action, deed*; pan del ar weithred eum ad actum accedit 167, 21. RB. II 846.  
 gweled *to see, provide, arrange*.  
 gweledigaeth f. *a vision, dream*.  
 gweli f. *a wound*; pl. -eu, -oed.  
 gwely m. *a bed*. 241, 11.  
 gwell *better*; 204, 26. cyfarch g. *to greet*.  
 gwellâu *to improve, amend*. 214, 12.  
 gwelleu *shears, scissors*. 203, 25.  
 gwellig leg. *gwellig?* *to distribute?* 235, 2. FB. 45, 15. MA. 172b15; 181 b 39 v.l., 140 b 12.  
 gwellt (gwell) *grass*. 223, 12. Cf. Peredur, ed. K. Meyer, § 80, 16.  
 gwen *a smile*. 225, 22.  
 gwen-gan *white and fair*. 227, 26.  
 Gwen-hwyfar (Ir. Find-abair) n. pr. f. 172, 20.  
 gwenith m. *wheat*. 196, 3.  
 gwenn, see gwynn.  
 Gwenn f. *the name of Arthur's shield*.  
 gwen-wlad f. *a happy land*. 234, 8. = Heaven, MA. 173 b 24; 177 a 42; 189 b 20; 222 b 38.

gwenwyn m. *poison*. 202, 4.  
 Gwenwynwyn n. pr. m. 233, 24.  
 gwer-, see gor-  
 gwerin-dawd f. *virginity*. 238, 3. LA. 17, 4; 65, 21.  
 gwern (coll.) *alder-trees*. G. Abwy n. l.  
 gwers f. *a while, space of time*. 197, 29. 194, 6. pob eil-w. *alternately, in succession*. gwers . . . g. arall 175, 29.  
 gwersyll *a camp*; pl. -eu.  
 gwerth m. *price, reward*. = because 231, 33  
 gwerth-fawr *valuable*. comp.  
 gwerthfawrogach 169, 1.  
 gweryð f. *a virgin*. 161, 5; pl. -on.  
 gwestei m. *a guest*. 193, 9.  
 gwewyr, see gwayw.  
 gwiðon f. *a witch*.  
 gwin m. *wine*.  
 gwir (1) *true, truly*. g.-aberth 150, 17. g. gwell *truly better*. 226, 3. (2) *justice, right*. 223, 27.  
 gwirawd *a beverage, drink*; pl. gwirodeu. 164, 2. 235, 1.  
 gwisg f. *dress, clothing*; pl. -oed.  
 gwisgaw *to put on, wear*; part. gwisgedig *dressed, clad*.  
 gwlad f. *a kingdom, country*; pl. -oed, gwledi; g. *present the present world*. G. yr Haf n. l. 202, 29.  
 gwledig m. *a ruler*.  
 gwledychu *to rule, reign*.  
 gwleð f. *a feast, banquet*. 238, 1. 240, 7.  
 Gwndy n. l. 223, 10.  
 gwnel, see gwneuthur.  
 gwneuthur *to make, do, form*. § 142.  
 gwnn, see gwybod.  
 gwor-saf *support, bulwark*. 236, 9.  
 gworsseð, see gorseð.  
 gwosparth *support* 233, 23. Cf. gosparth Brython MA. 124 b 38.  
 gwr m. *a man, husband, vassal*; y gwr *he who* 239, 10; (applied to God) 203, 17. pl. gwyr *men, soldiers* 179, 11.  
 gwrach f. *a hag, witch*.  
 gwrað, see gwareig.  
 gwrawl *manly, brave, stout*; pl. gwrolyon. 139, 3.  
 Gwrbothu n. pr. m. 206, 3.  
 gwr-da m. *a noble*. pl. gwyrda; gwyrda *seint holy men*; MA. 142a.  
 gwrð *strong, vehement*. 233, 1. 235, 13; g.-fleið *a fierce wolf* 233, 3.  
 gwareig f. *a woman, wife*; pl. gwrað.



gwiregawl *romanish, cowardly*;  
pl. gwreigolygon. 186, 17.  
Gwr-gi (Ir. Fer-chū) n. pr. m.  
Gwr-gwst (Ir. Fer-gus) n. pr. m.  
gwrhau *to pay homage*.  
gwr-hyd *manliness, valour, bravery, strength*.  
Gwrhyr n. pr. m.  
gwrtheith *to dress, mend, temper; a dressing*; 195, 10. Cf. Hg. 38, 37.  
pl. -yeu.  
gwrth (wrth) voc. (1) prep. *against, towards, for, for the purpose of*; wrth hynny *because of that, therefore*; y-wrth *from, of; in comparison with*. §§ 53, 194. (2) conj. *because*. § 231.  
gwrth-dir *borderland*. 207, 12.  
gwrth-eb *to answer, reply*.  
gwrth-gasseð *rebellion, dissension*. 174, 4. Hg. 276, 2. LA. 15, 26; CM. 110, 28.  
gwrth-od *to give back, reject, renounce* 165, 7. pres. ind. act. sg. 3  
gwrthyd 154, 14.  
gwr-thrwam *very heavy*. 149, 28. 172, 26.  
gwrthryn *resistance, opposition*. 233, 23.  
gwrth-wyneb *opposite, adverse*;  
yg g. y mynyð *facing the mountain*;  
talu yn y g. *to pay in return*. 142, 23.  
gwrth-wynebu (y) *to oppose, resist*.  
gwrthyd, see gwrth-od.  
gwrych (coll.) *bristles*. G. Ereint n. pr. m. 203, 19.  
gwrys *strife, hostility*. 197, 31. FB. 63, 25; 85, 12; 159, 5; 193, 6; 199, 20; 200, 9.  
gwrys-g (coll.) *the smaller branches of a tree*. 225, 11.  
Gwy the Wye. Aber G. 206, 17.  
Gwyar n. pr. m. 173, 31.  
gwybod *to know, recognize; knowledge, courtesy*. § 143.  
gwybyðiad m. *an eye-witness*;  
pl. gwybyðeidd.  
gwychyrr *stout, resolute, bold*;  
superb. gwychraf. 183, 13; 191, 4; 192, 10.  
Gwydre n. pr. m. 204, 19.  
1. gwyð m. (coll.) *wood, trees* 241, 13. 21. *mast of a ship* 242, 8.  
2. gwyð *presence*; yny vyð, hyny vyð *lo! behold! thereupon*; 193, 1; 198, 13. 199, 27. yn eu g. *at once* 202, 24.

gwyðad, gwyðyad, see gwybod.  
gwyð-bwyll *some game like chess*; 164, 24; 167, 3. See RB. 153, 5.  
> Gwyðel *an Irishman*; pl. Gwyðyl.  
> gwyl-fa f. *festival, watch, ward*;  
pl. -eu.  
gwyliad m. *a guardian*.  
gwyllt wild; aeth yg g. *he became mad*. RB. 100, 6, 8. Cyledyr W.  
gwyneb (wyneb) *face*. 209, 23. 216, 27.  
Gwyneð *Venedotia, North Wales*. 161, 22.  
gwynn m., gwenn f. *white, blessed*;  
pl. -ion. gwyn y fyd *happy he!* 170, 18. Gwynn n. pr. m. 200, 25. Avon Wenn 173, 23.  
gwyn-seid *having a white haft*. 194, 15. Cf. Laws I. 586, 726. II. 866, cvii.  
gwynnyeith *pain, torture*. 231, 32. FB. 185, 5. FB. 303, 3; MA. 193 a 13.  
gwynt m. *wind, favourable wind*.  
gwyr, see gwybod.  
Gwyr n. l. Gower. 205, 24.  
gwyrð *green, fresh, vigorous*. 236, 25.  
gwyr-hau *to incline, bend*. 241, 13. FB. 241, 8.  
1. gwys f. *a summons, command*.  
2. gwys, see gwybod.  
3. gwys *a sow*. 205, 17.  
gwyssyaw *to summon*. 198, 24.  
gwystyl m. *a hostage*; pl. gwystlon.  
gwystyn m. *a withered stump*. 197, 4.  
Gwythyr n. pr. m. *Victor*.  
gynn, see cyn.  
gynt, see cynt.  
gyr, see 2. geir.  
gyrru *to send, despatch, drive, hasten* 199, 6; ry-yrnu (reherru) 213, 4.  
gyt, see cyt.  
1. ha, see 2. ac.  
2. ha interj. § 243.  
hac, see 2. ac.  
haeðu *to deserve, claim, merit*.  
hael *generous, liberal*; pl. -on.  
haelder m. *generosity*. 145, 17.  
hael-foned *one of noble descent*. 234, 21.  
haf *summer*. Gwlad yr H. 202, 29.  
haf-ðyð *a summer's day*. 242, 6.  
hafod *a summer dwelling*. 225, 9. Cf. RB. II. 277, 5.  
Hafren f. *the Severn*.  
hagen *however, yet, indeed*.



han-bwyllaw *to consider, remember* 190, 27. RB. 120; 17315.

handit, see hanfod.

han-denu *to have leisure, linger.* 190, 27 v. 1.

han-fod *to arise, issue; proceed from, descend.* § 160.

hanner (hanher) m. *a half, middle.* 140, 20. 179, 20. h. dyðmidday; h. nos *midnight*; h. gwr *a coward* 170, 24. 180, 32.

harð *fair, beautiful, comely.*

hawdit, see haf-ðyð.

hawð *easy, pleasant; compar.* haws.

1. hawl f. *a claim.*

2. hawl, see holy.

hawlwyr m. *a claimant.*

haws, see hawð.

hayach wellnigh, almost. 167, 6. 192, 15.

hayachen almost. 207, 23.

hayarn *iron, sword.* 160, 4.

1. heb, hebyr *says.* § 151.

2. heb (voc.) prep. *without, besides.* §§ 16 (i); 53; 175.

hebrwng *to conduct, escort.*

hebyr, see 1. heb.

heðw *to-day.*

heðwch *peace.*

heðychu *to make peace, pacify.*

hefyd *also, in addition.*

hegarwch m. *kindliness.* 226, 3.

heibaw adv. *past, by.* 156, 14. 204, 3.

heint m. *a sickness, disease.* 149, 28.

hela *to hunt, chase.*

helw *possession; ar y h. in his possession.* 152, 11; 204, 25.

helym f. *a helmet.* 159, 22.

hen old; an old man. superl.

hynaf.

hen-dad m. *an ancestor; pl. -eu.*

heneint (henein) *old age.* 139, 9.

1. heno, see enw.

2. heno *to-night.*

henw, see enw.

herw *a plundering, pillaging.* 235, 15. Cp. Gwynfyd herwr ywr hirmos MA. 361 a17.

herwyð *according to, by; yn h. according to; yn h. y nerth with all his might.* h. fal 165, 2.

hestawr, *a corn measure of about two bushels.* 199, 17.

heul f. and m. *the sun.*

heussawr m. *a herdsman.* 195, 3. FB. 174, 1.

hi she, her. Emphatic hihi, conjunct. hitheu. § 45.

hin weather. 209, 22.

hir long, tall; drwy h. o amser *for a long time* 141, 5. Compar. hwy.

Hir n. pr. m. 206, 1.

hir-flawð *a long tumult.* 235, 15.

Hir-las n. pr. m. 178, 16. 184, 10.

hitheu, see hi. *<hit, v. hyð.*

hob: dan eu hwb ac eu h. *pushing and kicking them.* 207, 22.

hoedel *lifetime, life.* 152, 18.

hoff-der m. *a boasting.* 174, 34. LA. 143, 22.

holy (holi) *to claim, ask, search, demand; imper. sg. 2 hawl.*

holl, see oll.

hollawl *whole, entire; yn h. completely, altogether.*

holtti *to split, cleave.*

honni *to proclaim.* 159, 25.

honno, see hwnnw.

Howel (Hywel) n. pr. m.

Humyr *the Humber.* 145, 11.

Huandaw n. pr. m. 204, 23.

1. hun sleep. 172, 26.

2. hun, pl. hunein *self.* § 60.

hwb, see hob.

hwch m. and f. *a pig.* 203, 11.

hwnn m., honn f., hynn n. *this.*

pl. hynn. §§ 61; 62.

hwnt *yonder; h. ac yman (yma) here and there.* 185, 25. 183, 1

hwnnw m., honno f., hynny n. *that.* pl. hynny. §§ 61, 62.

1. hwy (wy), hwynt *they, them.*

Emphatic (h)wyntwy, conjunct. (h)wynteu. § 45.

2. hwy, see hir.

hwyl f. *a sail; pl. -eu.*

hwylaw *to sail.* 157, 28.

hwynt, see 1. hwy.

hwyred *slowness, tardiness.* 151, 19.

hy bold. 239, 19.

1. hyd f. *length; prep. as far as, up to, § 177; conj. as long as, as far as, § 214; h. na so that not § 214; until almost 154, 13; h. pan until, so that § 226; h. tra while. § 230. ba h. whither?*

hy-dwf well-grown, tall. 158, 18. <sup>239/2</sup>

hyð *a stag; pl. -od.* 241, 12.

Hy-gwyð n. pr. m. 202, 19.

hynaf, see hen.

hynefið m. *an elder.* 210, 3.

hynn, see hwnnw.

hynny, see hwnnw.

hynt f. *a course, path, journey.*  
 ar h. *immediately.* 174, 16. 175, 6.  
 hyny vyð, see 2. gwyð.

1. i (voc.) prep., see 1. y.  
 2. i, see mi.  
 3. i, see yð.  
 iach *sound, whole.* 200, 16.  
 iachau *to heal.*  
 iad *the upper part of the head.*  
 230, 32.

iaen *ice, a sheet of ice.* 241, 12.  
 iarll (jarll) m. *an earl*; pl. ieirll.  
 iawn (yaun, jaun) (1) *right, just*;  
 ymlað yn i. *to fight in reality.* superl.  
 -haf, -af 198, 30. 31. (2) *a recompense,*  
*satisfaction.* 166, 15. 18.

iawnder m. *right.*  
 iðaw, iði, see 1. y.  
 iðew *a Jew*; pl. -on.  
 iechid *health, salvation.* 158, 21.  
 ieith f. *language*; pl. -oeð, -eu.  
 Iessu *Jesus.*  
 ieuanc *young*; superl. jenaf.  
 ieuentid *early manhood*; youth.  
 Ieuan n. pr. m. *John.* 231, 26.  
 in, see yn. ima, ina, see yma, yna.  
 inheu, inneu, see mi.

ir-lloneð m. and f. *wrath.* 159, 20.  
 is *below, beneath.* §§ 53, 178.  
 Iscawyn n. pr. m. 204, 20.  
 Islont *Iceland.*  
 issod *below.* 199, 5.  
 Iwerðon f. *Ireland.* 155, 28.

llad (Ir. laith) *liquor, drink.* Sic  
 leg. 230, 31? Cf. FB. 201, 22; 23.

lladrad *robbery.* 222, 17.  
 llad *to strike, slay, cut off, kill.*  
 impf. ind. pl. 3 lleðynt; impf. pass.  
 lleðid; pret. pass. llas. p. part.  
 llaðedig. § 134(a).

Llaesgenym n. pr. m. 204, 25.  
 llaessäu *to relax, abate, moderate.*  
 llafur m. *labour, exertion, toil,*  
*effort.*

llafuryaw *to labour, endeavour,*  
*attempt.* 140, 13. 159, 15. 166, 21.  
 180, 32. 186, 9.

llafuryus (llafurus) *laborious.*  
 191, 27.

llafyn *a blade*; pl. llafneu, llafnawr.  
 y llall *the other*; pl. y lleill. § 70.

Llamrei *the name of Arthur's*  
*mare.* 201, 20.

llann *an enclosure, land.* 223, 5;  
 Ll. daf n. l. *Llandaff.*

172, 28

llanw (1) *to fill.* 175, 7. (2) *tide.*  
 198, 7. 209, 4. 216, 11.

llary *generous, gracious, gentle.* 233,  
 31. MA. 249b 48; 247a 48; 241b 42.

llas, see llað.

llathru *to glitter, glisten.*

llaw f. *a hand*; pl. dwy-law.

cymhell y l. *to force to surrender*;  
 152, 23; rag ll. *at hand, imminent.*

llawch *protection.* 233, 6. MA.  
 192b 8; 247b 6.

llawen *glad, gay, merry.* ll. yw  
 genyf gaudeo 170, 13.

llawer many, much.

llawhethan 227, 28 = llywethan<sup>1</sup>  
 MA. 73a 18 v.l. *one of the constella-*  
*tions.* Cf. Barddas I., 404.

llaw-hir *long-handed.*

llawn *full.*

llawr m. *the ground; the earth*;  
 239, 19. 234, 10. 239, 9. yr ll. *to the*  
*ground*; y lawr *down.*

lle m. *place*; pl. -oeð. *where* 225, 13.  
 yn lle *instead of, for* 180, 2; yn y lle  
*immediately*; yssid le iðaw gwynaw  
*he has reason to lament*; pa le *where?*  
*with subjunctive clause, where.*  
 225, 13.

llechu *to lurk, hide.* 177, 22.

lled m. *breadth.* 154, 7.

Lledewig, see Llywedig. *llydewig.*

lled-lwm *half-bare, half-naked.*

Gwrgwst Ll. n. pr. m. 200, 28.

llefaru *to speak.* 229, 31.

llef m. *voice, sound.*

llefein *to shout, cry*; m. *a shout-*  
*ing.*

lleferyð *to say*; speech, utterance.

139, 22. 202, 16. 220, 4.

lleng *a legion.* 179, 12; 187, 22 (fem.?)

Llengrys n. l. *Lengriac.* 179, 6.

llel *less, inferior.* 162, 1.

lleidyrr m. *a thief*; pl. lladron.

1. lleill, see llall.

2. lleill; y ll. *one of two.* 194, 17. § 71.

lleis *voice.* 153, 4.

lleissawn *generous, liberal.* 235, 11.  
 MA. 154b 11; 159b 8.

lleith *death.* 232, 2. 233, 7.

llemenig *striding, bounding.*

Cadwr Ll. n. pr. m. 161, 23.

llenwi *to fill.* 206, 22.

Lles n. pr. m. *Lucius.* 157, 31.

llesg *feeble, faint.* 191, 20.

llesgeð f. *feebleness, sloth, coward-*  
*dice.* 166, 30; 167, 5. 9. 180, 23.

lletty m. *a lodging*; pl. -eu. 195, 9.

<sup>1</sup> A popular etymology for Leviathan.

lundysei 148, 16

lletty-wr m. a host. 195, 9.  
Lleu n. pr. m.  
lleufer f. and m. light; pl. -eu.  
llew m. a lion. 186, 30. 235, 11.  
llewenyð joy.  
llewychu to shine. llewychi 232, 7,  
leg. llewychei? MA. 243 b 9.  
lleyg m. a lay-man; pl. -yon.  
lliaws m. a multitude, host.  
llicrið, see llygru.  
llid m. anger, indignation.  
llydyaw to become angry.  
llin, see l. llynn.  
llinad (llin-had) coll. m. linseed,  
sg. llin-hedyn. 199, 18, 20.  
llithraw to slip, glide along, pass  
by. ll. at to flock to. 145, 23.  
llithrei 203, 20 leg. llathreiglistered;  
cf. RB. 2, 2.  
1. lliw (llyw) m. colour, hue. 164, 13.  
241, 16. 2. lliw, see l. llyw.  
llof-ruð (lit. red-handed) a slayer  
of men. 233, 10.  
llong f. ship; pl. -eu.  
lloneid fill, the full of anything.  
llosg arson. 223, 1.  
llosgi to burn, set on fire. 173, 5.  
llu m. a host, army; pl. -oed.  
lluched lightning. 227, 25. pl.  
lluceid. 185, 27.  
Lluð n. pr. m. 198, 18. See Rhÿs,  
Celt. Heath. p. 125.  
lluðed fatigue. 207, 9.  
lluðyas to hinder. 208, 21.  
lluest a camp; pl. -eu.  
Llundein London.  
X llunyaethu to arrange, dispose,  
array. 146, 5. 165, 19. 182, 14.  
X llunyeithaw to arrange, put in  
order. 178, 2.  
lluoss-og-rwyðam multitude. 141, 28.  
llurug f. a coat of mail. 150, 25.  
llu-yð m. a hosting, military ex-  
pedition. 222, 14; 223, 32.  
llw m. an oath. 221, 4.  
llwch a lake. 229, 5. 241, 8. Ll.  
Tawy 205, 25. Lk. Ewin 205, 21  
llwdyn m. the young of animals;  
pl. llydyn. 203, 4.  
llwfyw m. a coward. 242, 9.  
llwgyr harm, damage, disad-  
vantage. 218, 25.  
llwm bare, poor. 226, 4. 241, 1.  
242, 8.  
llwrw (lr. lorg track): yn ll. as  
regards? 198, 17. loco, vice, Davies.  
llwyd grey.

Llwyðawg n. pr. m. 205, 6.  
Llwyðeu n. pr. m. 202, 25.  
llwyn (lluhyn) m. a wood, grove,  
bush; pl. -eu.  
llwyr complete; yn ll. wholly, com-  
pletely.  
llwyth m. a tribe, people. 227, 27.  
Llychlyn Norway. 157, 9:  
Llychlyn-wr m. a Norseman.  
157, 11.  
Llychwyr n. l. Loughor. 205, 5.  
llydan broad, extensive.  
Llydaw Armorica, Brittany.  
Llydewig Armorican, Breton.  
Glythmyr Ll. 201, 12.  
llydw a host, household, com-  
munity; 223, 10; 13. See MA. 308 b 28,  
249 a 14, 343 a 51.  
llyfyr m. a book.  
llyfyr-der m. cowardice. 233, 7.  
llygad m. an eye. taraw l. in the  
twinkling of an eye, immediately.  
Llygad-ruð n. pr. m. Red-eye.  
206, 2.  
llygru to corrupt, mar, spoil,  
violate. 167, 4. 189, 3. 195, 13; to  
become foul 241, 3.  
llyngcu to swallow. 3 ss. pr. ind. llwne 154, 12  
llynghes f. a fleet. 145, 9.  
llym keen, sharp. 241, 1.  
llyma to here! 169, 17 (en). § 244.  
llyna to there! 169, 16 (en). § 244.  
1. llynn (llin) f. a lake, pool; pl.  
llynneu. Ll. Lliwan 206, 17 = Linn  
Llan, Nennins ed. Mommsen,  
p. 214.  
2. llynn a drink. 193, 15.  
llynnwyn m. a pool. 225, 1. Leg.  
Wall. 480 b 4.  
Llyr n. pr. m. 139, 1. 206, 19.  
llys f. a court, palace; pl. llyssoeð.  
llyssu to reject. 218, 7.  
llythyr m. an epistle, letter; pl. -eu.  
1. llyw (llyw) m. a leader. 235, 11.  
236, 23.  
2. llyw, see l. lliw.  
Llywelyn n. pr. m.  
llywodraeth f. management.  
llywodyr m. a leader, commander;  
pl. llywodron.  
llywyaw (llywaw) to rule, direct.

ma, see mae.  
mab m. a son; pl. meib, meibon.  
Mabon n. pr. m. 195, 24. See  
Rhÿs, Celt. Heath., p. 21.

Ll. Llawn  
154, 4

Lodoneis 155, 20

**mach** m. *a surety, guarantor*; pl. **meicheu**, **meychyeu**. 210, 20; 21; 217, 14; 221, 25.

**Madawg** n. pr. m. 204, 29.

**maëu** *to forgive; forgiveness*. 231, 4

**maëneint** *forgiveness, remission*. 150, 20.

**mae** (**may**) *is*; pl. **maent**. *what is?* 219, 7. §§ 152. 154 (a).

**maëu** *to beat, strike, pound*. 159, 24. 183, 23.

**maen** m. *stone*; pl. **mein**; m. **freuan** *quern-stone*. m. **-dy** m. *a stone house*. 198, 15.

**maer** (**mair**) m. *a steward, reeve*; pl. **meirri**. 202, 7. 219, 9.

**maerony** f. *stewardship*. 221, 18.

**maes** (**mays**) m. *an open field, open court, battlefield*; **roði cad ar** f. *to give battle*; **cawssant y** m. *they won the day*.

**maestawd** *majesty*; **maes** m. *field of judgment* 229, 13. MA. 165 a 22; 171 b 51; 195 a 9.

**magu** *to rear, bring up, to produce, engender, conceive*. pres. ind. sg. 3 **meccið** 242, 9. FB. 244, 21. MA. 363 a 21; 33.

**magwyr** f. *a wall*. 198, 12.

**mal** (**fal**) conj. *as; when*. § 216.

**malpei** (**malphei**) *as if*. **y** m. 195, 11.

**mam** f. *mother*.

**man** *fine, small, insignificant*. 184, 18; 196, 10.

**manach** m. *a monk*; pl. **meneich**.

**manachlawg** f. *a monastery, convent*; 188, 22. m. **gwrageð** 190, 15.

pl. **-logoeð** 165, 4.

**Manawyðan** n. pr. m. 206, 19.

**march** m. *a horse*; coll. *horsemen*. 202, 30. pl. **meirch**, **meirych**. 143, 15.

162, 20. **ar feirych** *on horseback* 174, 18.

**marchawg** m. *a knight*; pl. **marchogyon**.

**marchogaeth** *horsemanship, riding*.

1. **marw** *dead*; pl. **meirw**.

2. **marw** *to die*. 145, 1. 149, 9.

**marwawr** (pl.) *cinders*. 228, 6.

**marwolyaeth** (**marwolaeth**) f. *death*. 145, 7.

**mawl**, see **moli**.

**mawr** *great, big*; compar. **mwyr**; super. **mwyrhaf**, **mwyrhaf**.

**mawr-fuð** *great gain or advantage*; 233, 11.

**Maxen** n. pr. m. *Maximus*.

**meccið**, see **magu**.

**með** *mead*.

**með-gell** f. *a mead-cellar, cellar*. 164, 2. 204, 27

**með-gorn** m. *a mead-horn*; pl. **-girn** 235, 1.

**með-gwyn** *a mead-banquet*. 235, 1. 236, 13.

**meðu** *to possess*. 181, 5.

**meðwl** m. *thought, purpose, mind*.

**meðyant** m. *possession, power, authority*.

**meðylyaw** *to think, consider, meditate*.

**mefyl** f. and m. *disgrace, shame, insult*. 225, 10.

**meglyd** (**yn**) *to grip, grasp, cling to*. 176, 14; 202, 20. FB. 51, 12; 141, 29; 183, 24; 247, 7.

**megys** conj. *as, like, as it were*. § 217: m. **na** *as if not*; with subj. *so that* 145, 23. 180, 3.

**mehyn** *place, country?* 229, 2. FB. 123, 28; 133, 25; 169, 1; 190, 29; 202, 8; 210, 10.

**Mei May**. 208, 5.

**meicheu**, see **mach**.

**mein**, see **maen**.

**meint** f. *size, number, quantity, length*; such. **pa** f. *how much*.

**Meir Mary** (*the Virgin*).

**meirw**, see **marw**.

**melyn** *yellow*.

**melys** *sweet*. 170, 18.

**Mellt** n. pr. m. 201, 11.

**menegi** *to make known, declare*.

**meneich**, see **manach**.

**Menw** n. pr. m. 201, 28.

**merch** f. *a daughter*; pl. **-ed**.

**Merchyr**; **dywM**. *on Wednesday*. 240, 10.

**meredig** *irrational, foolish*. 193, 5. RB. 115, 18. Laws I., 260.

**merthyr** m. *a martyr*. 161, 4.

**messur** m. *a measure, impression*. 202, 26.

**messuredig** *measured, according to measure*. 199, 19.

**meu** *mine*; § 55.

**Meugant** n. pr. m.

**Meuruc** n. pr. m. *Mauricius*.

**meychen**, see **mach**.

**mi** (**fi**, **fy**, **i**) *I, me*. Emphatic **mifi**, conjunctive **minheu**, **inneu**. § 45.

1. **mil** f. *a thousand*; pl. **-yoeð**.

2. **mil** m. *an animal*; coll. 204, 5. pl. **-eid**.

adaw y maes,  
190, 26

mil-wr m. a warrior.  
 milwryaeth f. prowess, warfare.  
 164, 15; 175, 25; 177, 8; 185, 30.  
 mill-dir f. a mile.  
 minheu, minneu, see mi.  
 mis m. a month.  
 moch (coll.) swine.  
 moð m. manner. 191, 30.  
 modrwy f. a ring; pl. -eu.  
 moes custom. 193, 7. RB. II. 300, 1.  
 molawd praise. 237, 4.  
 moli to praise, commend. pres.  
 ind. sg. 3 mawl. 233, 11.  
 molyant praise, fame. 146, 2. 4  
 (probatus); 156, 21; 181, 19; 185, 17.  
 1. mor (voc.) with adjectives, how,  
 so, as.  
 2. mor m. sea; pl. -oeð.  
 morðwyd m. a thigh. 205, 23.  
 Morgannwg Glamorgan.  
 mor-gerwyn f. a maelstrom, whirl-  
 pool. 154, 13.  
 mor-gynlawð the raging of the sea.  
 235, 13. MA. 173a<sup>31</sup>; 193b<sup>7</sup>; 254a<sup>44</sup>;  
 266a<sup>29</sup>.  
 mor-grug (lit. anthill), ants; sg.  
 -yn m. 199, 20.  
 Moruð n. pr. m.  
 morwyn f. a maiden; pl. morynyon.  
 mud dumb, mute.  
 mul m. a mule; pl. -yoeð.  
 muner m. a lord, king.  
 mur m. a wall, rampart; pl. -oeð.  
 y Mureif Morray. 152, 28.  
 murmur a growling. 172, 27.  
 mwg m. smoke. 199, 23.  
 mwy, mwyhaf, see mawr.  
 mwyalch f. a blackbird. 196, 17. 20.  
 mwyhäu to increase, augment.  
 mwynhäu (muenhau) to use, employ,  
 enjoy, profit. 199, 33; 216, 4; 217, 26;  
 218, 1.  
 Myg-ðwnn smoke-dun, or for  
 Myng-ðwn dusky-maned, the name  
 of a horse. 201, 8. Gwynn m. 206, 15.  
 myhun I myself. § 57.  
 myn (in oaths) by. 203, 1. 206, 7.  
 mynaches m. a nun; pl. mynach-  
 esseu.  
 myned to go; m. dros to break  
 through, penetrate; § 140.  
 mynnu (mennu) to desire, wish,  
 seek, endeavour.  
 mynwent f. a graveyard, 188, 17.  
 L.A. 84, 8.  
 mynwgyl neck. 176, 14.  
 mynych frequent.

mynyched m. frequency. y m.  
 hwnnw so often. 191, 1. v. l.  
 mynyð m. a mountain; pl. -eð.  
 y fynyð upward, up.  
 Mynyw Menevia, St. David's.  
 mysg midst.  
 y mywn (mewn) within, in; o f.  
 inside, within. § 181.  
 1. na (spir.), before vowels nad not.  
 § 236.  
 2. na (voc.), before vowels nag not.  
 § 237.  
 3. na (spir.), before vowels nac nor.  
 § 238. na . . na either . . or 168, 2.  
 naccäu to refuse.  
 nachaf lo, behold! 187, 21. (voc.)  
 153, 16. 189, 3. 193, 2.  
 1. nad (nat), see l. na.  
 2. nad is not (dependent). § 155 (ε).  
 Nadolig Christmas. 154, 23.  
 Naf m. the Lord. 235, 16. 236, 28.  
 1. nag a refusal. 202, 10. 16.  
 2. nag, see 2. 3. na.  
 nam, see l. 3. na.  
 namyn, namwyn conj. except;  
 after a negative, but. § 219.  
 nant a valley; pl. nanheu 229, 32.  
 1. nar = na + def. art.  
 2. nar = ra + ry. 184, 1. § 95 N.  
 naw (nas.) nine.  
 nawð m. protection, sanctuary.  
 nawfed ninth. 208, 5.  
 neb any; any one, someone. y  
 neb a who. § 64.  
 nef m. heaven; pl. -oeð.  
 neges f. a business, affair, quest.  
 nei m. a nephew; pl. nycint.  
 neill one (of two); ar neill-du on  
 one side. § 69; 71  
 neill-du-edig apart, aside.  
 neirthyad m. a strengthener, stay.  
 227, 2; FB. 241, 21; MA. 193b, 1.  
 neithawr a wedding feast; pl.  
 neithoreu, -yeu 189, 9.  
 ner m. a lord. 233, 5.  
 nerth m. and f. support, help,  
 strength, power; pl. -oeð.  
 nerth-fawr mighty. 233, 5.  
 1. nes prep. until. § 182.  
 2. nes, nessaf, see agos.  
 nessäu to draw near. 147, 16.  
 nessed nearness. yr n. however  
 near. 154, 20.  
 Nethawg n. pr. m.  
 1. neu (voc.) or, nor. § 220.  
 2. neu now. before vowels neud;  
 with ry, neur. § 221.

— neuad, 193, 15.

x y Mureif, y wlat a lhwir o enw arall Reget

*newidyaw* to exchange (blows). 186, 8; 191, 24. *tra newitywn* an *dehenoed* *quando dextras conferemus*. 170, 19.

*newyð* *new*. *o n. anew, again, recently*. 178, 28. 179, 4. 195, 15 v. l.

*newyn m. hunger*. 149, 5; 186, 30. *ni (ny) we, us*. Emphatic *nini*, conjunct. *ninheu, ninneu*. §§ 45 (a).

*nifer m. a number, host, retinue*; pl. -*oeð*.

*no* (spir.), *nog*, with def. art. *nor*, conj. *than*. § 222.

*nodî* to mark, notify, specify.

199, 18. *pluperf. pass. sg. 3 ry nodyðoeð*. 205, 10.

*noði* to protect, preserve; pres. subj. *sg. 3 notho (nodho)* 193, 8.

*noe*, see *no*.

*noeth* naked, bare, unprotected, unarmed; pl. -*on*.

*noethi* to bare, to unsheathe.

*Normanyeid* Normans.

*nos f. night*.

*nottâu* to mark, specify. 201, 24.

*Nuð n. pr. m.* 200, 25.

*Nwython n. pr. m.*

1. *ny* (spir.) before vowels *nyd, not*. § 235.

2. *ny*, see *ni*.

1. *nyd*, see 1. *ny*.

2. *nyd* is *not*. § 155 (ð).

*nyeint*, see *nei*.

*Nyfer* the river *NeVERN*. 204, 12.

*nym, nys*, see 1. *ny*.

1. *nyth m. a nest*; pl. -*od*. 154, 3.

2. *nyth*, see 1. *ny*.

*nyw*, see § 49 (c). 233, 2. 8. 12.

1. *o* (a) (voc.) prep. *of, from, with, for*; with passive verb, *by*. *o gyfreith* according to law 211, 17. § 183. with def. art. *or* (ar).

2. *o* (spir.), before vowels *od, or, os* conj. *if*; neg. *ony, onyd*; with the pres. of copula *os*, neg. *onyd*. § 224.

*obry* below.

1. *oc* prep. = 1. *o* before pronouns beginning with a vowel. § 183.

2. *oc?* 230, 16.

*och! alas!* *o. fi ah me!* 142, 21.

*odi* to snow. 241 passim.

*odid* scarcely, hardly, rarely. 226, 6. 232, 11; 13.

*odolygyssant*, see *adolwyn*.

*oðieithyr* outside 158, 26; 164, 19; *o. hynny* besides. 161, 34, 162, 21.

*oðyma* hence.

*oðyna* thence, from that time.

*oðyno* from there.

*oðy-rwng* from between. 196, 19.

*oðy-uchtaw* above it. 206, 22.

*oe*, see 1. *o*. *oeð, oedynt*, see *bod*.

*oed* (oyd) *m. age*; appointed time, respite, delay. 208, 20.

*oer* cold; dire, cruel, deadly.

*o. grynedig* fearfully trembling. 152, 16.

1. *oes f. life, lifetime, age, generation*; pl. *oessoed*.

2. *oes* (oys) there is. §§ 152, 154 β. *oestru?* 230, 33.

*ofn-awg* timorous. 184, 21.

*ofyn m. fear*. 148, 22. 187, 31.

*ofynhâu* to fear. 142, 4. 167, 26.

*offeren* mass; pl. -*eu*. 162, 29.

*ohan-, ohon-*, see §§ 53, 183.

*oia* interjection. § 243.

*ol* track; *yn olafter, behind*. *a oed yn ol* or *dyð* what remained of the day.

*olyf-wyð* (oliwyð) *m. coll. olive-wood*. 165, 21.

*oll, holl, all*. § 67.

*onaðunt* of them. § 53.

*oni, onyt*, see *ny*.

*or*, see 1. 2. *o*.

*Orc, Orch* the Orkneys. 156, 12. 162, 11.

*organ f. a musical instrument*, *organ*. 163, 6. 15.

*orig* (dimin. of *awr*) a short hour. 230, 13.

*os*, see 2. *o*.

*osid* if there is. 213, 22, 28. §§ 152, 154

*osp m. a stranger, guest*. 193, 7.

*ottid*, see *odi*.

*Owein n. pr. m.*

*pa, ba* (voc.) what? § 80.

*pab m. a pope*. pl. -*eu* 220, 8. 157, 16

*Pabo n. pr. m.*

*pader f. the Paternoster*. 215, 4. 5.

*pagan a pagan, heathen*; pl. -*yeid*.

*paladyr m. a spear-shaft*. 194, 23.

*pallu* to fail. 180, 11.

*pan* (pann) (1) whence, § 225.

(2) (voc.) when, § 226. (3) that; *pan yw* 155a (β); *hyd pan until, so that*.

*yr pan* since. 170, 5.

*parabyl m. a speech*. 170, 4.

*paradwys f. Paradise*. 238, 4.

*parattôi* to prepare. 148, 7.

*parawd* prepared, ready, easy.

144, 3. 158, 24. 30.

*parchell m. a young pig*. 203, 10.



pared m. *a wall, partition.* 196, 20.  
 parhau *to remain, continue.* 180, 15.  
 parth m. and f. *part, direction;*  
 149, 2, 201, 5. p. *ac towards.* 139, 9.  
 Parth *Parthia.* 172, 6.  
 parth-gleð *left-hand side;* sic leg.  
 229, 29. MA. 274a 25.  
 pawb *everyone, everybody.*  
 pebyll m. *a tent;* pl. -eu.  
 pebyllaw *to pitch a tent or tents,*  
*encamp.* 173, 24.  
 pechawd m. *sin;* pl. pechodeu.  
 pedeir, see pedwar.  
 pedr-ongyl *square.* 154, 7. RB. II.  
 12, 31.  
 pedwar m. pedeir f. *four.*  
 pedwyrð m. *pedwareð f. fourth.*  
 peðyð *infantry.*  
 peðydganta *a troop of infantry.* 171, 5.  
 Pedyr *Peter.* 228, 19.  
 pei *if he were.* 200, 16. conj. *if.* § 227.  
 peidaw (peidyaw) (ac) *to cease*  
*(from).* 140, 4. 179, 3. 190, 21;  
 p. o 167, 3 v. 1.; p. yn 178, 24.  
 RB. II. 253, 10.  
 peir m. *a cauldron.* 202, 7. 14.  
 peiss-awg *coated.* Hir P. n. pr.  
 m. 206, 1.  
 pell *far, distant;* ym p. *far off;*  
 o b. *from afar.* comp. bellach *further.*  
 193, 16 v. 1.  
 pellenhig *a stranger.* 193, 7.  
 penn *a head, top, point, end;* month.  
 225, 12. pl. -eu. am b. *against* 146, 26.  
 uch b. *over, above;* ym p. *at the end.*  
 Penn n. pr. m.  
 pennaf (penhaf) *foremost, chief.*  
 Penn-beið *chief of boars.* 201, 16.  
 penn-cawr *chief giant.*  
 Penn-dragon *chief leader.*  
 penn-fiestin *a helmet.* 150, 25;  
 159, 17. RB. II. 55, 19; 155, 7; 162, 14.  
 penn-saer m. *a chief craftsman.*  
 204, 27.  
 penn-swyðwr m. *a chief steward.*  
 160, 13.  
 penn-trullyad m. *a chief butler.*  
 160, 12.  
 penyd *penance.* 150, 20. 238, 8.  
 Peredur n. pr. m.  
 perfeð *middle, centre.* 176, 26.  
 183, 3. 29. 210, 10.  
 perffeith *perfect.* 237, 12.  
 peri *to cause, make, create.* 190, 19.  
 234, 10.  
 perigyl m. and f. *a danger;* pl.  
 perigleu. 151, 30. 153, 30.

perthcled, see parth-gleð.  
 1. perthyn (at) *to belong (to).* 155,  
 21.  
 2. perthyn *appropriate, pertinent.*  
 234, 18. 235, 8. MA. 191a, 26; 228a, 26.  
 peryf m. *the Creator.* 234, 9. MA.  
 228a 18.  
 petrus m. *a doubt.* 150, 4 v. 1.  
 167, 4.  
 petrussaw *to doubt.* 169, 7.  
 petrusser *hesitation, doubt.* 147, 28.  
 150, 4.  
 peth *a thing, something, somewhat.*  
 peth, beth = pa beth *what?* §§ 74. 79.  
 203, 11.  
 peunyð adv. *daily, everyday.*  
 beunyð 239, 10.  
 peunyð-yawl *daily.* 190, 9.  
 phellas: ara phellas 239, 17. "*which*  
*I have set apart,*" Skene, FB. I., 289;  
 Pughe s.v. gwanas has: a ryfullias  
 "*which I have prepared.*" X  
 pieu *whose is?* 193, 5. 6. *to whom*  
*it belongs,* 16, 7. §§ 83, 161.  
 pigo *to peck at.* 197, 23.  
 pimp, see pump. < pice - , v. pyg  
 plant (coll.) *children.*  
 pleid f. *a side, party;* o b. *on the*  
*side of.*  
 plith: o blith *from among;* trwy  
 blith *through the midst of;* ym plith  
 among.  
 plwyw *people.* 227, 12. LA. 106,  
 19; 22. RB. II. 270, 24.  
 pob *each, every;* bob un, bob deu  
*in ones and twos;* pob eilwers *alter-*  
*nately;* § 43. pobmynnig *any place.*  
 223, 8.  
 pobyl f. *people;* pl. pobloed.  
 poen f. *pain;* pl. -eu. 142, 13.  
 poened *pain, torment.* 230, 21.  
 pony, before vowels and with pres.  
 of cop. ponyd, interrog. part. = Lat.  
 nonne? § 240.  
 1. porth m. *a gate, gateway;* pl.  
 pirth. 193, 11. 194, 3. 234, 12.  
 2. porth f. *help, assistance, sup-*  
*port.* 175, 6. 176, 18. 196, 8.  
 208, 20. 25.  
 3. porth *a port, harbour.* P. Cerðin  
 n. l.  
 porthawr m. *a doorkeeper.*  
 193, 12. 17. 234, 12.  
 porth-fa f. *a port.* 172, 21.  
 post *a post, pillar.* Pabo p.  
 Prydein 162, 3.  
 pren m. *a tree, cross.* 230, 17.



Presseleu n.l. 204, 6.  
 pressennawl *pertaining to this world*. 198, 20. LA. 130, 31; 142, 4.  
 present *present*. gwlad p. *this world*. 230, 5; 232, 10. MA. 272a, 16; 281, 36.  
 priawd *own*. 181, 18.  
 prif-gerô a *panegyric*. 235, 5.  
 prif-glod *loud praise, eulogy*. 235, 6.  
 priodas f. *marriage*. 141, 2.  
 priodawr m. a *proprietor, land-owner*. 212, 24. 27; 213, 8; 220, 28. 31.  
 priodol-der m. *proprietary right*. 212, 28; 213, 1. 20. RB. II. 341, 21.  
 processio (procesiwn) *procession*.  
 profi to *try, test, tempt*. 139, 11.  
 237, 17. p. part. profedig 146, 1; 164, 15; 206, 13.  
 1. pryd *aspect, beauty*. 140, 22; 155, 25.  
 2. pryd m. *time*; pa bryd *when?*  
 p. pan *when* 229, 25. p. na *since not*. § 228.  
 prydu to *sing, compose poetry*. 235, 5.  
 pryder *care, anxiety*; pl. -eu.  
 pryderus *anxious*. 190, 29.  
 Prydein f. *Britain*.  
 Pryd-wenn f. (*fair-shaped*) the name of *Arthur's ship*. 199, 6; 202, 12.  
 prynu to *buy, redeem*. 238, 14.  
 Pumlumon n. l. *Plimlimon*. 199, 22.  
 pump (nas.) *five*.  
 pur pure, *perfect*. 238, 5.  
 pur-ðu *jet black*. 225, 21.  
 pur-ffawd *pure, perfect happiness*. 237, 13. MA. 315 b14.  
 pur-wynn m. -wenn f. *pure-white*.  
 pwll m. a *pit, hole*. 200, 6.  
 pwy *who? which?* 139, 11. 194, 14. *who*; p. bynhac *whoever*. § 81.  
 pwys a *weight, burden*. 238, 6.  
 pwystyr *why?* 193, 14.  
 py (voc.) *what?* § 185; pyr *why?* § 229. py diw̄ (O.W.) to *whom*. 146, 1. § 80 n. 4.  
 pyd m. a *pitfall, snare*. 177, 25. MA. 231 b4; RB. II. 76, 10.  
 pylu to *make blunt*. 159, 17.  
 RB II. 106, 31; 56, 33; 71, 19; 161, 1.  
 pym, see pump.  
 pymhed *fifth*.  
 pymtheg (nos.) *fifteen*.  
 -pynhag *-soever*. § 81.  
 pyr, see py.

pysg m. a *fish*; pl. -awd. 154, 8. 198, 26. 241, 11.  
 pythw-nos a *fortnight*. 209, 6. 216, 13. 16.

racco (racko) *yonder*. § 63.  
 rad f. *grace, favour, blessing*. 140, 2/ 5. 12. 145, 18.  
 raff a *rope*; pl. -eu. 147, 4.  
 rag prep. *before, for, from*. §§ 52, 186. yn r. 195. 28. p yr. *wherefore?* 193, 13 v. l. r. wyneb *following, next*.  
 rag-ðywedud to *foretell*. 176, 15. p. part. rag-ðywededig *aforesaid*. 173, 3.  
 rag-fedylaw to *consider, provide*. 167, 18. 20; 169, 4.  
 rag-flaenu to *excel*, 164, 8. RB. II. 293, 29; 350, 11. r. y fforð iter *prae-cedere*. 179, 7.  
 ragod (rachod) to *waylay*; an *ambush*. 147, 1; 177, 16; 206, 12; 223, 6.  
 rag-weled to *forsee, provide*. 167, 20. 169, 4. part. weledig 169, 2 v. l.  
 rag-ynys f. *an adjacent island*. 202, 28.  
 ranc : r. boð *content, satisfaction*. 195, 12.  
 ranghei, see rengi.  
 rann f. a *division, part, portion, share*. ran 228, 7. pl. -eð. 227, 6.  
 rannu to *divide*. 141, 5. 179, 14.  
 redeg (rydec) to *run, race, pass by*.  
 redyn fern. Redyn-fre n. l. (*Fern-hill*) 196, 29.  
 Reged f., n. l. 152, 29. 155, 16.  
 reges *ebb-tide*; *adversity*. 228, 11. CZ. V, p. 566.  
 ▼ rengi boð to *satisfy, please*. pres. ind. sg. 3 reinc 194, 18; past subj. sg. 3 ranghei 195, 11. RB. II. 329, 18. MA. 321 b, 31.  
 rei (rey) *some, few*. y rei *those, such*; pob rei *both sides* § 66; rei . . rei (ereill) *some . . some* § 75.  
 reid (wrth) *need (of), necessity, trouble*.  
 reið (reit) a *shaft, antler*. 197, 1. MA. 148 b58.  
 Reiðwn n. pr. m. 204, 17.  
 reinc, see rengi.  
 Rein n. pr. m. *Regin*.  
 reolawdyr *regular*. 161, 8. RB. II. 171, 16; CM. 14, 15.  
 restru to *range*. 204, 11.  
 rew *frost, ice*. 241, 20.  
 rewi to *freeze*. pres. ind. act. sg. 3 rewhið 241, 3. 19. § 129.

6185 pap. to.

187, 10

**rewinyaw** to cause to perish, destroy, ruin. 3 sg. pret. ind. act. **rewinywys** 229, 22. cp. MA. 140a, 33; FB. 146, 6.

**rid**, see **ryd**.

**riein-gadeir** f. a queen's throne. 189, 8.

**rieni** pl. ancestors. 168, 13; 170, 12. 22.

**rif** number. 171, 16.

**ringhyll** (ringyll) m. an apparitor, a beadle. 210, 12. 18; 214, 21.

**riheð**? 228, 30. FB. 11, 10; 174, 2.

**rihyð** splendour, splendid? 227, 4.

MA. 195a, 12; 229, 21; FB. 6, 24; 8, 5;

110, 12; 112, 3; 211, 15; 212, 17; 305, 7.

**rin** a secret. 225, 7.

**rith** form, guise.

**rithaw** to shape, create, transform. 196, 27; 197, 7.

**riw** a slope. 242, 4.

**ro** prep. between. § 53.

**rod** f. a wheel. **gellwng cleðyf ar y r.** to brandish a sword in circle. 202, 21. MA. 286a, 35. L. Glyn Cothi 92, 10.

**roð** m. and f. a gift; pl. -yon.

**rofi**, see **ro**.

**roði** (roy, rohi) to give, put, place, grant, surrender.

**Ron** the name of Arthur's lance.

**ruð** red, ruddy. 228, 15.

**Ruð-fyw** n. pr. m. 205, 31.

**Rufein** f. Rome. 181, 4.

**Rufeinawl** Roman.

**Run** n. pr. m.

**ruthur** (rythur) f. a rush, onset. 151, 21. 24. 176, 12. 24. 178, 21.

182, 6. 8. 184, 25

**Ruthyn** n. l.

**rwng** (yrwng) prep. between. §§ 53, 187.

**rwyð** easy, free, prosperous, favourable; 172, 24. **ar r.** in prosperity; **glew-r.** 235, 11.

**rwylf** m. a ruler, leader, 236, 23. 25.

**rwygaw** to rend, break. 198, 27.

**r. (y) mor** to plough the sea 149, 16. 172, 25.

**rwymaw** to bind, gird. 150, 29. 188, 5. p. part. **rwymedig** bound, attached. 162, 25. 158, 6.

**rwysg** sway. 227, 4. 235, 13.

**ry** verbal particle. §§ 95, 96, 97.

**ry-** intensive prefix, very, too.

**ry-fawr** 241, 19. **ry-hir** 162, 8.

**rych** a furrow. 226, 5.

**ryd** a ford. 241, 3. R. Ychen Oxford 161, 34.

**rydec**, see **redeg**.

**ryð** free. 198, 29. 237, 24.

**ryðaw**, see **ro**.

**ryðhau** to free, liberate.

**ryðid** f. freedom, franchise, privilege. 186, 23. 221, 19.

**ryðynt**, see **ro**.

**ry-feð** a wonder; wonderful. 162, 23. compar. -ach, 154, 5.

**ryfeðu** to wonder. 149, 23. 154, 4.

**ryfel** m. war. 167, 25.

**ry-gosswy**, **ry-gossys**? 231, 31.

**Rymhi** n. l.

**rynawd** awhile. 142, 1.

**ryodres** magnificence, pomp. 156, 21. 161, 2.

**ryrys**? 231, 30.

**Rys** n. pr. m. 205, 31. 235, 17.

**rysswr** m. a warrior, champion. 199, 26; 29; 204, 16; 206, 18. CM. 1, 25; 2, 3.

**rythur**, see **ruthur**.

**ryw** m. kind, sort; such; 167, 7. 174, 33. 186, 2. **neb ryw** any. 140, 10.

**Sadwrn**: duw S. on Saturday. 228, 21.

**saer** m. a craftsman, wright.

**Saesneg** f. the English language.

**Saeson**, see **Seys**.

**saeth** an arrow; pl. -eu. 176, 23.

**saethu** to shoot with arrows. 164, 24.

**safant**, see **sefyll**.

**safedig** (p. part. of **sefyll**) established, fixed, valid. 218, 11.

**Salsbri** n. l. Salisbury.

**salwen** vain, needless. 201, 29.

**Samsun** n. pr. m. Samson.

**sant** m. a saint; pl. **seint**. 202, 32.

**sarff** a serpent; pl. **seirff**.

**sarhaed** f. an insult, affront; pl. -eu. 166, 1. 223, 21.

**sawdl** a heel; pl. **sodleu**. 159, 24. 183, 23.

**sawl** a many, multitude; **y s.** those. § 77.

**sef** that is, this is. § 47.

**sefir**, see **sefyll**.

**sefyll** (trans. and intrans.) to stand, to stop, stand fast, fix. pres. ind. sg

3 **seif**, pass. **sefir**, pl. 1 **safwn**, pl. 3 **safant** (sauahant), pret. sg. 3 **safawð**

**segur** disengaged, idle. 241, 18.

**seguryd** m. ease. 167, 7. 180, 13. **seif**, see **sefyll**.

N. Jones o  
Jones, p. 280

*seilaw* to found, establish; remain?  
perf. sg. 3 *ry seilas*. 232, 3.

*sein* a sound. 183, 8.

*seint*, see *sant*.

*seith* seven. *s.-lydyn* seven young ones. 203, 4. 15.

*Seith Pedyr Saint Peter*. 228, 19.

Cf. Rhŷs, Lect. p. 371.

*seneð* f. a senate. 166, 4. 15.

*seneðwr* m. a senator. 172, 11.

*ser*, see *syr*.

*serch* love.

*Seys* m. a Saxon, Englishman;

pl. *Saeson*. 146, 12.

*Sibli* f. the Sibyl. 169, 17.

*sodlau*, see *sawdl*.

*son* f. a sound, noise. 183, 22.

*sorri* to be angry, frown. 141, 19,

142, 32, pres. ind. sg. 3 *syr*. 226, 2.

*sugraw* to suck. imperf. ind. sg. 3

*sucknei* 154, 19,

*Sul-gwyn* m. Whitsunday. 160, 19,

*swllt* m. money, treasure. 149, 12,

202, 24,

*swyð* an office. 202, 19.

*syberw* stately, noble. 143, 15.

*syberwyd* pride, arrogance. 180, 17.

*syched* m. thirst. 170, 15.

*syllu* to gaze, look. 154, 1; 199, 26.

*symudaw* to change. 143, 14.

*syr* (coll.) stars. 161, 11. 197, 23.

227, 29.

*syr*, see *sorri*.

*syrthaw* to fall. 159, 10. pret.

pl. 3 *syrthassant* 185, 21; 187, 25.

*tad* m. a father; pl. -*eu*; *hen-dad*  
an ancestor.

*tafaw*? 230, 19 sqq.

*tafawd* a tongue; pl. *tafodeu*.

*tafawd-leferyð* spoken word, verbal  
evidence. 139, 22; 220, 4.

*tangnefed* peace. 201, 2.

*tangnefedu* to make peace, pacify,  
appease.

*tangnefedus* peaceful. 144, 16.

1. *tal* m. forehead. 159, 16.

2. *tal* payment, value. *tu a thal* an  
equivalent? 221, 12.

*talawr*, pl. of *tal*? 228, 13.

*Taliessin* n. pr. m.

*talu* to pay, give in return, requite,  
give, forfeit; reckon. 209, 12.

*talym* m. a while, period. *ar dalym*  
for a time 146, 2.

1. *tan*, *dan* (voc.) prep. under;  
*deni* under her. § 188,

2. *tan* m. fire.

*tanawl fiery*. 173, 4.

*tannu* to stretch. *t. pebylleu ten-*  
*toria figere*. 173, 17 v. l.

*taplas* f. tables, backgammon.  
164, 25; 167, 4.

*taraw* to strike. *t. lygad* in the  
twinkling of an eye. 203, 32.

*tarðu* to flee, run away, start,  
pres. ind. sg. 3 *terðid*; pres. subj. sg. 3  
*tardho* 228, 13; 14. FB. 93, 18;  
94, 27; 104, 29; 125, 6; 151, 5; 163, 16;  
198, 21.

*tarren* f. a plot of uncultivated  
land. 196, 3.

1. *taryan* f. a shield; pl. -*eu*.

2. *taryan* thunder. 227, 25; 229, 7.  
FB. 171<sup>22</sup>; MA. 287<sup>b11</sup>.

*taryanawg* m. a shield-bearer; pl.

-*ogion*. 234, 15. 236, 7.

*taryf*, leg. *torfy*? 233, 17. 236, 7.

*tawl*, see *toli*.

*tebig* similar, like. 239, 11.

*tebygu* to deem, think, suppose.

*teccâu* to adorn, decorate.

*tecced* beauty. 140, 26.

*teg* fair, pleasant,

*tegwch* m. beauty, 140, 22. 155, 25.

*Teilaw* n. pr. m.

*teilwng* (y) worthy of, meet, fit for,  
deserving, acceptable. 150, 17.

*teilyng-dawd* f. dignity. 155, 22.  
164, 7. <sup>14-2, 1</sup> 233, 21

*teir-gweith* three times.

*Teir-gwaeð* "Three-shouter" n. pr.  
m. 201, 28.

*teir-nossig* three nights old.

*teithyawg* moving, in motion.  
229, 8. *mal ton teithiawe llwyfenyd*  
FB. 192, 26.

*Teithyon* n. pr. m. 204, 29.

*telediaw* handsome, fair. 140, 29.

*telediawd* fairness. 140, 27 v. l.

*telyn* a harp. 147, 12.

*telynawr* a harper. 147, 15.

*temyl* (temhyl) f. a temple; pl.

*temleu*. 144, 10. 12; 152, 27.

*Temys* the Thames. 189, 27.

*terfyn* m. an end, limit, boundary,  
term; pl. -*eu*, -*heu*. 166, 16. 20.

*terfynu* to end, finish. 168, 27.  
183, 24; p. part. *terfynedig* ap-

pointed. 171, 28.

*terfysg* m. trouble, conflict, uproar.

141, 18; 167, 29; 225, 12; 233, 20.

*terfysgu* to disturb. 141, 12.

*tes* heat, hot weather, sunshine.  
241, 16.

> *taflu* 148, 29 to throw, fling, cast

Λ 200, 17

>

*talaw* (= *talaf*?)

240, 6

1. *teu thine.* § 55.
2. *teu silent?* 231, 2.
- teu-lu* a household, retainers, community; pl. -oed.
- tew thick, dense.* 151, 22; 241, 21.
- tewhäu* to thicken, to close up the ranks. 151, 26; 176, 24; 187, 24.
- teyrn* (teörn, teörn) a king, ruler; pl. *teerneð*; *t.-fab* m. a king's son; *t.-walch* m. a royal hawk, hero; *t.-wialen* f. a sceptre.
- teyrnas* m. and f. a kingdom; 144, 9.
- 162, 31. pl. -ssocð. 157, 28
- teyrn-ged* f. tribute. 166, 6.
- ti* (di) thou, thee; emphat. *tydi*, conjunct. *titheu.* § 45 (a)
- tino* a valley, vale. 240, 1. FB. 157, 7; 210, 8.
- tir* m. land; pl. -eð.
- tir-diwollowdr* a husbandman; pl. -odron. 149, 20.
- tired*, see *tir* and *twr*.
- titheu*, see *ti*.
- tlws* m. a jewel; pl. *tlysseu.*
- toi* to melt. 228, 26.
- toi* to cover: pres. ind. sg. 3 *töið*, *tohið* 241, 5; 242, 1. FB. 157, 4.
- toli* to curtail, diminish; pres. ind. sg. 3 *tawl* 233, 12.
- ton* f. a wave. 229, 6. 241, 5.
- tor* belly; *ar eu t.* against them. 181, 14. RB. II. 48, 12; 97, 30; 157, 23.
- torri* to break, violate. 183, 12. 223, 4
- toryf* multitude, host; pl. *torfoeð*. 151, 26. 233, 20. 234, 16. 23.
- tost* hard, severe.
- Totneis* n. l. *Totness*.
1. *tra* (spir.) prep. beyond, across, over. § 189.
2. *tra* (voc.) conj. while. § 230.
- tra-chefyn* backwards, back, behind, again. § 189 N. See *cefyn*.
- Trach-myr* n. pr. m. 204, 8.
- traeth* m. a shore, coast; pl. -eu.
- traethu* to utter, declare. 168, 29. 170, 7.
- trafferth* trouble. 207, 27. 28.
- tragywyð* eternal. 232, 13.
- tragywyðawl* eternal. 150, 11.
- trallawd* f. persecution, trial. 237, 18.
- LA. 19, 27; 21, 27; 28, 25.
- tra-mor* over-sea. 156, 28.
- trannoeth* (lit. over night) next day.
- traws* transverse. *ar t.* across. 149, 3 v. l.
- traws-brenneu* pl, lateral branches of a tree. 149, 3. Cf. *trauskeyg*, Anc. Laws I. 290, 3.
- trayan* (traean) m. a third. 139, 17; 157, 5; 201, 31.
- trebelid* swift, dexterous. 201, 22.
- RB. II. 56, 27. MA. 279a<sup>35</sup>
- trechaf* (superl. of *tren*) strongest. 187, 19. § 37 (b).
- tref* f. a dwelling-place, home.
- tref-tadawg* m. an inheritor. 218, 18.
- tref-tadawl* inherited. 146, 8.
- trei ebb.* 209, 4; 216, 11.
- treiaw* to ebb. 154, 14.
- treiglaw* to travel; pres. ind. sg. 3 *treigyl*. 197, 18.
- treigyl* m. a course, journey. 197, 26.
- treis* f. violence, rapine, rape. 200, 28. 222, 17.
- tremygu* to despise. 140, 8. 166, 9.
- treth* f. a tribute. 188, 9.
- trethawl* tributary. 168, 2. 186, 23.
- treulaw* to spend, consume, wear.
- tri* (spir.) m. *teir* f. three.
- tri-dieu* three days. 149, 8. 164, 29. 209, 1.
- triganeð* a trumpet blast? 228, 29.
- A *thriganed* kynr a gwerin trygar FB. 2117; Cf. 68; MÄ. 124b<sup>46</sup>.
- triglaw* to dwell, remain. 162, 22. 240, 10. 13.
- trindawd* f. the Trinity.
- trist* sad. 179, 2.
- tristäu* to become sad, grieve. 142, 2.
- tristaw* to become sad, grieve. 141, 21.
- tristyd* m. grief. 147, 6.
- Tro Troy.* 163, 24.
- troed* m. a foot; pl. *traed.* *ar traed* on foot. 174, 18.
- troed-noeth* bare-foot; pl. -on. 153, 27.
- troed-feð* m. a foot (measure). 154, 6.
- tröi* to turn (tr. and intr.).
- tros, dros* (voc.) prep. across, over; *myned dros* to break through; *eneid dros* eneid a life for life struggle. §§ 53; 190.
- trossi* to turn, move (tr. and intr.) 149, 18. 151, 4. 199, 24.
- tru* sad, wretched. 230, 20.
- truan* miserable, wretched; a wretch.
- trueni* m. wretchedness, misery.
- tru-gar* merciful. 225, 19.
- trugareð* f. mercy. 227, 7.
- trugarhäu* (wrth) to commiserate.
- trugeint* (trugein) (nas.) sixty.
- trwch* cut, broken. 241, 9.
- trwm* m., *trom* f. heavy, sad.
- trws* 227, 21 = *trwst* noise? Cf. *yna byð mawdrwst* MA. 73a.

trwssyad (trwssad) m. *one who arranges, or disposes.* 234, 7; 235, 28. Cf. trwssyaw, trwssa, Hg. I., 214, 37.

trwy (drwy) (voc.) prep. *through.* § 191. drwy y hun in his sleep 172, 27.

trwydod to visit, pass, sojourn. 237, 18. FB. 59<sup>12</sup>. MA. 844a,<sup>21</sup>.

try-chan (nas.) *three hundred.*

trychu to cut down. 149, 1.

trydyð m. tredeð f. *third, one of three; ar y d. with two others.* 142, 9. § 165.

try-fer a trident. 197, 33. MA. 317b<sup>13</sup>.

trym-der m. *gravity, seriousness.* 166, 14.

try-wyr *three men.* 174, 7. 193, 3.

tu m. *side, region, part; or tu yn eu hol from behind them; tu ac towards; pa du where?* 198, 32.

tud people, country. 231, 9.

twng, see tyngu.

twll perforated, pierced. 205, 23.

twr m. a tower; pl. tyreu. 156, 32; 166, 25. 27. tireð 131, 6.

twrch m. a boar.

twrwf m. a host, multitude. 234, 15.

twyll m. and f. *deception, treachery.* 178, 9.

twyllwr m. a traitor.

twynpath m. a mound. 199, 14.

1. ty, see ti.

2. ty m. a house; pl. tei.

tybygu, see tebygu.

tybyaw to suspect. 177, 27.

tyfu to grow.

tyngthedfen f. *fate, fortune; pl. -nneu.* 142, 10.

tyngu to swear, take an oath. pres. ind. act. sg. 3. twng 220, 27. 233, 4.

tyllu to pierce, make a breach. 183, 15.

tyllweð (tellweð) f. *stillness.* 211, 2.

tynnu to pull, drag, draw, retreat; 147, 18. 162, 25. 228, 9. t. pebyllen

to pitch tents. 173, 17.

tyreu, see twr.

tyrnged, see teyrn-ged.

tyst a witness; pl. -on, -ion.

tywyð a tempest, storm. 228, 25.

tywyll darkness. 229, 33.

tywyssawg m. a leader, prince, chief; pl. -ogion.

tywyssogaeth leadership, dominion.

uch (voc.) prep. *above; uch ben above, over.* § 193.

uched height. 197, 24.

uchel high, tall, loud. 150, 32; 186, 16; 234, 3.

ucher evening. 196, 23. 197, 24.

uchod adv. *above.* 187, 22; 198, 8.

uð (uut, wut) m. a lord, king, the Lord. 235, 16; 236, 28.

uðunt to them, see 1. y.

ufuð-häu to obey. 150, 23. 189, 22.

ufull-dawd humility, lowliness. 237, 22.

uffern hell.

ugeint (ugein) m. *twenty.* deg ar hu. *thirty.*

Ugnach n. pr. m.

Ul-Cessar Julius Caesar.

un one; same. 163, 29. 221, 13. ? any. 164, 14. § 164 (4).

un-ben m. a chieftain.

un-fam having the same mother. 202, 18.

un-ryw of the same kind, similar.

un-tu: ar u. at a stretch. 156, 17. RB. II. 308, 33.

urðas m. a rank, order, dignity; pl. urðasseu, urðassoeð.

urðasseið dignified. 161, 6.

urðaw to ordain.

urðawl ordained.

Uryen n. pr. m. Urbigenus.

Uthur n. pr. m.

weithon, weithyon, see gweith.

wrth, see gwrth.

wut, see uð.

wy (hwy) they, them; emphat.

wyntwy, conjunct. wynteu.

wybyr sky, heaven. 159, 25. See 1. can.

wyř, see bod.

wyneb face; rac w. following, next. 151, 9. 153, 6. 155, 27. w. yn

w. face to face. 216, 27.

wyth eight.

whe, see chwech.

whedleu, see chwedyl.

whioryð, see chwaer.

1. y (voc.) prep. (1) to, (2) from, of. § 195.

2. y def. art., see 1. yr.

3. y verb. particle, see yð.

4. y (voc.) his, (spir.) her, their. § 57.

✕ y-am (voc.) (1) from off; (2) including. § 164.

y-ar (1) from; (2) upon. § 165.

1. ych m. an ox; pl. -en.

2. ych your. §§ 57, 58.

\* ? o apar from 179, 14

ychydig *some, a little, a few.*  
 y-dan (voc.) prep. *under.* § 188.  
 ydys, ydyw, see bod.  
 yð verb. particle, before consonants  
 y. § 91.  
 yfed *to drink.* 202, 14.  
 yfelly, see felly.  
 y-gan (voc.) prep. *from.* § 167.  
 yng *a strait, difficulty, distress.*  
 150, 29.  
 ynghyd (ac) *together (with).*  
 yll (ill, ell) before numerals, *all.*  
 § 67.  
 1. ym, see yn.  
 2. ym, see bod.  
 yma *here, hither.*  
 ym-adaw (ac) *to part with, leave,*  
*desert*; past subj. pl. 3 ymedewynt.  
 ym-adrawð m. *to speak; speech,*  
*discourse*; pl. ymadroðyon. 142, 10.  
 ym-aðassu (ac) *to adapt oneself.* y.  
 ar ðayar *to measure one's length on*  
*the ground.* 174, 26.  
 ym-afael (yn) *to take hold of,*  
*grasp.* 202, 17. 206, 21. 207, 17. 19.  
 yman *here.* hwnt ac y. *nunc hac*  
*nunc illac* 185, 25.  
 ym-ar-ðisgwyl *to watch.* 199, 27.  
 ym-ar-ðyrchafel *to exalt oneself.*  
 157, 4.  
 ym-baratöi *to prepare oneself.*  
 171, 19.  
 ym-ben-tyr(r)-yaw *to rush together.*  
 176, 17; 186, 10; Hg. II. 163, 1.  
 ym-choelud (-chaelud) *to return,*  
*turn.* 189, 11. 206, 12. 229, 27. 29.  
 y. ar *to turn upon, set upon.* 174, 29.  
 207, 20. y. y arfeu yn y Gwyðyl *to*  
*attack the Irishmen.* pret. ind. sg. 3  
 ymhoeles. 160, 17.  
 ym-da, see ym-deith.  
 ymdan (voc.) prep. *about.* § 164.  
 ym-daraw (ac) *to contend (with).*  
 201, 29.  
 ym-deith *to go about, to go, go away.*  
 141, 14. pres. ind. sg. 3 ym-da 199, 4.  
 ym-dynnu (o) *to retreat (from).*  
 174, 17.  
 ym-ðianc *to escape.* 154, 18. 197, 30.  
 ym-ðïðan *to converse.* 147, 9.  
 203, 18.  
 ym-ðifad (o) *bereft (of); pl. -ðifeid.*  
 176, 28.  
 ym-ðifedi *destitution.* 145, 14.  
 ym-ðiffyn, see am-ðiffyn.  
 ym-ðired *to trust.* y. y 225, 4.  
 y. yn 151, 7. 158, 20.  
 ym-ðwyn *to carry about.* 202, 20.

ym-ðywedyd *to discuss, argue.*  
 211, 16.  
 ymeith (o) *out (of), away (from).*  
 174, 8.  
 ym-encinaw *to anoint oneself.*  
 207, 9.  
 ym-erbynyeid *to encounter, combat.*  
 186, 6.  
 ym-ffust m. *a conflict, struggle,*  
 187, 20; RB. II. 84, 24; 90, 31;  
 162, 10.  
 ym-gaffel (ac) *to get hold of,*  
*engage in battle.* 185, 19. 186, 2.  
 ym-garu *to caress one another.*  
 147, 19. 148, 12.  
 ym-geffelybu (ac) *to imitate.* 156, 25.  
 Hg. II. 89, 14; 102, 2; LA. 44, 8;  
 RB. II. 80, 12.  
 ym-geis (ac) *to seek.* 202, 31.  
 ym-gelu (rag) *to hide (from).*  
 146, 27.  
 ym-golli (ac) *to lose sight (of).*  
 205, 1.  
 ym-gribyaw (ac) *to wrangle (with).*  
 207, 25.  
 ym-gyf-ar-fod *to encounter.* 146, 14.  
 169, 15. 170, 14. 174, 6.  
 ym-gyffelybu (ac) *to compare one-*  
*self, vie (with).* 156, 25.  
 ym-gynghor (ac) *to consult.* 148, 1.  
 ym-gym-mysgu *to engage each*  
*other.* 183, 20. Hg. I. 55, 26; 282, 19.  
 RB. II. 28, 12.  
 ym-gynhal *to resist.* 151, 17. 192, 8.  
 ym-gynnull *to gather together.*  
 148, 25.  
 ym-gynnullaw *to flock together.*  
 145, 1. 152, 20. 173, 20. 192, 7.  
 ym-gyrchu *to attack.* 173, 2.  
 ym-gyweiraw (o) *to equip oneself*  
*(with).* 172, 16.  
 ymhoeles, see ym-choelud.  
 ym-lað m. *to fight; a fight;* pl. -eu.  
 ym-lid *to pursue.* 148, 24. 188, 2.  
 fut. sg. 1 ymlidyaf 206, 9.  
 ym-lynu *to follow, pursue.* 152,  
 7. 22. 191, 1.  
 ym-o-glyd (rag) *to guard against.*  
 176, 3; RB. II. 46, 34; Hg. I. 28, 5.  
 ym-orðiwes (ac) *to overtake, come*  
*up with, touch.* 174, 20. 28. 202, 4.  
 204, 3. 28. 207, 3.  
 ym-rithaw *to transform oneself.*  
 201, 33.  
 ym-roði *to give oneself up, surrender,*  
*devote oneself.* 145, 22. 149, 5.  
 150, 12. 156, 6. pres. ind. sg. 3  
 ymryð 150, 17.



~~ym-rydhau~~ 213, 114  
 ym-rythwch 229, 7  
 ym-rydhau (o) to free oneself (from). 147, 22.

ym-tynnu, see ym-dynnu.

ym-wasgu (ac) to rejoin. 174, 34; LA. 100, 6; Hg II. 272, 29.

ym-weled to see one another; y. ac to visit. 147, 20. 203, 32. 205, 12.  
 ym-wneuthur to effect mutually. 164, 16 v. l.

ym-yrru (gyt ac) to concern oneself (with), help. 200, 20. RB. II. 19, 8; CM. 77, 17.

ym-ysgydyaw to shake oneself. 202, 4.

1. yn (nas.) prep. in, into, upon. 173, 5. § 196.

2. yn (voc.) forming adverbs and with predicative noun and adjective. § 16 (d).

3. yn (an) our. § 57.

yna then, there, thither.

ynad (O.W. egnat) m. a judge. 209, 24; pl. yneid. 210, 5. 208, 24

ynfyd foolish. 231, 33.

ygni vigour. 174, 19. 27. 186, 1.

yno there, thither.

ynt, see bod. ynteu, see ef.

yny (hynny) conj. until. § 23.

For yny vyð see 2. gwyð.

ynyal desert, wild. 228, 7.

ynys f. an island; pl. ynyssed.

Ynys Daned Thanet.

Ypolit Hippolytus.

1. yr, before consonants y (voc. before fem.) def. art. the.

2. yr prep. for the sake of; for; since. §§ 53; 197. yr na since not, though not. § 234. yr hynny nevertheless; yr pan since; pyr (py yr) why? 193, 13.

yrof, see ro.

y-ryngtunt, see rwnng.

1. ys is. §§ 152; 155; 159 N2.

2. ys: ys pump mlyned since five years. ys gwers for some time. 194, 6.

yr ys pell o amser long ago. 197, 22.  
 ysgar (ac) to leave, part with. 205, 25.

Ysgawd n. pr. m. 204, 20.

ysgawn light, slight, easy. 180, 31. 202, 11.

ysgithyr a fang, tusk. 201, 23.

Y.-wynn white-tusked. 201, 16.

ysglyfyaw to snatch. 202, 2; RB. II. 151, 8; Hg. I. 296, 22.

ysgol a school. 161, 10.

ysgolheig m. a scholar, clerk, priest; pl. -ou. 147, 29. 153, 25. 160, 9.

ysgrifenu to write. 164, 6.

ysgrybul (coll.) cattle. 199, 4.

ysgwyd a shield. 241, 18. 22.

ysgwyð f. a shoulder. 174, 31.

198, 10. 241, 18. 22. 150, 27

ysgymun (ysgymyn) accursed. 191, 16.

ysgymun-dawd villany. 149, 24.

ysgymunedig accursed; pl. -yon.

ysgythredig chased, engraved. 150, 26. CM. 34, 32; 104, 19.

yslipanu to burnish, polish. 194, 5. 12.

yslipanwr m. a burnisher. 193, 18.

yspardun f. a spur; pl. -eu.

yspeid f. a while, a space of time, respite.

Yspaðaden (Hawthorn) n. pr. m. 199, 18. Cf. Rhôs, Celt. H., p. 373.

Yspaan Spain. yr Y. 182, 23.

yspeil spoil; pl. -eu 177, 3.

yspeilaw to despoil. 176, 31. 188, 3.

yssid there is. 198, 15. 233, 5. pl.

yssydynt. 194, 2. § 154 (a); ib. n. l.

yssigaw to shatter. 147, 4.

yssu to eat, consume. 200, 3. 31.

yssyð (yssy) who, which is. §§ 152.

154 (β); 155 (κ).

ystandard a battle standard. 183, 20.

ystorya history, story. 164, 7.

ystrad a vale, valley. 205, 32. 242, 1.

ystryw device, stratagem. 147, 22.

ystwng to lower, overcome. 233, 2.

ystynu to extend, prolong. 188, 7.

ystyr story; meaning, import, reason. 203, 11. pwystyr (py y.)

why? 193, 14.

yswain m. esquire. 143, 10.

ysym there is to me, I have. 233, 1.

§ 155 B, note 1.

1. yw, see bod.

2. yw yew trees. Ystrad Yw 205, 32.

3. yw, see 1. y.

1. ywch, see bod.

2. ywch, see 1. y.



## APPENDIX

---

### Additional Variants to "Lear and his Daughters" from MSS. at Peniarth.

P<sup>1</sup>, P<sup>2</sup>, P<sup>3</sup>, P<sup>4</sup> = MSS. No. 22, 44, 45, 46.

---

Ch. 1.—l. 2, thrugein mlyned : dev vgeŷn P<sup>2</sup>—l. 3, ef a adeilvs P<sup>2</sup>—a thri ugein mlyned y gŵledichŷs (gŵledychŷs P<sup>3</sup>) ef yn ŵraŵl ac yd adeilŷs (adeilŷs P<sup>3</sup>) dinas P<sup>3</sup> P<sup>4</sup>—l. 4, leŷrceŷter P<sup>2</sup>.

Ch. 2.—l. 2, yd adaŵhei P<sup>4</sup>.

Ch. 3.—l. 4, leueryd *om.* P<sup>2</sup> P<sup>4</sup>—l. 5, adaŵ y rodi hitheu yr gŵr P<sup>3</sup>.

Ch. 4.—l. 3, y rygaru : yr caru P<sup>3</sup>—l. 11, nas rodi hi P<sup>3</sup>—l. 12, damweinhei P<sup>4</sup>.

Ch. 5.—l. 2, yr Alban : e gogleŷ P<sup>2</sup>—l. 8, y rodei . . . genti : ŷ rodeŷ heb tŷr na daŷar na ssvllt P<sup>2</sup>—l. 15, kadarnhawyt : gŵnaethpŷyt P<sup>3</sup>.

Ch. 6.—l. 12, ellvng er reŷ ereŷll ŷ emdeŷth P<sup>2</sup>.

Ch. 8.—l. 5, gellygassei y ŵrthaŵ P<sup>3</sup>.

Ch. 9.—l. 1, ydoed P<sup>3</sup>—l. 3, Or\* tŷghetven lŷtŷavc ep ef pa brŷd edav dŷd e gallwŷf ŷ talu vdvnt wŷ hŷn P<sup>2</sup>. O chwichwi yr tyghetueneu P<sup>3</sup>. Oiar teghetueneu py le, &c. P<sup>4</sup>—l. 4, pa achos y kyffroassoch uiui yar &c. P<sup>3</sup>—l. 7, gytdiodef P<sup>3</sup>—l. 14, traet P<sup>3</sup> P<sup>4</sup>—ib. Owi P<sup>3</sup>—l. 16, talu yny gŵrthŷneb yr gŵyr hyny P<sup>3</sup> P<sup>4</sup>—l. 21, vy rodyon : vyn da P<sup>3</sup> P<sup>4</sup>—l. 25, yn gam P<sup>3</sup>.

\* Strachan says : "I can't read the second letter except as r."

Ch. 10.—l. 1, aghyfnert : trueni P<sup>3</sup>—l. 2, ef a doeth, &c. : dýnessav parth ar dýnas edoed y ver (*sic*) endav P<sup>2</sup>—ib., ym Paris: ýg cariz P<sup>3</sup> P<sup>4</sup>—l. 4, ar gyuarod P<sup>3</sup>—l. 5, namýn vn marchavc ac essweýn P<sup>2</sup>; namyn ef ae yswein P<sup>3</sup> P<sup>4</sup>—l. 7, mynet ae that, &c. : dwýn y that hýt en dýnas arall ac eno dywedwýt y vot en glaf P<sup>2</sup>—l. 16, wedy yr dehol P<sup>3</sup>.

Ch. 11.—l. 11, a 6naeth : re gwnathod P<sup>2</sup>—a wnathod P<sup>3</sup> P<sup>4</sup>—l. 12, anryded Bifrontisiani : anrýded ýr devforvavl ianus P<sup>2</sup>—l. 13, delhei P<sup>4</sup>—ib. ac ena ed emkýnvleý holl seýrý a chreffdwýr e dýnas P<sup>2</sup>—gredyfwyr (*sic*) P<sup>3</sup>—crefuydóyr P<sup>4</sup>.

# Index



## INDEX

The references are to paragraphs. n.=note.

- ā*, causing vowel-change 7 (a).  
*a*, rel. part. 82-83; with infixed pron. 49 (b), 50 (a); usage 83 (a); expressing subj. or obj. 86; gov. by prep. 87 (a); without antecedent 87 (b).  
*a*, infixing part. 50 (c); 94; 159 n. 2; superseded by *yd* 85 n.  
*a*, interrog. part. 239; lenat. after 18 (g).  
*a*, *ac*, conj. 198; mutat. after, 21 (d).  
*a*, *ac*, prep. 162; after adj. 34 (b); mutat. after, 21 (c).  
*a*, prep.=o 183.  
*a*, *ha*, interj. 243.  
 absolute ending -*sīt* 132 n.  
 accent, 4; 11 n. 1; shifting of 8; vowel variation due to 8; secondary acc. 11 n. 1.  
 accusative 26; traces of 25; in poetry 26; of relative 51.  
*ach*, prep. 163  
*achaws*, conj. 199.  
 adjective, 30-39; lenat. of 16; lenat. after positive 16 (c) (a); after compar. 16 n. 4; endings of 27 (c); gender in 30; stems in -i-, -o-, -u-, 30 note; plur. forms 31; attributive 32; predicative 32; number in 33; inflected adj. 34 (a); order in sentence 34 (a); foll. by prep. *a*, *a* 34 (b); concord 35; predicative adj. with *yn* 35; adj. phrases 36; comparison 37; construction of compar. and superl. 38; equative 39; with *mor* 39 n. 2; adv. use 40; poss. adj. 57; poss. adj. with prep. 58 (a), with conj. 58 (a), with *y* 58 (b), anticipating genit. 59 n.  
*abnabot*, paradigm of 144.  
 adverb 40; lenat. 16 (h); adv. phrases 16 (h); with demons. force 63.  
*-adwy*, verbal in 117.  
*ae*, interrog. of copula 155 (a)(η)  
*ae*, interrog. part. 239 (c).  
 agent, expression of with verb noun, 122  
*am*, prep. 164; lenat. after 16 (i); with pron. end. 53; *yam* 164.  
*am* (*na*), conj. 200.  
*amal*, conj. 216.  
 analogy, in verb. conjugation 7 n. 1; in mutat. 12; 16 n. 7; 39 n. 1; in plural formations 27 (d); in pronouns 45 n. 2; in formation of subjunctive 110 n. 1.  
 answers, 241.  
 apodosis, imperfect in 107 (d)(β)(γ).  
 apposition, lenation in 16 n. 4; 17 (b).  
*ar*, prep. 166; lenat. after 16(i); with pron. end. 53; or *a*, *ar ny*, 87 (a); *yar*, 165.  
*arall*, use of 68.  
*arganrot*, paradigm of 160.  
 article, 23; lenat. after 16; fused with conj. or prep. 23; syntax of 24.  
*as*, *as* (*ys*) *oed* 159 n. 2.  
*-at*, ending of imperf. ind. 3 sg. 131 (b).  
*att*, prep. 166; lenat. aft. 16 (i); with pron. end. 53.  
 attributive adj. 32; 33.  
*awr*, *yr awr* conj. 201.  
*-awr*, *-iawr*, plur. suff. 28 B. (a).  
*-awt*, plur. suff. 28 B. (b).  
*behet*, prep. 177 n.  
*bot*, lenation after, 16(g)(β); paradigm of 152; usages of 153; *bydwn*, etc. 107 n. 3; special fut. form 152 n. 2; *bit*, consuetudinal 152 n. 3; *bydaf*, use of 156 (a); *bydwn*, use of 157; *bewn*, 158; past subj. 158; compounds of 160; *boet*, after *kylt* 205 n.

- caffael*, *cael*, paradigm of 145.  
*can*, *gan*, prep., lenat. after 16 (i); with  
 pron. end. 53; with vb. noun 126 (c);  
 use of 167; *y gan* 167.  
*can*, conj. 202; not foll. by *yd* 93 (l).  
*cancot*, paradigm of 160.  
*cany*s, copula 155 (a)(a); 202 n.  
*cany*s, conj. 202 n.  
 cardinals, see numerals.  
*caru*, paradigm of 127.  
 case, 25; traces of lost case-endings 25;  
 syntax of cases 26; expression of case  
 in relative 86.  
*cer*, *ger*, prep. 168.  
 clauses, subjunct. in main clauses 113;  
 in subord. cl. 114; concessive cl. 114  
 (c); conditional cl. 114 (d); cl. of  
 comparison 114 (e); temporal cl. 114  
 (f); final cl. 114 (g); relat. cl. 114 (h).  
*clybot*, use of imperf. of 107 n. 2.  
 collective nouns, 29.  
*com*-, Celt. prep. 39 n. 1.  
 command, subjunct. in 113 (b); in in-  
 direct speech 113 (b)(β).  
 comparison of adj. 37; lenat. after 16  
 n. 5; no plural 33; construction of  
 compar. 38; foll. by *no* (c) 38 (a);  
 clauses of comparison 114 (e).  
 composition, lenation in 16 n. 6.  
 concessive clauses, 114 (c).  
 concord, of vb. and subject 101; 103; of  
 adj. with noun 32, 33; of adj. after  
*yn* 35.  
 conditional of *bot* 107 n. 3; impf. in  
 conditional sentence 107 (d); plupf. in  
 condit. 109 (b); subj. in condit. cl.  
 114 (d); impf. condit. 131.  
 conjugation of verb 98 sq.; analogy in  
 7 note 1.  
 conjunctions, 198-234; lenation after  
 16 (l); lenation of init. cons. 16 n. 13;  
 spirant mutat. after 21 (d); with  
 poss. adj. 58 (a).  
 consonants, classification of 3; graphic  
 representation of 3 n.; orthog. varia-  
 tion 3 n.; consonantal changes 11; infl.  
 of accent on cons. changes 11 n. 1;  
 mediae > tenues 11 (g)(a); mutation  
 of cons. 12; consonants vowel-flanked  
 12; table of cons. mutations 13.  
 consonantal stems, 27 (d).  
 consuetudinal present, 106 (b).  
 copula, 155; *ytti*w etc. 154 n. 4; *nat*  
 155 (a)(ε); *nyt* 155 (a)(δ); position of  
 159; preceding pred. 159 n. 2; with  
*neu* 221; *os*, *onyt* ---.  
 customary action in past time, 107 (c).  
*cwt*, *cw*, conj. 203; mutat. aft. 21 n. 1.  
*cyrvot*, paradigm of 160.  
*cyrrwg*, prep. 169.  
*cyn*-, in equative 39;  
*cyn*, conj. 204; not foll. by *yd* 93.  
*cyn*, prep. 170.  
*cyt*, *cyn*, conj. 205; not foll. by *yd* 93  
 (l).  
*cyt ac*, prep. 171; *y gyt ac*, conj. 206.  
*chwech*, nas. mutation after 20 (c).  
*darvot*, paradigm of 160.  
 dative, traces of 25; expressed by in-  
 fixed pron. 51.  
 declension, in Old Celtic 25.  
*deng*, usage of 41 n.  
*delw*, nom. conj. 207.  
 denominative vb. 128 (b).  
 deponent, 99.  
*di*, O.W. prep. 195; and n.  
*diam*, O.W. prep. 164.  
*diar*, O.W. prep. 165.  
*dieithyr*, prep. 172.  
*dim*, used as pron. 73.  
 diphthongs, 1 and n.  
 distributives, 43.  
*diuch*, prep. 193.  
*do*, in answers, 242.

dual, 25; 42 (a); lenation of adj. after dual noun, 16 (b)(a); lenat. of genit. after dual 16 (b)(β); traces of dual inflection 25.

*duch*, 110 n. 2; 138 n.

*dy-* before infixd pron. 50 f.

*dyvot*, paradigm of 141.

*dylyu*, with vb. noun 121.

-*e-* infixd pron. 48; use of 49 (b).

-*edic* part. end. 116.

-*ed*, pl. suffix 28 B (d).

*einom* etc. 55.

-*eint*, 3, plur. end. impf. ind. 131.

*eissoes*, conj. 208.

-*eit*, -*ieit*, plur. suff. 28 B (e).

*eithyr*, prep. 172.

*eithyr na*, conj. 209.

*ell*, *ill*, *yll*, 67.

emphatic pronoun 45.

endings of verb, 3 sg. of simple vb. 129;

3 sg. conjunct. 129; 3 pl. primary ending 129; see imperat. indicat. subjunct. vb. noun.

epenthetic vowel 10.

equative in comparison of adj. 39.

*erbyn*, prep. 173.

*et*, in *nocet* etc. 222 and n.

-*et*, pl. suffix. 28 B (c).

final clauses, 114 (g).

future 105; exp. by pres. tense 106 (e); special future endings 130.

futurity, subj. of 113 (c).

*gallu*, to express passive with vb. noun 121.

gender, in nouns 25; in adjs. 30; 32;

genitive, lenation of noun in gen. 16

(b) (β); traces of gen. case 25; syntax of gen. in prose 26; in poetry 26; gen. of rel. pron. 88.

*ger*, see *cer*.

*gilyδ*, 72 and n.

*gorvot*, paradigm of 160.

*guar*, prep. 165 n. 3.

*gwares*, 110 n. 2; 138 n.

*gwedy*, *wedy*, prep. 174; with preverb.

*yd* 93 n. 3; with vb. noun=perf. part. 126 (b).

*gwedy*, conj. 210.

*gwelet*, use of imperf. of 107 n. 2.

*gweith*, with card. numbers 44.

*gwneuthur*, with vb. noun 123; paradigm of 142.

*gwrth*, O.W. prep. 194, see *wrth*.

*gwybot*, paradigm of 143.

*gyt*, see *cyt ac*.

*h*, sign of subjunctive 110; history of *h* in subj. 110 n. 2.

*h*, in sentence constr. 22; after infix.

pron. and possess. *m* 22 (a); after infix. pron. *e* 22 (b); after 3 sg. f. poss. *y* 22 (c); after 1 pl. poss. *an* 22 (d); after *eu* 22 (e); after *ar* bef. *ugeint* 22 (f).

*ha*, interj. 243.

*hagen*, conj. 211.

*hanvot*, paradigm of 160.

-*hau*, denom. vb. end. 1 28 (b); spreading as -*a* to other vbs. 137.

-*haw*, 3 sg. fut. end. 130 (b).

-*hawr*, ending of fut. pass. 130.

-*hawd*, -*hawt*, fut. end. 3 sg. 130.

-*hawnt*, fut. end. 3 pl. 130.

*heb*, prep. lenat. aft. 16 (i); with pron. end. 53; usage 175.

*heb*, verb 151.

*hevyt*, conj. 213.

*herwyd*, prep., usage of 176.

*herwyd*, conj., usage of 213.

historic infinitive, 125.

historic present, 106 (d).

*hollre*, 67 note.

*hun*, *hunan*, 60.



*hwde*, 149.

*hwnn*, etc. dem. pron. 61; usage of 62; *yr hwnn*, foll. by rel. clause, 62 (c).

*hwnt*, 63.

*hwnnw*, *hynny*, 61; usage 62.

*hyt*, *prep.*, lenat. after 16 (i); usage 177; *hyt pan* 226 2 (a).

*hyt*, nominal conj. 214.

*i*, causing vowel infect. 6; 7 n. 2; 11 (b); 131; in pl. 27 (a); in pron. prep. 52 (b); infection due to lost *i* 7 b.

-*i* pl. suffix 28 B (f).

-*i*- stem in adj. 30 n.

-*i* ending of 3 sg. impf. 131 (a).

*ie*, *ieu*, in answers 242 and n.

*igridu*, 53 n.

*ill*, *ell*, *yll*, 67.

imperat. mood, 115; pass. of 115; negat. of 115; endings of 137; infl. of denom. vbs. in *-hau* spreads to other verbs 137.

imperf. tense, indic. 105; use of 107; in indirect speech 107 (b); of repeated action 107 (c); as sec. fut. or condit. 107 (d); as sec. tense to a fut. 107 (d) (a); in apod. of fut. or condit. clause 107 (d) (β); in apod. of past clause 107 (d) (γ); with negat. 107 n. 1; use of impf. of *clybot* 107 n. 2; use of impf. of *gwelet* 107 n. 2; endings of impf. 131.

indicative mood, with *ry* 96 A; pres. ind. with *ry* 97 (c) 1; use of 105-109; pres. 106; plupf. 109 (a); influence of ind. upon subjunct. form 110 n. 1; indic. stem in O.W. 110 n. 1; plup. ind. replacing past subj. 111 and n.; ind. in consec. cl. 114 n. 4; end. of pres. and fut. 128; end. of plupf. 135; past ind. of *bot* used as subj. 152 n. 7; ind. with conj. *hyt* 214; ind. of

consequence with *hyt na* 214 2 (a); ind. with *mal* 216; ind. of consequence with *mal na* 216 3 (a).

indirect speech, impf. in 107 (b); pret. in 108 (b); command in 113 (b) (β).

infecting vowel, see *a*, *i*.

infection of vowel, 6; 7 (b); 7 n. 2; 11 (b); 27 (a); 52 (b).

infinitive, in Welsh 104; usage, 120; historic inf. 125; see verbal noun.

infixd pron. lenat. after 18 (a); forms of 48; use of 49-51; after *yny* 49 (b); after rel. *a* 50 (a); with preverbal *yd* 50 (b); 93 n. 2; after infixing part. *a* 50 (c); after *ry-* 50 (d); 93 n. 3; after *neu* 50 (e); after *dy-* of cpd. vbs. 50 (f); after *na*, *ny*, 50 (g); after *tra*, 50 (h); expr. accus. of relat. 51; infix. pron. with pass. vb. 102; with non-rel. vb. 102 n.; meaningless 159 n. 2; with *o* 224 n. 5.

inflected adj., position of 34 a.

inflection, noun 25.

interjection, lenat. after 16 (m). forms of 243-4.

interrogative, lenat. after interrog. pron. 18 (c); interrog. part. *a* 18 (g); interrog. pron., forms of 79; *pwyl* 79; *peth*, *beth* 79; *pa*, *py* 80; and n. 1; *pa*, *py*, in earlier lit. 80 n. 2; *pathawr*, *pythawr* 80 n. 2; *pa*, *py* foll. by prep. 80 n. 3; *padiw*, *pydiw* 80 n. 4; *pwyl bynnac*, *pa-*, *py-* *bynnac* 81; indirect interrogation 114 B (b).

*is*, prep. with pron. end. 53; usage 178.

*issem*, *ysef* 47.

-*it*, imperat. end. 3 sg. 137.

*ithr*, prep. 179.

lenation, = vocalic mutation 12; table of 13; lenat. of *g*, 13 n. 1; of *d* 13 n. 2; exceptions to rules 15; usage 14-18;

- noun and adj. after *yr*, 16 (a); noun or adj. after noun, 16 (b); after dual 16 (b)(a); of noun in genit. 16 (b)(β); after prop. nouns 16 (b)(γ); of vb.-noun in genit. 16 (b)(δ); of noun aft. compar. adj. 16 (c)(a); of adj. repeated 16 (c)(β); after adv. *yn* 16 (d); aft. numerals 16 (e); aft. pron. 16 (f); after vb. 16 (g); after parts of *bot* 16 (g) (β); of adverbs 16 (h); aft. preps. 16 (i); after negat. 16 (k); after *mor*, *neu* 16 (l); aft. interj. 16 (m); of vocative 16 (m) (a); aft. superl. adj. 16 n. 5; in composit. 16 n. 6; of noun after adj. 16 n. 5; of noun prec. by depend. genit. 16 n. 7; in poetry 16 n. 7; post-verbal 16 n. 12; of prep. 16 n. 13; of pron. 17; after infixed pron. 18 a; after rel. part. *a* 18 (b); after interrog. 18 (c); of predicate after copula 18 (d); after *yt*, *yd* 18 (e); 91 n. 2; after *ry-*, 18 (f); after interrog. *a* 18 (g); after conj. 18 (h); after negat. 18 (i) and *n*.; in dual, 25; analogical lenat. 39 n. 1; after *ny*, relat 21 n. 2.
- llall*, pl. *lleill*, 70.
- llas*, 134 (a).
- lle*, nominal conj. 215.
- y lleill*, 71.
- llyma*, *llyna*, 244.
- m-*, infixed pron. 48.
- m*, final, > *n* in Celtic 20 n.
- mad*, not foll. by *yd* 93 (i).
- mae*, use of 154 (a); copula 155 (a)(λ)
- mal*, *val*, conj. 216.
- med*, 'says,' form and use 150.
- megys*, conj. 217.
- meu*, etc. poss. pron. 55.
- mi*, etc. simple pron. 45.
- minheu*, etc. conj. pron. 45.
- mivi*, etc. emph. pron. 45.
- moch*, not foll. by *yd* 93 (k).
- moes*, imperat. 148.
- moods, 104; indic. 105-110; subj. 110-114; imperat. 115; see indicative, subjunct., imperat., infinitive.
- mor*, lenat. after 16 (l), *mor* - *a* expr. equality with adjs. 39 n. 2.
- multiplicatives, 44.
- mutation of cons., table of 13; vocalic mut. see lenation; nasal mut. in Mid. W. MSS. 19; after *vyn* 20 (a); after *yn* 20 (b); origin of, after numerals 20 (c); spirant mut. 21; after numerals 21 (a); after 3 sg. f. poss. adj. 21 (b); after prep. 21 (c); after *a(c)* *no(c)* 21 (d); after *ny*, *na* 21 (e) after *kwt* 21 n. 1.
- myn*, conj. 218.
- mynet*, paradigm of 140.
- mynn*, nominal prep. 180.
- mywn*, nominal prep. 181.
- '*n*, poss. adj. 57.
- n*, neut. stems in 27 (d).
- n-* infix. pron. 48.
- na(c)*, mutat. after 21 (e); with infixed pron. 50 (g); with imperat. 115; with infixed pron., use of 237; disjunctive particle 238; in answers 241; *nac ef*, in answers 241 n.
- na*, *nat*, negat. part., use of 236; in condit. sent. 236 n. 1; with infixed pron. 237.
- nachaf*, interj. 244.
- nado*, 242 and *n*.
- nage*, 241.
- namyn*, *namwyn*, 219.
- narrative tense, 108.
- nasal mutation, see mutation.
- nat*, dependent neg. of copula 155 (a) (ε).
- neb*, use of 64.

- negative particles, 235-238; special vb. form with negat. 130 (b).  
*y neill*, use of 69; *y neill* - *y lleill*, 71.  
*nem*, prep. with pron. end. 53.  
*nes*, prep., use of 182.  
*neu*, lenat. after 16 (l); with infixed pron. 50 (e); with vb. part. *ry* 95 n.; conj. 220.  
*neur*, 95 n.; 221.  
*neut*, not foll. by *yd*, 93 (h); as copula 155 (a)(t); conj. 221.  
 neuter, lost in Welsh 25; neuter -*n* stems 27 (d); of demons. pron. 61.  
*ni* etc. pers. pron. 45.  
*nini* etc. pers. pron. 45.  
*ninneu* etc. pers. pron. 45.  
*no*, *noc*, mutat. after 21 (d); after compar. adj. 38 (a); use as conj. 222.  
*nocet*, *nogyt* 222.  
 nominative, old nominat. 25; syntax of nom. 26.  
 nouns, lenat. of init. cons. 16; lenat. after proper nouns 16(b)(γ); art. with prop. nouns 24; cases of 25; formation of pl. 27-28; collective nouns 29 (c); noun predic. with *yn* 35; plurals with cardinal nos. 42 (a); see also verbal nouns.  
*nu*, conj. 223.  
 number, in nouns, 25; in adjs. 33; in vb. 100; express. of number in passive vb. 100; number of vb. in rel. clause 103.  
 numerals, lenat. after 16(e); nasal mutat. after 20(c); spirant mutat. after 21(a); cardinals 41; ordinals 41; syntax of 42; distributives with *pob* 43; multipl. with *gweith* 44.  
*nwy*, 49 (c).  
*ny*, mutation after 21 (e); mutat. aft. non-relative *ny* 21 n. 2; mutat. aft. relat. *ny* 21 n. 2; infixed pron. after non-rel. *ny* 49 c; special relat. form of *ny* 49 c; with infix. pron. 50 (g); in negat. of relat. 82; 86; gov. by prep. 87 (a); rel. *ny* without antec. 87 (b); usage 235.  
*nyr*=*ny ry* 95 n.  
*nys*, in later Mid. W. 50 n.  
*nyt*, negat. of copula 155 (a)(δ); (a)(κ).  
*nyw*, 49 c.  
*o*, prep., lenat. aft. 16(i); aft. adjs. 34 (b); aft. superl. adjs. 38 (b); with pron. end. 53; aft. vb. noun, 122; =of 183; with art. 183.  
*o*, conj., mutat. aft. 21 (d); with infixed pron. 50 (h); not foll. by *yd*, 93 (l); use of 224.  
*-o-*, old pl. stems in, 27 n. 1; adj. stems in 30 n.  
*-o* subjunct. end. 138.  
 object, position of 85.  
 oblique cases, traces of, 25.  
*oc*, prep. 183.  
*och*, interj. 243.  
*odieithyr*, prep. 172.  
*oduch*, prep. 193.  
*oed*, impf. of *bot*, use of 107 n. 3; 154 (b).  
*-oed*, pl. suffix 28 B (h).  
*oet*, in *eirmoet*, *eiryoet* 197 n.  
*oes*, use of 154 (a)(β).  
*oia*, interj. 243.  
*oian a*, interj. 243.  
*oll*, use of 67; with numerals 67.  
*-on* pl. term. in adj. 31 (b).  
*ony*, *onyt*, conj. 224; 224 n. 2.  
*or*, conj 224; 224 n. 4.  
*or a* 87 (a); *or ny* 87 (a); *or y*, 87 (a); *or pan* 226; 2 (b).  
 order of words, dependent genit. 26; adj. 34 (a); noun 34 (a); adverb 40; numerals 41; copula 159.  
 ordinals, see number.  
 orthography of Early W. 12 n.  
*os*, conj. 224 and n. 5.

- os*, (*bot*) 152; copula 155 (a)( $\zeta$ )  
*osit*, *ossit*, 152; use of 154 (a)( $\beta$ ); 154 n. 1.  
*ot*, conj. 224.  
*-ot*, pl. suffix 28 B (g).
- pa*, *py*, with *peth* 79; used adjunct. 80; meaning of, 80 n. 1; without noun following 80 n. 2; followed by prep. 80 n. 3; *pa* - *bynnac*, 81.  
*padiw*, *pydiw*, 80 n. 4.  
*paham*, 80 n. 3.  
*pahar*, 80 n. 3.  
*pan*, with infix. pron. 49 (b); foll. by *yd* 93 (l); with *yw* 154 (a) ( $\beta$ ); *pan* = whence, 225; =when 226; *hyt pan* 226. 2 (a); *or pan* 226. 2 (b); *yr pan* 226. 2 (c).
- particles, preverbal 91-97; negat. 235 sqq.; disjunct. 238; interrog. 239; responsive 241.
- participle, passive 104; part. in *-edic* 116; pres. part. equiv. 126 (a); perf. part. equiv. 126 (b).
- parth* (*ac*), prep. 184.
- passive, numb. exp. in pass. voice 100; pers. in pass. 102; 103; pass. part. 104; imperat. pass. 115; part. pass. in *-edic*, 116; old pass. end. 129; 130; pret. and perf. 134; periphr. pass. of plupf. 136 (b).
- pawb*, use of 66.
- pei*, conj. not foll. by *yd* 93 (l); uses of 227; origin of 227 n.
- periphrasis, verbal noun with *gwneuthur* 123; periphrastic plupf. with *-oed*, active 136 (a); passive 136 (b).
- perfect. indic. with *ry*. 96 A (a); perfect part. equiv. 126 (b); use of 105; v. preterite.
- person in verb, 102-103; in passive 102; in 1 and 2 pers. of pass. 102.
- personal pron. see pronoun.
- pettwn*, 158.
- peth*, as pron. 74; interrog. 79.
- peun-*, old accus. 25.
- pieu*, in rel. clause 83 (a)( $\beta$ ); paradigm 161; use of 161.
- pluperfect, with *ry* 96 A (b); use of 105, 109; plupf. indic. replacing subj. 109 c; types of plupf. ind. 135; periphr. plupf. act. and pass. 136 (a)(b). plural, old Celtic, 27; pl. of nouns 27; vowel change in pl. 27 (a); pl. endings *-eu*, *-ieu*, 27 (b); *-on*, *-ion*, 27 (c); old consonantal pls. 27 (d); pl. suffixes 28; pl. in adjs. 31; 33; pl. of nouns with card. numerals 42 (a); 3 pl. end. of impf. 131.
- pob*, in distributives 43; used as adj. 66; *pob un* 66; *pob rei* 66.
- pony*, interrog. 240.
- ponyt*, copula 155 (a)( $\theta$ ).
- possessive, pronouns 55, 56; adjs. table of 57; prec. by prep. or conj. 58 (a).
- predicate, lenation of, after copula 18 (d); pred. before copula 159; after copula 159.
- predicative adj. 32; plural of 33; after *yn* 35; pred. noun with *yn* 35.
- preposition, lenat. after 16 (i); lenat. of 16 n. 13; nasal mut. after 20 (b); spirant mut. after 21 (c); with poss. adj. 58 (a); suffixed to *pa*, *py* 80 n. 3; forms and usage 162-197.
- present indic. 105; actual pres. 106 (a); as fut. 106 (e); pres. subj. endings 110.
- preterite with *ry*- 97 (a); use of 105; 108; in indir. speech 108 (b); =perfect 108 (c); endings of 132; absolute end. in 132 n.; s- pret. 133; t- pret. 133 (a); reduplic. in 133 (b); pret. pass. 134.
- pronoun, lenation of 17; lenat. after interrog. 18 (c); tables of 45-90; *mi*,

- etc. 45; *mivi* etc. 45; *minheu* etc. 45; weakening of, after vb. 45; construct. of indep. prons. 46; infixed pron. 48-51; after *pan* 49 (b); with *ry* 49 (c); with *ny* 49 (c); anticipat. obj. 49 n.; express dat. 51; with prepos. 52-53; simple pron. with pron.-prep. 54; conjunct. pron. with pron.-prep. 54; *meu*, etc. 55; poss. pron. syntax of 56; demonstr. pr. 61; syntax of 62; pronominal use of *dim* 73; *peth* 74; *rei* 75; *ryw*; *sawl* 77; *un* 78; interrog. 79; relat. 82, 84.
- prothetic vowel, 9.
- pryt* (*na*), conj. 228.
- pwyl*, 79; *pwyl* with noun, 79 n.
- pwyl gilyd* 185.
- py*, see *pa*; prep. 185; with poss. pron. 185; *pyr* 229.
- pynhac*, *pynnac* 81.
- pyr*, 229.
- rac*, with pron. end. 53; usage 186;  
*y rac* 186.
- reduction of cons. 12; of prons. 45.
- reduplication 133 (b).
- rei* 62 (b); *y rei*, foll. by rel. 62 (c); *pob rei* 66; as pron. 75.
- relative, *ny* relat. and non-relat. 21 n. 2; express. of inflected rel. 62 (c); rel. pron. 82-84; rel. *a* with *yd* 84; expr. of genit. of rel. 88; Welsh equiv. to Eng. rel. gov. by prep. 89; substitutes for 90; verb in rel. clauses 103; subjunct. in rel. cl. 114 (h).
- repeated action, 107 (c).
- responsive particles, 241.
- ro*, prep. with pron. end. 53.
- rodi*, *roi*, paradigm of 146.
- rwng*, prep. with pron. end. 53; usage 187; *odyrwng* 187; *yrgwng* 187.
- rwyl*, rel. form of *ry* 49 (c).
- ry*, verbal part. lenat. after 18 (f); with infix. pron. 49 (c); 50 (d); in rel. clause 83 (a)( $\gamma$ ); reduced to *r*, 95 n.; *y + ry* 95 n.; with indic. 96 A; with perf. indic. 96 A (a); with plupf. 96 A (b); with subj. 96 B; with pres. subj. 96 B (a); with past subj. 96 B (b); with vb. noun 96 C; in early W. poetry 97; with pret. indic. 97 (a); with subj. 97 (d); with fut. 97 (d); in later poetry 97 (d); with pres. indic. 97 C 1; in subord. cl. 97 C 2; with pres. and impf. of *darvot* 97 C n.; not found after neg.; *mad*; interrog. and rel. *a* 97'1; with infix. pron. 97. 3; with subj. of wish 97. 3 (b); with vb. noun 120 (b); with conj. *o* 224 n. 5.
- rydhau*, paradigm of 127.
- ryw*, rel. form of *ry* 49 (c).
- ryw*, pron. usage of 76.
- s, infixed pron. anticipating object 159 n. 2.
- s- preterite 133.
- s stems in, 27 (d).
- s- subjunctive 110 n. 2.
- sawl* used as pron. 77.
- secondary tense, impf. as, 107 (d) (a).
- sef*, *ssef*, 47.
- semivowels 3.
- sentence, sound changes within 12.
- singular formed from collect. nouns 29 c.
- sit, pret. and perf. end. 132 n.
- spirant mutat. 21, see mutation.
- stems in -s 27 (d); neut -n- 27 (d); in -o- 27 n. 1; in -u- 27 n. 1; -n- 27 n. 5; adj. stems in -i- 30 n.; in -u- 30 n.
- subject, position when emph. 85.
- subjunctive, with *ry* 96 B; pres. subj. with *ry* 96 B (a); past subj. with *ry* 96 B.(b); subj. of wish with *ry* 97

- 3 (b); replaced by plupf. indic. 109 c.; ending of pres. subj. 110; formation of, 110; *h* as sign of, 110; new formation in Mid. W. 110 n. 1; subj. stem in O.W. 110 n. 1; stem of subj. and indic. 110 n. 1; influence of indic. upon 110 n. 1; confusion of subj. with indic. 110 n. 1; subj. in *h* 110 n. 1; history of subj. in *h* 110 n. 2; *s*-subj. 110 n. 2; early history of 110 n. 2; tenses of subj. 111; pres. 111; impf. 111; past 111; past subj. in later Mid. W. 111; replaced by plupf. ind. 111 and *n*; perf. in subj. 111; plupf. in subj. 111; subj. replaced by indicat. 111 n.; usage 112–114; in main clauses 113 A; of wish 113 A (a); of command 113 A (b); express futurity 113 (c); after vbs. of *thinking*, *swearing*, etc. 114 (a); in subord. cl. 114 B; in indirect interrog. 114 B (b); in concessive cl. 114 (c); in condit. cl. 114 (d); in cl. of comparison 114 (e); in temporal cl. 114 (f); after vbs. of *effecting*, *commanding*, *desiring* 114 (g); in final cl. 114 (g); in relat. cl. 114 (h); endings of pres. subj. 138; of pass. subj. 139; form of past subj. 139; subj. with *hyt* 214 (b); of purpose with *hyt na* 214. 2 (b); after *mal* 216. 1 (b); of purpose after *mal na* 216. 3 (b).
- substantive verb, forms and usage 154.
- suffixes, pl. 28; of comparat. 37 (a); of verbal noun 119.
- superlative adj., lenat. after 16 n. 5, no pl. forms 33; form of 37; foll. by prep. *o* 38 (b); construction 38.
- syllable, loss of final syll. 30 n.
- syntax, of the art. 24; of cases 26; of genit. in prose and poetry 26; of numerals 42; *o* poss. pron. 56.
- tan*, *dan*, prep. lenat. aft. 16 (i); with pron. end. 53; with vb. noun, 126 (c); usage 188; *ymdan* 164; *adan*, *ydan*, 188.
- tawr*, *dawr*, paradigm of 147.
- temporal clauses, 114 (f).
- tenses, see present etc.
- tor*, verbal ending 129.
- tra*, conj. with infix. pron. 50 (h); foll. by *yd* 93 (l); usage 230.
- tra*, *trag*, prep., mutation after 21 (c); usage 189.
- tri*, mutation after 21 (a).
- tras*, *dros*, *trus*, prep., lenation after 16 (i); with pron. end. 53; usage 190.
- trwy*, *drwy*, prep., lenation after 16 (i); with pron. end. 53; usage 191.
- tu* (*ac*), prep. 192.
- u*, 3 pl. end. of pron.-prep. 52 (b).
- u*-stems in 27 n. 3; 30 n.
- ub* interj. 243.
- uch*, prep., lenation after 16 (i); with pron. end. 53; usage, 193.
- ud*, 3 pl. end. of pron. prep. 52 (b).
- un*, as pron. 78.
- verb, end. 3 sg. pres. ind. act. 7 n. 1; 98; lenat. after, 16 (g) (a); lenat. of, 18; posit. in Celt. sent. 85; conjugation, 98–161; classes of, 98; dependent, 99; voice, 99; number, 100; concord with subj. 101; 103; person, 102; mood, 104; verbs of *thinking*, *swearing*, etc., 114 (a); verbs of *effecting*, *commanding*, etc., 114 (g); paradigm of reg. vb. 127; vowel infection in obj. 128 (a); denominative vb. 128 (b); verbs in *-hau* 128 (b); ending of 3 pl. 129; irreg. vb. 140–152; see indic. etc.
- verbal noun, lenat. of, 16 (b) (δ); with *ry*, 96 C; 120; formation, 118; suffixes, 119; usage, 120; voice in, 121;

- agent with, 122; with *gwneuthur*, 123; continuing finite vb. 124; as historic infin. 125; special use after *yn*, 126; with *gwedy*, 126 (b); with *tan*, 126 (c); with *can*, 126 (c).  
 vocative, lenation in, 16 (m)(a).  
 voice, in vb. noun, 121; see number, passive.  
 vowels, vowel system, 1; orthog. variat. 1 n; quantity, 2; long, 2 (a); half-long 2 (b); accented, 2 A; unaccented 2 B; short, 2 B; changes, 5; infecting, 5; infecting vowel preserved, 6; lost, 7; vowel-infection in 3 sg. pr. ind. act. 7 n 1; variation of, due to accent, 8; weakening, 8; prothetic 9; epenthetic, 10; change in adj. 31 (a); infection in vb. 128 (a); irregular vowel infection, 128 n.
- wely dy*, interj. 244.  
 wish, subjunctive of, 113 A (a).  
 word groups, mutation of cons. in, 12.  
*wrth*, prep., with pron. end. 53; usage 194.  
*wrth*, conj. 231.  
*wy*, usage of, 45 n 2; becoming *wynt*, 45 n 2.  
*wyf*, etc., as copula, 155 (a)(μ).  
*wynt*, usage, 45 n 2; history of, 45 n 2.  
*wynteu*, usage, 46 n.
- y*, semi-vowel, 3 n (g).  
*y*, prep. lenat. after, 16 (i); with pron. end. 53; with poss. adj. 58; after vb. noun, 122; usage, 195.  
*y* 'her,' mutat. aft. 21 b.  
*yd*, *yt*, *yr*, *y*, verb. part., lenation after 18 (e); with infix. pron. 49 b; 50 (b); 93 n 2; with rel. *a* 84; superseding *a* 85 note; after *or* 87 (a); *yr* 91; *yr* for *yd* 91 n 2; *yt* 91 n 2; *y* not lenating 91 n 2; origin of non-lenat. *y* 91 n 2; *yt* lenat. 91 n 2; usage 92; 93; after *gwedy* 93 n 3; before *ry* 93 n 4; *yd*, use of in RB; in WB; and in later Mid. W, 94; infixing pron. 94.  
*-yd* pl. ending 28 B (i)  
*ydoed*, etc., 154 n 3; usage, 154 (b).  
*ydyw*, use of, 154, and n 3.  
*yll*, see *ell*.  
*yma*, adv. 63.  
*yn*, prep. with vb. noun, 16 n 8; lenat. 16 n. 8; *yn* predic. 16 n 8; nasal mut. after, 20 (b); with predic. noun and adj. 35; with adj. 40; with pron. end. 53; with vb. noun, 126; usage, 196.  
*yn*, conj., usage, 232.  
*ynt*, copula, 155 (a)(γ).  
*ynteu*, usage, 46 n.  
*yny*, conj. with infix. pron. 49 (b); 50 (h); not foll. by *yd*, 93 (l); usage, 233.  
*-yon*, pl. ending 31 (c).  
*yr*, see article.  
*yr*, prep. with pron. end. 53; usage, 187; *yr pan*, 226 c; *yr na*, 234.  
*yr* for *y* + *yr*, 87 note.  
*yr* for *y* + *ry*, 91 n 3; 95 n.  
*ys*, *ydys* 152  
*ys*, copula, 155 (a)(α); *ys oed* 159 n 2.  
*ysyd*, *syd*, in relat. cl. 83 (a)(α); usage, 154 (a)(β); 155 (a)(κ).  
*yssit*, *yssydynt*, usage, 154 (a) n 1.  
*yttoed*, usage, 154 (b).  
*yttiwi*, usage, 154 (a)(α); copula, 154 n 4.  
*yw*, copula, 155 (a)(β); *pan yw*, 155 (a)(β)



## CORRIGENDA

P. 5, l. 14 for 'sing' read 'sang'

P. 7, l. 15, for mynwgl read mwnwgl

P. 20, l. 34, for Aften read After

P. 37, l. 20, for thee read me

P. 110, l. 21, for **on** read *on*

P. 123, l. 31, for **as** read *as*

? P. 140, l. 28, for 19,707 read 19,709

P. 141, l. 32, for 12 dianot read 13 dianot

ib., for 13 y rydunt read 14 y rydunt

P. 145, l. 27, for 19,707 read 19,709

ib., l. 29, for dywyasavc read dywyssavc

P. 151, l. 25, for can wr read canwr

P. 152, l. 19, for ordiwed read or diwed

P. 153, l. 27, for troet noethon read troetnoethon

P. 154, l. 5, for yny read yn y

P. 155, l. 2, for gyt gyghor read gytgyghor

P. 162, l. 11, add comma after Gotlont

ib., for Gŷynw read Gŷynw[as]

ib., for Gerein read Gerein[t]

P. 166, l. 28, for kadŵr read Kadŵr

P. 167, l. 19, add full stop after hynn

P. 169, l. 16, for vrytanyeit read Vrytanyeit

P. 182, l. 21, delete the full stop after Les

P. 184, l. 20, for ge ynyon read gelynyon

ib., l. 33, read a[c] Vryen

P. 192, l. 18, for vililioed (*sic* MS.) read vilioed

—P. 195, l. 1, for allan. Dŷuot read allan dŷuot

P. 198, l. 11, for ehaŵc. read ehaŵc,

P. 199, l. 31, for Uarruaŵc (*sic* MS.) read Uaruaŵc

P. 201, l. 20, for kyfuarch (*sic* MS.) read kyfarth

ib., l. 24, for Yspaden read Yspad[ad]en

P. 202, l. 2, for yn read ny

- P. 210<sup>b</sup>, l. 4, *for idau read idaw*  
 ib., l. 20, *for rhingyll read ringyll*  
 ib., l. 33, *for nessat read nessaf*  
 ib., *for kyglaŵs read kyghaŵs*
- P. 211<sup>b</sup>, l. 15, *for dyvedut read dywedut*
- P. 212<sup>b</sup>, l. 5, *for savun read savwn*
- P. 212<sup>b</sup>, l. 11, *for ydau read idaw*
- P. 213<sup>b</sup>, l. 21, *for dylyaf read dylyaf fi*  
 ib., l. 24, *for ageidw read a geidw*
- P. 216<sup>a</sup>, l. 22, *for Neu<sup>5</sup> read Neu<sup>6</sup>*
- P. 216<sup>b</sup>, l. 23, *for Kynnybo read Kynny bo*
- P. 219<sup>b</sup>, l. 19, *for amdiffynnur vreint read amdiffynnwr breint*
- P. 220<sup>b</sup>, l. 12, *for testyon eneill read tystyon y neill*  
 ib., l. 20, *for ygneit read yneit*
- P. 223, l. 5 and 6, *for diethyr read dieithyr*  
 ib., l. 22, 25 and 33, *for Morgannuc read Morgannwc*  
 ib., l. 29, *for a digonher read digonher*
- P. 227, l. 21, *dele the comma after trŵs*
- P. 229, l. 1, *read dayargychwyn*
- P. 231, l. 26, *for ieuau read Ieuau*
- P. 234, l. 16, *for teern meibon read teernmeibon*
- P. 237, note 1, *for M.A. read MA. p. 268a.*
- P. 237<sup>b</sup>, l. 17, *for Daŵ read Duŵ*
- P. 239, l. 20, *for a metev read am etev*
- P. 241, l. 7, *for or seuir read orseuir*  
 ib., l. 31, *for di luyd read diluyd*

Publications

OF THE

University of Manchester.



## MANCHESTER UNIVERSITY PUBLICATIONS.

### ANATOMICAL SERIES.

No. I. STUDIES IN ANATOMY from the Anatomical Department of the University of Manchester. Vol. iii. Edited by ALFRED H. YOUNG, M.B. (Edin.), F.R.C.S., Professor of Anatomy. Demy 8vo, pp. ix. 289, 23 plates. 10s. net. (Publication No. 10, 1906.)

"All the papers contained in the volume are real additions to the knowledge of the subject with which they deal. For three of the studies Prof. Young is either in part or wholly responsible, and he is to be congratulated on the vigour shown by the Manchester School of Anatomists."—*Nature*.

"This work affords admirable evidence of the virility of our younger British Universities. It is a notable addition to an already notable series."—*Medical Review*.

"This forms the third volume of the Studies in Anatomy issued by the Council, and contains contributions of considerable interest. The volume is well printed and bound. It speaks well for the activity of investigation at Manchester."—*Lancet*.

"The volume is well got up and is evidence of the continuation of the excellent work which has been carried on for so long a period, under Professor A. H. Young's supervision, and has been encouraged and stimulated by his own work."—*British Medical Journal*.

"Throughout the papers, careful research and accurate observation are manifested, and they will repay careful perusal. To the Anatomist, as well as the practical physician or surgeon, they will prove valuable."

—*Edinburgh Medical Journal*.

### CLASSICAL SERIES.

No. I. A STUDY OF THE BACCHAE OF EURIPIDES. By G. NORWOOD, M.A., Assistant Lecturer in Classics. Demy 8vo, pp. xx. 188. 5s. net. (Publication No. 31, 1908.)

### ECONOMIC SERIES.

No. I. THE LANCASHIRE COTTON INDUSTRY. By S. J. CHAPMAN, M.A., M. Com., Stanley Jevons Professor of Political Economy and Dean of the Faculty of Commerce. Demy 8vo, pp. vii. 309. 7s. 6d. net. (Publication No. 4, 1904.)

"Such a book as this ought to be, and will be, read far beyond the bounds of the trade."—*Manchester Guardian*.

"There have been books dealing with various phases of the subject, but no other has so ably treated it from the economic as well as from the historical point of view."—*Manchester Courier*.

"The story of the evolution of the industry from small and insignificant beginnings up to its present imposing proportions and highly developed and specialised forms, is told in a way to rivet the attention of the reader . . . the book is a valuable and instructive treatise on a fascinating yet important subject."—*Cotton Factory Times*.

"Highly valuable to all close students."—*Scotsman*.

---

34, Cross Street, Manchester

SHERRATT & HUGHES

---

**MANCHESTER UNIVERSITY PUBLICATIONS.  
ECONOMIC SERIES.**

(GARTSIDE REPORT, No. 1.)

No. II. COTTON SPINNING AND MANUFACTURING IN THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA. By T. W. UTTLEY, B.A., Gartside Scholar. Demy 8vo, pp. xii. 70. 1s. net.  
(Publication No. 8, 1905.)

"Mr. Uttley is to be congratulated on the performance of a not altogether easy task, and his book, in conception and execution, appears to fulfil admirably the intentions of the Trust."—*Manchester Courier*.

"The writer gives ample details concerning wages and other features connected with typical mills . . . and the information thus gathered is of interest and value to the factory operative as well as the student and economist."—*Cotton Factory Times*.

"Mr. Uttley describes how he visited the mills in various States in a very systematic and detailed manner. Altogether the report makes an admirable and welcome collection of information, and will be found on many occasions worthy of reference."—*Textile Mercury*.

(GARTSIDE REPORT, No. 2.)

No. III. SOME MODERN CONDITIONS AND RECENT DEVELOPMENTS IN IRON AND STEEL PRODUCTIONS IN AMERICA, being a Report to the Gartside Electors, on the results of a Tour in the U.S.A. By FRANK POPPLEWELL, B.Sc., Gartside Scholar. Demy 8vo, pp. vi. 119. 1s. net.  
(Publication No. 21, 1906.)

"The author has employed his time well, and has given a clear idea of modern conditions."—*Nature*.

"The American methods of iron and steel production are described, from the practical as well as the statistical side."—*Manchester Courier*.

"Mr. Popplewell writes clearly and well, and he is to be congratulated upon having carried his task through in so entirely a satisfactory manner."—*Manchester City News*.

"America's progress in iron and steel is more wonderful than any bald statistics of production with which we are so familiar can indicate. How that progress has been effected—effected under labour, transport and other difficulties—Mr. Popplewell tells us in an interesting and keenly intelligent review."—*Manchester Guardian*.

"A minute observation of detail . . . characterises the whole work."  
—*Iron and Coal Trades Review*.

---

34, Cross Street, Manchester

SHERRATT & HUGHES

---

MANCHESTER UNIVERSITY PUBLICATIONS.  
ECONOMIC SERIES.

(GARTSIDE REPORT, No. 3.)

No. IV. ENGINEERING AND INDUSTRIAL CONDITIONS  
IN THE UNITED STATES. By FRANK FOSTER, M.Sc., Gartside  
Scholar. Demy 8vo, pp. ix. 106. 1s. net.

(Publication No. 22, 1906.)

"The report under review is of very great interest to those connected with the manufacturing branch of engineering in this country, many of whom will have to relinquish their preconceived notions regarding American methods, if Mr. Foster's conclusions are to be accepted."

—*Electrical Review*.

"The book altogether is very readable, and one we can heartily recommend to all interested in the economics of engineering."

—*The Practical Engineer*.

"Mr. Foster's observation of facts is fresh and interesting . . . the technical side of his report exhibits much care."—*Manchester Guardian*.

"The book is well worth reading."—*Iron and Coal Trades Review*.

"There is much in the book which will be new to English readers, even to those who have studied the reports of the Moseley and other recent 'commissions.'"—*Belfast News Letter*.

No. V. THE RATING OF LAND VALUES. By J. D.  
CHORLTON, M.Sc. Demy 8vo, pp. viii. 177. 3s. 6d. net.

(Publication No. 23, 1907.)

"A timely and temperate treatise on a subject of growing interest."

—*Pall Mall Gazette*.

"The writer is learned, intelligent, progressive, fair and lucid."

—*Progress*.

"The facts and deductions are well put."—*Western Mail*.

"Chapters upon the scheme of the Royal Commission (minority report) — 'Building Land,' 'The Future Increase of Land Values,' 'The Municipal Bill,' and others . . . set forth with clearness and detail some of the many interesting and difficult subjects in connection with valuation, rates and rating."—*Estates Gazette*.

"Mr. Chorlton has made a contribution to this interesting controversy which is worthy of the serious attention of all persons interested in the subject."—*Local Government Chronicle*.

"The arguments for and against this proposed reform in the taxation of land have never been more fairly and freely stated."

—*Liverpool Daily Post and Mercury*.

"Mr. Chorlton deals clearly and concisely with the whole subject of rating and land values."—*The Standard*.

---

60, Chandos Street, London, W.C.



**MANCHESTER UNIVERSITY PUBLICATIONS.  
ECONOMIC SERIES.**

"The impartiality and candour of Mr. Chorlton's method are beyond dispute, and his book will repay careful study by all who are interested in the question, from whatever motive."—*Westminster Gazette*.

"The first half of this book deserves to become a classic . . . . . is one of the best books on a practical economic question that has appeared for many years. It is not only scientifically valuable, but so well written as to be interesting to a novice on the subject."—*The Nation*

"This thoughtful and judiciously expressed treatise."

—*Manchester City News*.

"A very businesslike and serviceable collection of essays and notes on this intricate question."—*Manchester Guardian*.

(GARTSIDE REPORT, No. 4.)

No. VI. DYEING IN GERMANY AND AMERICA. By SYDNEY H. HIGGINS, M.Sc., Gartside Scholar. Demy 8vo, pp. xiii. 112. 1s. net. (Publication No. 24, 1907.)

"The book will . . . make a valuable addition to the technical literature of this country."—*Tribune*.

"The work is one which . . . should receive the attention of those who desire a general view of the German and American dyeing industries."—*Textile Manufacturer*.

"A perusal of the work leads us to the conclusion that much useful work is being done by the Gartside scholars, which will give these young men an excellent insight into the working conditions of various industries."—*Textile Recorder*.

No. VII. THE HOUSING PROBLEM IN ENGLAND. By ERNEST RITSON DEWSNUP, M.A., Professor of Railway Economics in the University of Chicago. Demy 8vo, pp. vii. 327. 5s. net. (Publication No. 25, 1907.)

"Mr. Dewsnup's book is most valuable as it provides all essential information on the subject."—*Standard*.

"All those who are interested in this question, no matter what their economic predilections, may ponder with advantage Professor Dewsnup's pages."—*Newcastle Daily Chronicle*.

"The study brings together so weighty an array of facts and arguments that it cannot but prove instructive and suggestive to all classes of economists interested in its subject."—*Scotsman*.

"Professor Dewsnup's view of the whole problem was stated in 1903, in a form which won the Warburton Essay Prize at the Manchester University. Now revised and brought up to date, his valuable work has taken permanent form."—*Westminster Gazette*.

(GARTSIDE REPORT, No. 5.)

No. VIII. AMERICAN BUSINESS ENTERPRISE. By DOUGLAS KNOOP M.A. Price 1s. 6d. net. (Publication No. 30, 1907.)

---

**MANCHESTER UNIVERSITY PUBLICATIONS.  
EDUCATIONAL SERIES.**

- No. I. CONTINUATION SCHOOLS IN ENGLAND & ELSEWHERE: Their place in the Educational System of an Industrial and Commercial State. By MICHAEL E. SADLER, M.A., LL.D., Professor of the History and Administration of Education. Demy 8vo, pp. xxvi 779. 8s. 6d. net. (Publication No. 29, 1907).  
This work is largely based on an enquiry made by past and present Students of the Educational Department of the University of Manchester. Chapters on Continuation Schools in the German Empire, Switzerland, Denmark, and France, have been contributed by other writers.
- No. II. THE DEMONSTRATION SCHOOL RECORD. No. I. Being Contributions to the Study of Education from the Department of Education in the University of Manchester. By Professor J. J. FINDLAY. 1s. 6d. net. (Publication No. 32, 1908.)

**HISTORICAL SERIES.**

- No. I. MEDIAEVAL MANCHESTER AND THE BEGINNINGS OF LANCASHIRE. By JAMES TAIT, M.A., Professor of Ancient and Mediaeval History. Demy 8vo, pp. x. 211. 7s. 6d. net. (Publication No. 3, 1904.)

"Patient and enlightened scholarship and a sense of style and proportion have enabled the writer to produce a work at once solid and readable."—*English Historical Review*.

"A welcome addition to the literature of English local history, not merely because it adds much to our knowledge of Manchester and Lancashire, but also because it displays a scientific method of treatment which is rare in this field of study in England."—Dr. Gross in *American Historical Review*.

"La collection ne pouvait débiter plus significativement et plus heureusement que par un ouvrage d'histoire du Moyen Age dû à M. Tait, car l'enseignement médiéviste est un de ceux qui font le plus d'honneur à la jeune Université de Manchester, et c'est à M. le Professeur Tait qu'il faut attribuer une bonne part de ce succès."—*Revue de Synthèse historique*.

"The two essays are models of their kind."—*Manchester Guardian*.

- No. II. INITIA OPERUM LATINORUM QUAE SAECULIS XIII., XIV., XV. ATTRIBUUNTUR. By A. G. LITTLE, M.A., Lecturer in Palaeography. Demy 8vo, pp. xiii. 273 (interleaved). 15s. net. (Publication No. 5, 1904.)

"Whoever has attempted to ascertain the contents of a Mediaeval miscellany in manuscript must often have been annoyed by the occurrence of a blank space where the title of the treatise ought to be. Mr. Little has therefore earned the gratitude of all such persons by making public a collection of some 6,000 incipits, which he arranged in the first instance for his private use, in compiling a catalogue of Franciscan MSS."—*English Historical Review*.

---

MANCHESTER UNIVERSITY PUBLICATIONS.  
HISTORICAL SERIES.

No. III. THE OLD COLONIAL SYSTEM. By GERALD BERKELEY HERTZ, M.A., B.C.L., Lecturer in Constitutional Law. Demy 8vo, pp. xi. 232. 5s. net. (Publication No. 7, 1905.)

"Mr. Hertz gives us an elaborate historical study of the old colonial system, which disappeared with the American Revolution. . . . He shows a remarkable knowledge of contemporary literature, and his book may claim to be a true history of popular opinion."—*Spectator*.

"Mr. Hertz's book is one which no student of imperial developments can neglect. It is lucid, fair, thorough, and convincing."

—*Glasgow Herald*.

"Mr. Hertz's 'Old Colonial System' is based on a careful study of contemporary documents, with the result that several points of no small importance are put in a new light . . . it is careful, honest work . . . The story which he tells has its lesson for us."—*The Times*.

"Both the ordinary reader and the academic mind will get benefit from this well-informed and well-written book."—*Scotsman*.

No. IV. STUDIES OF ROMAN IMPERIALISM. By W. T. ARNOLD, M.A. Edited by EDWARD FIDDES, M.A., Lecturer in Ancient History, with Memoir of the Author by Mrs. HUMPHRY WARD and C. E. MONTAGUE. With a Photogravure of W. T. Arnold. Demy 8vo, 400 pp. 7s. 6d. net.

(Publication No. 16, 1906.)

"Mrs. Humphry Ward has used all her delicate and subtle art to draw a picture of her beloved brother; and his friend Mr. Montague's account of his middle life is also remarkable for its literary excellence."—*Athenæum*.

"The memoir . . . tenderly and skilfully written by the 'sister and friend,' tells a story, which well deserved to be told, of a life rich in aspirations, interests, and friendships, and not without its measure of actual achievement."—*Tribune*.

"This geographical sense and his feeling for politics give colour to all he wrote."—*Times*.

"Anyone who desires a general account of the Empire under Augustus which is freshly and clearly written and based on wide reading will find it here."—*Manchester Guardian*.

"Nothing could be better than the sympathetic tribute which Mrs. Humphry Ward pays to her brother, or the analysis of his work and method by his colleague Mr. Montague. The two together have more stuff in them than many big books of recent biography."

—*Westminster Gazette*.

The Memoir may be had separately, price 2s. 6d. net.

---

MANCHESTER UNIVERSITY PUBLICATIONS.  
HISTORICAL SERIES.

No. V. CANON PIETRO CASOLA'S PILGRIMAGE TO  
JERUSALEM IN THE YEAR 1494. By M. M. NEWETT,  
B.A., formerly Jones Fellow. Demy 8vo., pp. 427. 7s. 6d. net.  
(Publication No. 26, 1907.)

"Thoroughness is characteristic of introduction, the copious notes, appendix and index. . . . Miss Newett's translation is spirited and interesting. . . ."—*Manchester Courier*.

"Casola's narrative richly deserved the honours of print and translation. The book is a credit to its editor and to the historical school of Manchester University."—*Morning Leader*.

"His narrative is at once simple and dignified in style, convincing and interesting in its pictures of the conditions governing travel by sea and land four centuries ago."—*Daily Telegraph*.

"The book is like a gallery of mediæval paintings, full of movement and colouring, instinct with the vitality of the time."—*Birmingham Post*.

"Miss Newett's introduction is a contribution of considerable value to the history of European commerce."—*Spectator*.

"Forms a noteworthy addition to the number of books from which a knowledge can be gained of the itineraries of the pilgrims to Palestine."

—*Scotsman*.

"The whole volume is fascinating. It presents a lively picture of bygone times, abounds in curious facts and recalls quaint and pleasing ceremonies, and exhibits the ardent pilgrim of the past in his true light. Miss Newett is alike to be congratulated on her translation, her Introduction (which takes up a third of the volume), and her notes."

—*Manchester City News*.

"The work which Miss Margaret Newett has probably saved from oblivion is as intrinsically interesting as it should prove instructive to the student of history."—*Daily News*.

"One of the most delightful narratives that record the impressions of a pious pilgrim."—*Westminster Gazette*.

"One of the most comprehensive of the itineraries is that now translated, an important feature of it being its full description of the city of Venice."—*The Times*

No. VI. HISTORICAL ESSAYS. Edited by T. F. TOUT, M.A.,  
Professor of Mediæval and Modern History and JAMES TAIT, M.A.,  
Professor of Ancient and Mediæval History. Demy 8vo., pp. xv. 557.  
6s. net. Reissue of the Edition of 1902 with Index and New Preface  
(Publication No. 27, 1907.)

"Diese zwanzig chronologisch geordneten Aufsätze heissen in der Vorrede der Herausgeber *Festschrift*, behandeln zur Hälfte ausser-englische

SHERRATT & HUGHES

---

MANCHESTER UNIVERSITY PUBLICATIONS.

HISTORICAL SERIES.

Themata, benutzen reichlich festländische Literatur und verraten überall neben weiten Ausblicken eine methodische Schulung die der dortigen Facultät hohe Ehre macht." Professor Liebermann in *Deutsche Literaturzeitung*,

"Imperial history, local history, ecclesiastical history, economic history and the methods of historical teaching—all these are in one way or another touched upon by scholars who have collaborated in this volume. Men and women alike have devoted their time and pains to working out problems of importance and often of no slight difficulty. The result is one of which the university and city may be justly proud." The late Professor York Powell in the *Manchester Guardian*.

"Esso contiene venti lavori storici dettati, quattro da professori e sedici da licenziati del Collegio, e sono tutto scritti appositamente e condotti secondo le più rigorose norme della critica e su documenti." R. Predelli in *Nuovo Archivio Veneto*.

"La variété des sujets et l'érudition avec laquelle ils sont traités font grand honneur à la manière dont l'histoire est enseigné à Owens College." *Revue Historique*.

"No one who reads these essays will do so without acknowledging their ability, both in originality and research. They deal with historic subjects from the beginnings of Caesar-worship to the detention of Napoleon at St. Helena, and they deal with them in a thoroughgoing fashion." *Guardian*.

"Par nature, c'est un recueil savant, qui témoigne du respect et de l'émulation que sait exercer pour les études historiques la jeune et déjà célèbre université." *Revue d'histoire ecclésiastique* (Louvain).

"All these essays reach a high level; they avoid the besetting sin of most of our present historical writing, which consists of serving up a hash of what other historians have written flavoured with an original spice of error. . . . They are all based on original research and written by specialists." Professor A. F. Pollard in the *English Historical Review*.

"Sie bilden einen schönen Beweis für die rationelle Art, mit der dort dieses Studium betrieben wird." Professor O. Weber in *Historische Zeitschrift*.

The Index can be purchased separately price 6d.

---

34, Cross Street, Manchester

SHERRATT & HUGHES

---

**MANCHESTER UNIVERSITY PUBLICATIONS.**  
**MEDICAL SERIES.**

No. I. SKETCHES OF THE LIVES AND WORK OF THE HONORARY MEDICAL STAFF OF THE ROYAL INFIRMARY. From its foundation in 1752 to 1830, when it became the Royal Infirmary. By EDWARD MANSFIELD BROCKBANK, M.D., M.R.C.P. Crown 4to. (illustrated). Pp. vii. 311. 15s. net.

(Publication No. 1, 1904.)

"Dr. Brockbank's is a book of varied interest. It also deserves a welcome as one of the earliest of the 'Publications of the University of Manchester.'"—*Manchester Guardian*.

"We have a valuable contribution to local Medical Literature."

—*Daily Dispatch*.

No. II. PRACTICAL PRESCRIBING AND DISPENSING. For Medical Students. By WILLIAM KIRKBY, sometime Lecturer in Pharmacognosy in the Owens College, Manchester. Crown 8vo, 220 pp. 5s. net.

(Publication No. 2, 1904, Second edition, 1906.)

"The whole of the matter bears the impress of that technical skill and thoroughness with which Mr. Kirkby's name must invariably be associated, and the book must be welcomed as one of the most useful recent additions to the working library of prescribers and dispensers."

—*Pharmaceutical Journal*.

"Thoroughly practical text-books on the subject are so rare, that we welcome with pleasure Mr. William Kirkby's 'Practical Prescribing and Dispensing.' The book is written by a pharmacist expressly for medical students, and the author has been most happy in conceiving its scope and arrangement."—*British Medical Journal*.

"The work appears to be peculiarly free from blemishes and particularly full in practical detail. It is manifestly the work of one who is a skilled chemist, and an expert pharmacist, and who knows not only the requirements of the modern student but the best way in which his needs may be met."—*Medical Press*.

"This is a very sensible and useful manual."—*The Hospital*.

"The book will be found very useful to any students during a course of practical dispensing."—*St. Bartholomew's Hospital Journal*.

"The book is a model, being tutorial from beginning to end."

—*The Chemist and Druggist*.

No. III. HANDBOOK OF SURGICAL ANATOMY. By G. A. WRIGHT, B.A., M.B. (Oxon.), F.R.C.S., Professor of Systematic Surgery, and C. H. PRESTON, M.D., F.R.C.S., L.D.S., Lecturer on Dental Anatomy; Assistant Dental Surgeon to the Victoria Dental Hospital of Manchester. Crown 8vo, pp. ix. 205. Second edition. 5s. net.

(Publication No. 6, 1905.)

---

60, Chandos Street, London, W.C.

**MANCHESTER UNIVERSITY PUBLICATIONS.**  
**MEDICAL SERIES.**

"We can heartily recommend the volume to students, and especially to those preparing for a final examination in surgery."—*Hospital*.

"Dr. Wright and Dr. Preston have produced a concise and very readable little handbook of surgical applied anatomy. . . . The subject matter of the book is well arranged and the marginal notes in bold type facilitate reference to any desired point."—*Lancet*.

No. IV. A COURSE OF INSTRUCTION IN OPERATIVE SURGERY in the University of Manchester. By WILLIAM THORBURN, M.D., B.S. (Lond.), F.R.C.S., Lecturer in Operative Surgery. Crown 8vo, pp. 75. 2s. 6d. net.

(Publication No. 11, 1906.)

"This little book gives the junior student all that he wants, and nothing that he does not want. Its size is handy, and altogether for its purpose it is excellent."—*University Review*.

"As a working guide it is excellent."—*Edinburgh Medical Journal*.

No. V. A HANDBOOK OF LEGAL MEDICINE. By W. SELLARS, M.D. (London), of the Middle Temple and Northern Circuit, Barrister-at-law. With Illustrations. Crown 8vo, pp. vii. 233. 7s. 6d. net.

(Publication No. 14, 1906.)

"This is quite one of the best books of the kind we have come across."—*Law Times*.

No. VI. A CATALOGUE OF THE PATHOLOGICAL MUSEUM OF THE UNIVERSITY OF MANCHESTER. Edited by J. LORRAIN SMITH, M.A., M.D. (Edin.), Professor of Pathology. Crown 4to, 1260 pp. 7s. 6d. net.

(Publication No. 15, 1906.)

"The catalogue compares very favourably with others of a similar character, and, apart from its value for teaching purposes in an important medical school such as that of the University of Manchester, it is capable of being of great assistance to others as a work of reference."

—*Edinburgh Medical Journal*.

"In conclusion we need only say that Professor Lorrain Smith has performed the most essential part of his task—the description of the specimens—excellently, and an honourable mention must be made of the book as a publication."—*British Medical Journal*.

No. VII. HANDBOOK OF DISEASES OF THE HEART. By GRAHAM STEELL, M.D., F.R.C.P., Professor of Medicine, and Physician to the Manchester Royal Infirmary. Crown 8vo, pp. xii. 389, 11 plates (5 in colours), and 100 illustrations in the text. 7s. 6d. net.

Publication No. 20, 1906.)



**MANCHESTER UNIVERSITY PUBLICATIONS.**  
**MEDICAL SERIES.**

"It more truly reflects modern ideas of heart disease than any book we are acquainted with, and therefore may be heartily recommended to our readers."—*Treatment*.

"We regard this volume as an extremely useful guide to the study of diseases of the heart, and consider that no better introduction to the subject could possibly have been written."—*Medical Times and Hospital Gazette*.

"We can cordially recommend Dr. Steell's book as giving an excellent and thoroughly practical account of the subject of which it treats."—*Edinburgh Medical Review*.

**PHYSICAL SERIES.**

No. I. THE PHYSICAL LABORATORIES OF THE UNIVERSITY OF MANCHESTER. A record of 25 years' work. Demy 8vo, pp. 142, 10 Plates, 4 Plans. 5s. net. (Publication No. 13, 1906.)

This volume contains an illustrated description of the Physical, Electrical Engineering, and Electro-Chemistry Laboratories of the Manchester University, also a complete Biographical and Bibliographical Record of those who have worked in the Physics Department of the University during the past 25 years.

"The book is excellently got up, and contains a description of the department of physics and its equipment, a short biographical sketch of the Professor with a list of his scientific writings and a well-executed portrait and a record of the career of students and others who have passed through Dr. Schuster's hands. Alumni of Owens will welcome the volume as an interesting link with their alma mater."—*Glasgow Herald*.

"This interesting and valuable contribution to the history of the Manchester University also contains several illustrations, and forms the first of the "physical series" of the publications of the University of Manchester."—*The Times*

"A record of achievement of which no man need be ashamed"—*Westminster Gazette*.

"It is a memorial of which any man would be justly proud, and the University of which he is both an alumnus and a professor may well share that pride."—*Manchester Guardian*.

**PUBLIC HEALTH SERIES.**

No. I. ARCHIVES OF THE PUBLIC HEALTH LABORATORY OF THE UNIVERSITY OF MANCHESTER. Edited by A. SHERIDAN DELÉPINE, M.Sc., M.B., Ch.M., Director of the Laboratory and Procter Professor of Comparative Pathology and Bacteriology. Crown 4to, pp. iv. 451. £1. 1s. net.  
(Publication No. 12, 1906.)

**MANCHESTER UNIVERSITY PUBLICATIONS**  
**PUBLIC HEALTH SERIES.**

"The University of Manchester has taken the important and highly commendable step of commencing the publication of the archives of its Public Health Laboratory, and has issued, under the able and judicious editorship of Professor Sheridan Delépine, the first volume of a series that promises to be of no small interest and value alike to members of the medical profession and to those of the laity. . . . Original communications bearing upon diseases which are prevalent in the districts surrounding Manchester, or dealing with food- and water-supplies, air, disposal of refuse, sterilisation and disinfection and kindred subjects, will be published in future volumes; and it is manifest that these, as they successively appear, will form a constantly increasing body of trustworthy information upon subjects which are not only of the highest interest to the profession but of supreme importance to the public."—

*The Lancet.*

"It is safe to say that as these volumes accumulate they will form one of the most important works of reference on questions of public health, and ought, at all events, to be in the library of every public authority."—*Manchester Guardian.*

"The volume . . . speaks well for the activity of investigation in Manchester."—*Lancet.*

**THEOLOGICAL SERIES.**

No. I. INAUGURAL LECTURES delivered during the Session 1904-5, by the Professors and Lecturers of the Faculty of Theology, viz. :—

Prof. T. F. Tout, M.A.; Prof. A. S. Peake, B.D.; Prof. H. W. Hogg, M.A.; Prof. T. W. Rhys Davids, LL.D.; Rev. W. F. Adeney, D.D.; Rev. A. Gordon, M.A.; Rev. L. Hassé, B.D.; Rev. Canon E. L. HICKS, M.A.; Rev. H. D. Lockett, M.A.; Rev. R. Mackintosh, D.D.; Rev. J. T. Marshall, D.D.; Rev. J. H. Moulton, D.Litt.

Edited by A. S. PEAKE, B.D., Dean of the Faculty.

Demy 8vo, pp. xi. 296. 7s. 6d. net.

(Publication No. 9, 1905.)

"The lectures, while scholarly, are at the same time popular, and will be found interesting and instructive by those who are not theologians. . . . The entire series is excellent, and the volume deserves a wide circulation."—*Scotsman.*

"This is a very welcome volume . . . All these lectures were delivered to popular audiences, yet they are far from superficial, and will be found of great value to busy pastors and teachers."—*Christian World.*

"We welcome the volume as a most auspicious sign of the times."

—*Spectator.*

MANCHESTER UNIVERSITY PUBLICATIONS.  
THEOLOGICAL SERIES.

"The lectures themselves give a valuable conspectus of the present position of Theological research. . . . They are, of course, not addressed to experts, but they are exceedingly valuable, even when allowance is made for their more or less popular form."—*Examiner*.

"The whole volume forms a very important and valuable contribution to the cause of Theological learning."—*Record*.

"This is a most interesting and valuable book, the appearance of which at the present moment is singularly significant. . . . But it is impossible in a brief review to indicate all the treasures of this rich volume, to read which carefully is to be introduced to the varied wealth of modern Biblical scholarship."—*Baptist*.

"This volume is of the most exceptional value and interest."

—*Expository Times*.

"This is a book of more than common interest."

—*Review of Theology and Philosophy*.

"The writers of these lectures do not attempt to offer more than samples of their wares: but what is given is good, and it may be seen that theology without tests is destitute neither of scientific value nor of human interests."—*Athenæum*.

LECTURES.

- No. I. GARDEN CITIES (Warburton Lecture). By RALPH NEVILLE, K.C. 6d. net. (Lecture No. 1, 1905.)
- No. II. THE BANK OF ENGLAND AND THE STATE (A Lecture). By Sir FELIX SCHUSTER. 6d. net. (Lecture No. 2, 1905.)
- No. III. BEARING AND IMPORTANCE OF COMMERCIAL TREATIES IN THE TWENTIETH CENTURY. By Sir THOMAS BARCLAY. 6d. net. (Lecture No. 3, 1906.)
- No. IV. THE SCIENCE OF LANGUAGE AND THE STUDY OF THE GREEK TESTAMENT (A Lecture). By JAMES HOPE MOULTON, M.A., Litt.D. 6d. net. (Lecture No. 4, 1906.)
- No. V. THE GENERAL MEDICAL COUNCIL: ITS POWERS AND ITS WORK (A Lecture). By DONALD MACALISTER, M.A., M.D., B.Sc., D.C.L., LL.D. 6d. net. (Lecture No. 5, 1906.)
- No. VI. THE CONTRASTS IN DANTE (A Lecture). By the Hon. WILLIAM WARREN VERNON, M.A. 6d. net. (Lecture No. 6, 1906.)
- No. VII. THE PRESERVATION OF PLACES OF INTEREST OR BEAUTY (A Lecture). By Sir ROBERT HUNTER. 6d. net. (Lecture No. 7, 1907.)
- 

60, Chandos Street, London, W.C.

SHERRATT & HUGHES

---

**MANCHESTER UNIVERSITY PUBLICATIONS.**

**CALENDARS.**

CALENDAR OF THE VICTORIA UNIVERSITY OF MANCHESTER. Session 1904-5. Demy 8vo, 1100 pp. 3s. net.  
(Publication No. 17.)

CALENDAR OF THE VICTORIA UNIVERSITY OF MANCHESTER. Session 1905-6. Demy 8vo, 1200 pp. 3s. net.  
(Publication No. 18.)

CALENDAR OF THE VICTORIA UNIVERSITY OF MANCHESTER. Session 1906-7. Demy 8vo, 1300 pp. 3s. net.  
(Publication No. 19.)

CALENDAR OF THE VICTORIA UNIVERSITY OF MANCHESTER. Session 1907-8. Demy 8vo, 1400 pp. 3s. net.  
(Publication No. 28.)

---

The following are in preparation and will be issued shortly :—

**Celtic Series. No. 1.**

AN INTRODUCTION TO EARLY WELSH. By the late Prof. J. STRACHAN, M.A., LL.D. Demy 8vo.

This work will comprise a Grammar of Early Welsh with special reference to Middle-Welsh prose. To the grammar will be added selected passages from Early Welsh texts in prose and verse, together with notes and a vocabulary.  
*[In the Press.]*

A GLOSSARY TO THE BLACK BOOK OF CHIRK MANUSCRIPT OF THE WELSH LAWS. By TIMOTHY LEWIS, B.A. Demy 8vo.

This will include the oldest copy of a complete glossary to the "Laws of Howel Dda," contained in the "Black Book of Chirk," and will be based on the photographic facsimile of that manuscript which is about to be published by Dr. J. Gwenogvryn Evans in his collection of Welsh texts.  
*[In Preparation.]*

**Educational Series.**

THE TEACHING OF HISTORY IN GIRLS' SCHOOLS IN NORTH AND CENTRAL GERMANY. A Report by E. DODGE, M.A.  
*[In the Press.]*

---

34, Cross Street, Manchester

## SHERRATT & HUGHES

---

### MANCHESTER UNIVERSITY PUBLICATIONS.

#### Historical Series.

HANES GRUFFYDD AP CYNAN. The Welsh text with translation, introduction, and notes by ARTHUR JONES, M.A., Jones Fellow in History. Demy 8vo. *[In Preparation.]*

THE CROMWELLIAN CONQUEST AND SETTLEMENT OF IRELAND. By ROBERT DUNLOP, M.A., formerly Berkeley Fellow. Demy 8vo.

This work will consist of a series of unpublished documents relating to the History of Ireland from 1651 to 1659, arranged, modernized, and edited, with introduction, notes, etc., by Mr. DUNLOP.

*[In Preparation.]*

#### Medical Series.

DISEASES OF THE EAR. By W. MILLIGAN, M.D., Lecturer on Diseases of the Ear and Nasal Surgeon to the Manchester Royal Infirmary. *[In Preparation]*

DISEASES OF THE EYE. By C. E. GLASCOTT, M.D., Lecturer on Ophthalmology, and A. HILL GRIFFITH, M.D., Ophthalmic Surgeon to the Manchester Royal Infirmary. *[In Preparation.]*

HANDBOOK OF NERVOUS DISEASES. By JUDSON S. BURY, M.D., Lecturer on Clinical Neurology and Physician to the Manchester Royal Infirmary. *[In Preparation]*

---

The following works, though not technically Publications of the University of Manchester, are also issued from the University Press :—

MELANDRA CASTLE, being the Report of the Manchester and District Branch of the Classical Association for 1905. Edited by R. S. CONWAY, Litt.D. Introduction by Rev. E. L. HICKS, M.A. Demy 8vo. Illustrated. 5s. net.

TRANSACTIONS OF THE INTERNATIONAL UNION FOR CO-OPERATION IN SOLAR RESEARCH (Vol. i., First and Second Conferences). Demy 8vo, 260 pp. and plate. 7s. 6d. net.

THE BOOK OF RUTH (Unpointed Text). 6d. net.

SCENES FROM THE RUDEUS OF PLAUTUS, with a Translation into English Verse. Edited by R. S. CONWAY, Litt.D., Professor of Latin in the University. 6d. net.

---

60, Chandos Street, London, W.C.

## SHERRATT & HUGHES

---

THE TEACHING OF HISTORY AND OTHER PAPERS. By H. L. WITHERS. Edited by J. H. FOWLER. Crown 8vo, 270 pp. 4s. 6d. net.

"An interesting memorial of a teacher who was a real enthusiast for education."—*The Times*..

"We can cordially commend this little book to the somewhat limited but slowly widening circle who are likely to be interested in educational principles and organization."—*The Guardian*.

A TARDINESS IN NATURE AND OTHER PAPERS. By MARY CHRISTIE. Edited, with Introductory Note and Memoir, by MAUD WITHERS. Crown 8vo, 331 pp. 3s. net.

"The essays upon Thackeray, George Eliot, and R. L. Stevenson in this volume could scarcely be bettered."—*The Guardian*.

"The life-story of a quite remarkable woman—of a woman who used her gifts always to the furthering of all that is sweetest and noblest in life."—*Tribune*.

MUSICAL CRITICISMS. By ARTHUR JOHNSTONE. With a Memoir of the Author by HENRY REECE and OLIVER ELTON. Crown 8vo, 225 pp. 5s. net.

"Without the smallest affectation or laboured attempts at smartness, Mr. Johnstone contrived always to throw fresh light on the matter in hand, and at the same time to present his opinions in a form which could be understood and enjoyed by the non-musical reader."—*Westminster Gazette*.

"Everyone who welcomes guidance as to what is best in music, everyone who watches with some degree of fascination the power of analysis, everyone who reads with a sense of satisfaction English, as it may be written by a master of the craft, should read this book."—*The Musical World*.

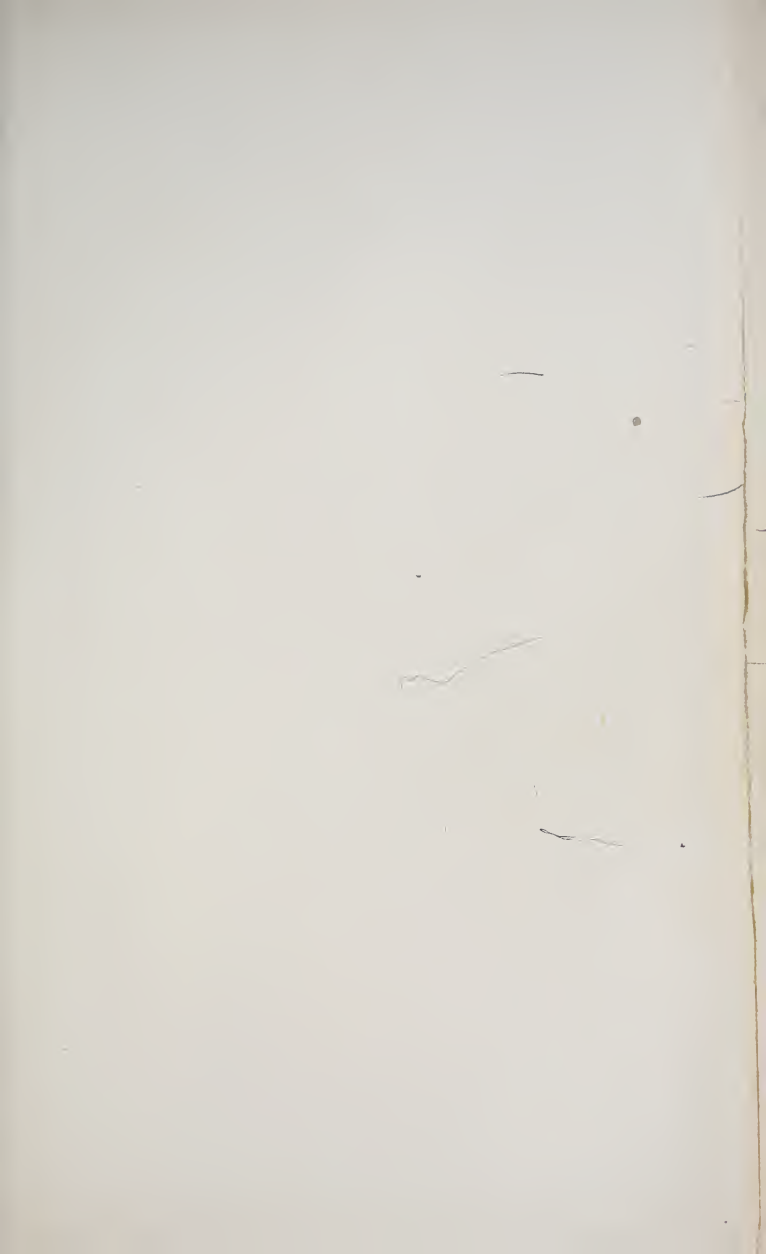
MANCHESTER BOYS. By C. E. B. RUSSELL. With an Introduction by E. T. CAMPAGNAC. Crown 8vo. 2s. 6d. net.

"Mr. Charles E. B. Russell has written a most interesting and thought-compelling book on a subject of almost vital importance."—*Yorkshire Post*.

"Altogether it is an inspiring book."—*Liverpool Daily Post and Mercury*.

---

34, Cross Street, Manchester





sl/f

mat yth anet p.56.

$$\begin{array}{r}
 200 \\
 3000 \\
 80000 \\
 100000 \\
 \hline
 183200
 \end{array}$$

$$\begin{array}{r}
 60,000 \\
 10,000 \\
 80,000 \\
 1,200 \\
 \hline
 151,200 \\
 10,000 \\
 2,000 \\
 \hline
 163,200
 \end{array}$$

